Twilight: Revamped

Posted originally on the Archive of Our Own at http://archiveofourown.org/works/12958998.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Rating:</th>
<th>General Audiences</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Archive Warning:</td>
<td>No Archive Warnings Apply</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Category:</td>
<td>M/M</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fandom:</td>
<td>Twilight Series - Stephenie Meyer</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Relationship:</td>
<td>Edward Cullen/Beau Swan</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Character:</td>
<td>Beau Swan, Edward Cullen, Jacob Black, Alice Cullen, Jasper Hale, Royal Hale, Emmett Cullen, Charlie Swan, Carlisle Cullen, Esme Cullen, Jessica Stanley, Angela Weber, Mike Newton, Victor (Twilight), James (Twilight), Laurent (Twilight)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Additional Tags:</td>
<td>LGBTQ Themes, LGBTQ Character, Vampires, Romance, Canon Rewrite, Rewrite</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Series:</td>
<td>Part 1 of The Twilight Saga: Revamped</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Stats:</td>
<td>Published: 2017-12-09 Completed: 2017-12-16 Chapters: 25/25 Words: 130000</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Twilight: Revamped

by JGluum

Summary

Beauregard Swan’s move to Forks, a small, perpetually rainy town in Washington, could have been the most boring move he ever made. But once he meets the mysterious and alluring Edward Cullen, Beauregard's life takes a thrilling and terrifying turn. Up until now, Edward has managed to keep his vampire identity a secret in the small community he lives in, but now nobody is safe, especially Beauregard, the person Edward holds most dear. The lovers find themselves balanced precariously on the point of a knife-between desire and danger.

A rewrite of Stephanie Meyer’s Twilight combining the original text, the gender-flipped Life & Death: Twilight Reimagined, and some rewriting to create a version of Twilight about Beau Swan and Edward Cullen. That's right. Gay Twilight.
First Sight

Unable are the loved to die, for love is immortality
-Emily Dickinson

Preface

I’d never given much thought to how I would die — though I’d had reason enough in the last few months — but even if I had, I would not have imagined it like this.

I stared without breathing across the long room, into the dark eyes of the hunter, and he looked pleasantly back at me.

Surely it was a good way to die, in the place of someone else, someone I loved. Noble, even. That ought to count for something.

I knew that if I’d never gone to Forks, I wouldn’t be facing death now. But, terrified as I was, I couldn’t bring myself to regret the decision. When life offers you a dream so far beyond any of your expectations, it’s not reasonable to grieve when it comes to an end.

The hunter smiled in a friendly way as he sauntered forward to kill me.

1. First Sight

My mother drove me to the airport with the windows rolled down. Though it was January everywhere else, it was seventy-five degrees in Phoenix and the sky was a perfect, cloudless blue. I was wearing my favorite tank top; I was wearing it as a farewell gesture. I wouldn’t be needing tank tops anymore.

In the Olympic Peninsula of northwest Washington State, a small town named Forks exists under a near-constant cover of clouds. It rains on this insignificant town more than any other place in the United States of America. It was from this town and its depressing gloom that my mom escaped with me when I was only a few months old. It was in this town that I’d been forced to spend a month every summer until I was fourteen. That was the year I finally put my foot down; these past three summers, my dad, Charlie, vacationed with me in California for two weeks instead.

Yet, somehow, I now found myself exiled back to Forks for the rest of my high school education. A year and a half. Eighteen months.

Of course, this was my choice. It was a self-imposed exile, but that didn’t make it any easier.

I loved Phoenix. I loved the sun and the dry heat and the big, sprawling city.
“Beau,” my mom said to me—the last of a thousand times—before I boarded the plane. “You don’t have to do this.”

My mother and I look so much alike; the same shaped face, the same nose, the same pale gray eyes. No one would doubt we’re mother and son. I felt an empty feeling in the pit of my stomach as I stared at her wide, childlike eyes that were so like mine. How could I leave my loving, erratic, harebrained mother to fend for herself? Was leaving my mom the right thing to do? It seemed like it was, during the months I’d struggled toward this decision. But now, in this moment, it felt all kinds of wrong.

Of course she had Phil now, so the bills would probably get paid, there would be food in the refrigerator, gas in her car, and someone to call when she got lost, but still…

“I want to go,” I lied. I’d always been a bad liar, but I’d been saying this lie so frequently lately that it sounded almost convincing now.

“Tell Charlie I said hi.”

“I will.”

“I’ll see you soon,” she insisted. “You can come home whenever you want—I’ll come right back as soon as you need me.”

But I could see the sacrifice in her eyes behind the promise.

“Don’t worry about me,” I urged. “It’ll be great. I love you, Mom.”

She hugged me tightly for a minute, and then I walked through the gate, got on the plane, and she was gone.

It’s a three-hour flight from Phoenix to Seattle, another hour in a smaller plane up to Port Angeles, and then an hour drive back down to Forks. Flying doesn’t bother me; the hour in the car with Charlie, though, I was a little worried about.

Charlie had really been pretty decent about the whole thing. He seemed genuinely pleased that I was coming to live with him for the first time with any degree of permanence. He’d already gotten me registered for high school and was going to help me get a car.

But it would be awkward. Neither of us was what anyone would call outgoing, and I didn’t know what there was to say regardless. I knew he was more than a little confused by my decision—like my mother before me, I hadn’t made a secret of my disdain for Forks.

When I landed in Port Angeles, it was raining. I didn’t see it as an omen, just an inevitability. I’d already said my goodbyes to the sun.

Charlie was waiting for me with the cruiser. This I was also expecting. Charlie is Police Chief Swan to the good people of Forks. My primary motivation behind buying a car, despite the scarcity of funds, was that I refused to be driven around town in a car with red and blue lights on the top. Nothing slows down traffic like a cop.

I stumbled off the plane into Charlie’s awkward, one-armed hug.

“It’s good to see you, Beau,” he said, smiling as he automatically caught and steadied me. “You haven’t changed much. How’s Renée?
“Mom’s great. It’s good to see you, too, Dad.” I wasn’t supposed to call him Charlie to his face.

I only had a few bags. Most of my Arizona clothes were too permeable for Washington. My mom and I had pooled our resources to supplement my winter wardrobe, but it still wasn’t much. It all fit easily into the trunk of the cruiser.

“I found a good car for you, really cheap.” he announced when we were strapped into the cruiser and on our way.

“What kind of car?” I asked, suspicious of the way he said “good car for you” as opposed to just “good car.”

“Well, it’s a truck actually, a Chevy.”

“Where did you find it?”

“Do you remember Billy Black down at La Push?” La Push is the small Native American reservation on the nearby coastline.

“Not really, sorry.”

“He used to go fishing with us during the summer,” Charlie prompted.

That would explain why I didn’t remember him. I do a good job of blocking painful things from my memory.

“He’s in a wheelchair now,” Charlie continued when I didn’t respond, “so he can’t drive anymore, and he offered to sell me the truck cheap.”

“What year is it?” I could see from the change in his expression that this was the question he was hoping I wouldn’t ask.

“Well, Billy’s son has done a lot of work on the engine— it’s only a few years old, really.”

Did he really think I would give up that easily?

“When did he buy it?”

“He bought it in 1984, I think.”

“Did he buy it new?”

“Well, no. I think it was new in the early sixties— or late fifties at the earliest,” He admitted sheepishly.

“Ch— Dad, I don’t really know anything about cars. I wouldn’t be able to fix it if anything went wrong, and I couldn’t afford a mechanic…”

“Really, Beau, the thing runs great. They don’t build them like that anymore.”

The thing, I thought to myself… it had possibilities—as a nickname, at the very least.

“How cheap is cheap?” After all, that was the part I couldn’t compromise on.

“Well, son, I kind of already bought it for you. As a homecoming gift.” Charlie glanced sideways at me with a hopeful expression.
“You didn’t need to do that, Dad. I was going to buy myself a car.”

“I don’t mind. I want you to be happy here.” He was looking ahead at the road when he said this. Charlie had never been comfortable with expressing his emotions out loud. I inherited that from him. So I was looking straight ahead as I responded.

“That’s amazing, Dad. Thanks. I really appreciate it.” No need to add that my being happy in Forks is an impossibility. He didn’t need to suffer along with me. And I never looked a free truck in the mouth—or engine.

“Well, now, you’re welcome,” he mumbled, embarrassed by my thanks.

We exchanged a few more comments on the weather, which was wet, and that was pretty much it for conversation. We stared out the windows.

It was beautiful, of course; I couldn’t deny that. Everything was green: the trees, their trunks covered with moss, their branches hanging with a canopy of it, the ground covered with ferns. Even the air filtered down greenly through the leaves.

It was too green—an alien planet.

Eventually, we made it to Charlie’s. He still lived in the small, two-bedroom house that he’d bought with my mother in the early days of their marriage. Those were the only kind of days their marriage had—the early ones. There, parked on the street in front of the house that never changed, was my new—well, new to me—truck. It was a faded red color, with big, rounded fenders and a bulbous cab.

And I loved it. I wasn’t really a car guy, so I was kind of surprised by my own reaction. I mean, I didn’t even know if it would run, but I could see myself in it. Plus, it was one of those solid iron monsters that never gets damaged—the kind you see at the scene of an accident, paint unscratched, surrounded by the pieces of the foreign car it had destroyed.

“Wow, Dad, I love it! Thanks!” I was genuinely enthused about the truck. Not only was it perfect, now I wouldn’t be faced with the choice of either walking two miles in the rain to school or accepting a ride in the Chief’s cruiser.

“I’m glad you like it,” Charlie said gruffly, embarrassed again.

It took only one trip to get all my stuff upstairs. I got the west bedroom that faced out over the front yard. The room was familiar; it had belonged to me since I was born. The wooden floor, the light blue walls, the peaked ceiling, the faded blue-and-white checkered curtains around the window—these were all a part of my childhood. The only changes Charlie had ever made were switching the crib for a bed and adding a desk as I grew. The desk now held a secondhand computer, with the phone line for the modem stapled along the floor to the nearest phone jack. This was a stipulation from my mother, so that we could stay in touch easily. The rocking chair from my baby days was still in the corner.

There was only one small bathroom at the top of the stairs, which I would have to share with Charlie, but I’d had to share with my mom before, and she had a lot more stuff. This would be fine.

One of the best things about Charlie is he doesn’t hover. He left me alone to unpack and get settled, which would have been altogether impossible for my mom. It was nice to be alone, not to have to smile and look comfortable; a relief to stare dejectedly out the window at the sheeting rain and let just
a few tears escape. I wasn’t in the mood to go on a real crying jag. I would save that for bedtime, when I would have to come to terms with how quickly everything had just changed, and when I would have to think about the coming morning.

Forks High School had just three hundred and fifty-seven—now fifty eight—students; there were more than seven hundred people in my junior class alone back home. All of the kids there had grown up together—their grandparents had been toddlers together. I would be the new kid from the big city, something to stare at and whisper about.

Maybe if I had been one of the cool kids—had a little more confidence in myself—I could work this to my advantage. But I certainly wasn’t that guy. I was always different from the other guys in my school. I wasn’t the football star, not the class president, not the bad boy on the motorcycle. I was the kid who got shoved into lockers until his sophomore year. The kid who was too quiet, and too pale, who didn’t know anything about sports or cars or anything I was supposed to be into.

Despite the constant sunshine of Phoenix, I was still ivory-skinned and I had always been on the leaner side, obviously not an athlete; I didn’t have the necessary hand-eye coordination to play sports without humiliating myself—and harming both myself and anyone else who stood too close.

When I finished putting my clothes in the old pine dresser, I took my bag of bathroom necessities and went to clean myself up after the day of travel. I looked at my face in the bathroom mirror as I ran my hands through my damp, dark hair. Maybe it was the light, but already I looked paler, if that was possible.

Facing my glum reflection in the mirror, I was forced to admit that I was lying to myself. It wasn’t just physically that I’d never fit in. And if I couldn’t find a niche in a school with three thousand people, what were my chances here?

I didn’t relate well to people my age. Maybe the truth was that I didn’t relate well to people, period. Even my mother, who I was closer to than anyone else on the planet, was never in harmony with me, never on exactly the same page. Sometimes I wondered if I was seeing the same things through my eyes that the rest of the world was seeing through theirs. Maybe there was a glitch in my brain.

But the cause didn’t matter. All that mattered was the effect. And tomorrow would be just the beginning.

I didn’t sleep well that night, even after I had managed to calm myself down. The constant whooshing of the rain and the wind across the roof wouldn’t fade in the background. I pulled the faded old quilt over my head, and later added the pillow, too. But I couldn’t fall asleep until after midnight, when the rain finally settled into a quieter drizzle.

Thick fog was all I could see out my window in the morning, and I could feel the claustrophobia creeping up on me. You could never see the sky here; it was like a cage.

Breakfast with Charlie was a quiet. He wished me good luck at school. I thanked him, knowing his hope was wasted. Good luck tended to avoid me. Charlie left first, off to the police station that was his wife and family. After he left, I sat at the old square oak table in one of the three un-matching chairs and examined the small kitchen, with its dark paneled walls, bright yellow cabinets, and white linoleum floor. Nothing was changed. My mother had painted the cabinets eighteen years ago in an attempt to bring some sunshine into the house. Over the small fireplace in the adjoining modestly sized family room was a row of pictures. First a wedding picture of Charlie and my mom in Las Vegas, then one of the three of us in the hospital after I was born, taken by a helpful nurse, followed
by the procession of my school pictures up to last year’s. Those were embarrassing to look at—the bad haircuts, the acne that had finally cleared up. Maybe I could get Charlie to put them somewhere else, at least while I was living here.

It was impossible, being in this house, not to realize that Charlie had never gotten over my mom. It made me uncomfortable and a little sad.

I didn’t want to be too early to school, but I couldn’t stay in the house anymore. I donned my jacket—thick, non-breathing plastic, like a biohazard suit—and headed out into the rain.

It was just drizzling still, not enough to soak me through immediately as I reached for the house key that was always hidden under the eaves by the door, and locked up. The sloshing of my new waterproof boots was unnerving. I missed the normal crunch of gravel as I walked. I couldn’t pause and admire my truck again as I wanted; I was in a hurry to get out of the misty wet that swirled around in the air.

Inside the truck, it was nice and dry. Either Billy or Charlie had obviously cleaned it up, but the tan upholstered seats still smelled faintly of tobacco, gasoline, and peppermint. The engine started quickly, to my relief, but loudly, roaring to life and then idling at top volume. Well, a truck this old was bound to have a flaw. The antique radio worked, a bonus that I hadn’t expected.

Finding the school wasn’t difficult; like most other things, it was just off the highway. It wasn’t totally obvious that it was a school; only the sign, which declared it to be Forks High School, clued me in. It looked like a collection of matching houses, built with maroon-colored bricks. There were so many trees and shrubs I couldn’t see its size at first. Where was the feel of the institution? I wondered sarcastically. Where were the chain-link fences, the metal detectors?

I parked in front of the first building, which had a small sign over the door reading FRONT OFFICE. No one else was parked there, so I was sure it was off limits, but I decided I would get directions inside instead of circling around in the rain like an idiot. I stepped unwillingly out of the toasty truck cab and walked down a little stone path lined with dark hedges. I took a deep breath before opening the door.

Inside, it was brightly lit, and warmer than I’d hoped. The office was small; a little waiting area with padded folding chairs, orange-flecked commercial carpet, notices and awards cluttering the walls, a big clock ticking loudly. Plants grew everywhere in large plastic pots, as if there wasn’t enough greenery outside. The room was cut in half by a long counter, cluttered with wire baskets full of papers and brightly colored flyers taped to its front. There were three desks behind the counter, one of which was manned by a large, red-haired woman wearing glasses. She was wearing a t-shirt, which immediately made me feel overdressed for the weather.

The red-haired woman looked up.“Can I help you?”

“I’m Beau Swan,” I informed her, and saw the immediate awareness light her eyes. I was expected, already the subject of gossip. Son of the Chief’s flighty ex-wife, come home at last.

“Of course,” she said. She dug through a precariously stacked pile of papers on her desk till she found the ones she was looking for. “I have your schedule right here, Beauregard, and a map of the school.” She brought several sheets to the counter to show me.

“Um, it’s Beau, please.”

“Oh, sure, Beau.”
She went through my classes for me, highlighting the best route to each on the map, and gave me a slip to have each teacher sign, which I was to bring back at the end of the day. She smiled at me and hoped, like Charlie, that I would like it here in Forks. I smiled back as convincingly as I could.

When I went back out to my truck, other students were starting to arrive. I drove around the school, following the line of traffic. I was glad to see that most of the cars were older like mine, nothing flashy. At home I’d lived in one of the few lower-income neighborhoods that were included in the Paradise Valley District. It was a common thing to see a new Mercedes or Porsche in the student lot. The nicest car here was a shiny Volvo, and it stood out. Still, I cut the engine as soon as I was in a spot, so that the thunderous volume wouldn’t draw attention to me.

I looked at the map in the truck, trying to memorize it now; hopefully I wouldn’t have to walk around with it stuck in front of my nose all day. I stuffed everything in my bag, slung the strap over my shoulder, and sucked in a huge breath. It won’t be that bad, I lied to myself. This wasn’t life or death—just high school. It’s not like anyone was going to bite me.

I finally exhaled and stepped out of the truck. I pulled my hood down over my face as I walked to the sidewalk, crowded with other students. My plain black jacket didn’t stand out, I noticed with relief.

Once I got around the cafeteria, building three was easy to spot. A large black “3” was painted on a white square on the east corner. I felt a knot begin to form in my stomach as I approached the door. I took a deep breath as I followed two unisex raincoats through the door.

The classroom was small. The people in front of me stopped just inside the door to hang up their coats on a long row of hooks. I copied them. They were two girls, one a porcelain-colored blonde, the other also pale, with light brown hair. At least my skin wouldn’t be a standout here.

I took the slip up to the teacher, a tall, balding man whose desk had a nameplate identifying him as Mr. Mason. He gawked at me when he saw my name—not an encouraging response—and of course I flushed tomato red. But at least he sent me to an empty desk at the back without introducing me to the class. It was harder for my new classmates to stare at me in the back, but somehow, they managed.

I kept my eyes down on the reading list the teacher had given me. It was fairly basic: Brontë, Shakespeare, Chaucer, Faulkner. I’d already read everything. That was comforting…and boring. I wondered if my mom would send me my folder of old essays, or if she would think that was cheating. I went through different arguments with her in my head while the teacher droned on.

When the bell rang, a nasal buzzing sound, a pale, skinny girl with skin problems and hair black as an oil slick leaned across the aisle to talk to me.

“You’re Beauregard Swan, aren’t you?” She gave off the vibe of the overly helpful, chess club type.

“Beau,” I corrected. Everyone within a three-seat radius turned to look at me.

“Where’s your next class?” she asked.

I had to check in my bag. “Um, Government, with Jefferson, in building six.”

There was nowhere to look without meeting curious eyes.

“I’m headed toward building four, I could show you the way…” Definitely over-helpful. “I’m Erica,” she added.

I managed a smile. “Thanks.”
We got our jackets and headed out into the rain, which had picked up. I could have sworn several people behind us were walking close enough to eavesdrop. I hoped I wasn’t getting paranoid.

“So, this is a lot different than Phoenix, huh?” she asked.

“Very.”

“It doesn’t rain much there, does it?”

“Three or four times a year.”

“Wow, what must that be like?” she wondered.

“Sunny,” I told her.

“You don’t look very tan.”

“My mother is part albino.”

She studied my face apprehensively, and I sighed. It looked like clouds and a sense of humor didn’t mix. A few months of this and I’d forget how to use sarcasm.

We walked back around the cafeteria, to the south buildings by the gym. Erica followed me right to the door, though it was clearly marked.

“Well, good luck,” she said as I touched the handle. “Maybe we’ll have some other classes together.” She sounded hopeful.

I smiled at her vaguely and went inside.

The rest of the morning passed in about the same fashion. My Trigonometry teacher, Mr. Varner, who I would have disliked anyway just because of the subject he taught, was the only one who made me stand in front of the class and introduce myself. I stammered, blushed, and tripped over my own boots on the way to my seat.

After two classes, I started to recognize several of the faces in each room. There was always someone braver than the others who would introduce themselves and ask me questions about how I was liking Forks. I tried to be diplomatic, but mostly I just lied a lot. At least I never needed the map.

In every class, the teacher started out calling me Beauregard, and though I corrected them immediately, it was frustrating. It had taken me years to live down Beauregard—my mom thought it sounded regal. I comforted myself with the knowledge that she chose Beauregard over Beaufort, her second choice. No one at home even remembered that Beau was just a nickname anymore. Now I had to start all over again.

One girl sat next to me in both Trig and Spanish, and she walked with me to the cafeteria for lunch. She was short, several inches shorter than my five feet seven inches, with long, straight, light-brown hair. Her bubbling, energetic personality almost seemed to make up the difference between our heights. I couldn’t remember her name, so I smiled and nodded as she rattled about teachers and classes. I didn’t try to keep up.

We sat at the end of a full table with several of her friends, who she introduced to me—couldn’t complain about the manners here. Overwhelmed by the rush of new information, I forgot all their names as soon as she said them. They seemed impressed by her bravery in speaking to me. The girl from English, Erica, waved at me from across the room.
It was there, sitting in the lunchroom, trying to make conversation with seven curious strangers, that I first saw them.

They were sitting in the corner of the cafeteria, as far away from where I sat as possible in the long room. There were five of them. They weren’t talking, and they weren’t eating, though they each had a tray of untouched food in front of them. They weren’t gawking at me, unlike most of the other students, so it was safe to stare at them without fear of meeting an excessively interested pair of eyes. But it was none of these things that caught, and held, my attention.

They didn’t look anything alike.

There were four boys; one was big— muscled like a serious weight lifter, at least six-five or taller, with dark, curly hair. The one sitting next to him was only slightly shorter, but still well-muscled—clearly the school’s star-athlete. And the prom king. His long gold hair was wound into a bun on the back of his head. The third one was almost as tall as the first, leaner, but still muscular, with honey colored hair. There was something intense about him, edgy. The last was lanky, less bulky, with untidy, bronze-colored hair. He was more boyish than the others, who looked like they could be in college, or even teachers here rather than students.

The lone girl was the complete opposite. She was short and pixie-like, thin in the extreme, with small features. Her hair was a deep black, cropped short and styled like she had fallen right out of the twenties.

Totally different, and yet, they were all exactly alike. Every one of them was chalky pale, the palest of all the students living in this sunless town. Paler than me, the albino. They all had very dark eyes—from here they looked black—despite the range in hair tones. There were deep shadows under their eyes— purple shadows, like bruises. Maybe they were all suffering from a sleepless night, or almost done recovering from broken noses. Except that their noses, all their features, were straight, perfect, angular.

But all this is not why I couldn’t look away.

I stared because their faces, so different, so similar, were all devastatingly, inhumanly beautiful. They were faces you never expected to see except perhaps on the airbrushed pages of a fashion magazine. Or painted by an old master as the face of an angel. It was hard to decide who was the most beautiful—maybe the blond prom king, or the bronze-haired boy. I mean, all of them were gorgeous, but the boy with the bronze hair was something more than just beautiful. He was absolutely perfect. It was an upsetting, disturbing kind of perfection. It made my stomach uneasy.

They were all looking away; away from each other, away from the other students, away from anything in particular as far as I could tell. It reminded me of models posed artistically for an add—aesthetic ennui.

As I watched, the pixie girl rose with her tray—unopened soda, untouched apple—and walked away with a quick, graceful lope that belonged on a runway. I watched, amazed at her lithe dancer’s step, till she dumped her tray and glided through the back door, faster than I would have thought possible. My eyes darted back to the boys, who sat unchanging.

“Who are they?” I asked the girl from my Spanish class, whose name I still couldn’t remember.

As she looked up to see who I meant—though she could probably guess from my tone—suddenly he looked at her, the thinner, boyish one, the youngest, perhaps. He looked at my neighbor for just a fraction of a second, and then his dark eyes flickered to mine.
He looked away quickly, more quickly than I could, though in a flush of embarrassment I dropped my eyes at once. In that brief flash of a glance, his face wasn’t interested at all—it was as if she had called his name, and he’d looked up in an involuntary response, already having decided not to answer.

My neighbor giggled in embarrassment, looking at the table like I did.

“That’s Edward and Emmett Cullen, and Royal and Jasper Hale. The one who left was Alice Cullen; they all live together with Dr. Cullen and his wife.” She said this under her breath.

I glanced sideways at the beautiful boy, who was looking at his tray now, picking a bagel to pieces with long, pale fingers. His mouth was moving very quickly, his perfect lips barely opening. The other three still looked away, and yet I felt he was speaking quietly to them.

Strange, unpopular names, I thought. The kinds of names grandparents had. But maybe that was in vogue here—small-town names? I finally remembered that my neighbor was called Jessica, a totally normal name. There were two girls named Jessica in my History class back home.

“They all are… very nice-looking.” I struggled with the conspicuous understatement.

“Yes!” Jessica agreed with another giggle. “They’re all together though—Jasper and Alice, I mean. There’s even a rumor that Emmet and Royal are like, a thing. And they live together.” Her voice held all the shock and condemnation of the small town, I thought critically. But, if I was being honest, I had to admit that even in Phoenix, it would cause gossip.

“Which ones are the Cullens?” I asked. “They don’t look related… well, I mean, sort of…”

“Oh, they’re not. Dr. Cullen is really young, in his twenties or early thirties. They’re all adopted. The Hales—the blondes—are brothers, fraternal twins, I think, and they’re foster children.”

“They look a little old for foster children.”

“They are now, Jasper and Royal are both eighteen, but they’ve been with Mrs. Cullen since they were eight. She’s their aunt or something like that.”

“That’s really kind of nice— for them to take care of all those kids like that, when they’re so young and everything.”

“I guess so,” Jessica admitted reluctantly, and I got the impression that she didn’t like the doctor and his wife for some reason. With the glances she was throwing at their adopted children, I would presume the reason was jealousy. “I think that Mrs. Cullen can’t have any kids, though,” she added, as if that lessened their kindness.

Throughout all this conversation, my eyes flickered again and again to the table where the strange family sat. They continued to look at the walls and not eat.

“Have they always lived in Forks?” I asked. Surely I would have noticed them on one of my summers here.

“No. They just moved down two years ago from somewhere in Alaska.”

I felt a surge of pity, and relief. Pity because, as beautiful as they were, they were outsiders, clearly not accepted. Relief that I wasn’t the only newcomer here, and certainly not the most interesting by any standard.
As I examined them, the youngest, one of the Cullen boys, looked up and met my gaze, this time with evident curiosity in his expression. As I looked swiftly away, it seemed to me that his glance held some kind of unmet expectation.

“Which one is the boy with the reddish-brown hair?” I asked. I glanced at him from the corner of my eye, and he was still staring at me, but not gawking like the other students had today—he had a slightly frustrated expression. I looked down again.

“That’s Edward. He’s gorgeous, of course, but a complete waste of time. He doesn’t date. Apparently none of the girls here are good-looking enough for him.” She sniffed, a clear case of sour grapes. I wondered when he’d turned her down.

I bit my lip to hide my smile. Then I glanced at him again. His face was turned away, but I thought from the shape of his cheek that he might be smiling, too.

After a few more minutes, the four of them left the table together. They all were noticeably graceful — even the big, brawny one and the golden prom king. It was unsettling to watch. The one named Edward didn’t look at me again.

I sat at the table with Jessica and her friends longer than I would have if I’d been sitting alone. I was anxious not to be late for class on my first day. One of my new acquaintances, who considerately reminded me that her name was Angela, had Biology II with me the next hour. We walked to class together in silence. She was shy like me.

When we entered the classroom, Angela went to sit at a black-topped lab table exactly like the ones I was used to. She already had a neighbor. In fact, all the tables were filled but one. Next to the center aisle, I recognized Edward Cullen by his unusual hair, sitting next to that single open seat.

My heart started pounding a little faster than usual.

As I walked down the aisle to introduce myself to the teacher and get my slip signed, I was watching him surreptitiously. Just as I passed, he suddenly went rigid in his seat. He stared at me again, meeting my eyes with the strangest expression on his face— it was more than angry, it was furious, hostile. I looked away quickly, shocked, going red again. I stumbled over a book in the walkway and had to catch myself on the edge of a table. The girl sitting there giggled.

I had been right about his eyes. They were black— coal black.

Mrs. Banner signed my slip and handed me a book with no nonsense about introductions. I could tell we were going to get along. Of course, she had no choice but to send me to the one open seat in the middle of the room. I kept my eyes down as I went to sit by him, bewildered by the antagonistic stare he’d given me.

I didn’t look up as I set my book on the table and took my seat, but I saw his posture change from the corner of my eye. He was leaning away from me, sitting on the extreme edge of his chair and averting his face like he smelled something bad. Inconspicuously, I tugged at my shirt at gave it a sniff. It smelled like laundry detergent. How could that be offensive? I scooted my chair to the right, giving him as much space as I could, and nervously ran my fingers through my hair.

I leaned forward, resting my head in my hand, using it to block my face from him. I angled myself away, too, for good measure. I tried to pay attention to the teacher.

Unfortunately the lecture was on cellular anatomy, something I’d already studied. I took notes carefully anyway, always looking down.
I couldn’t stop myself from glancing occasionally at the strange boy next to me. During the whole class, he never relaxed his stiff position on the edge of his chair, sitting as far from me as possible. I could see his hand on his left leg was clenched into a fist, tendons standing out under his pale skin. This, too, he never relaxed. He had the sleeves of his white Henley pushed up to his elbows, and his forearm was surprisingly hard and muscular beneath his pale skin. He wasn’t nearly as slight as he’d looked next to his burly brothers.

The class seemed to drag on longer than the rest. Was it because the day was finally coming to a close, or because I was waiting for his tight fist to loosen? It never did; he continued to sit so still it looked like he wasn’t breathing. What was wrong with him? Was this his normal behavior? I questioned my quick judgment on Jessica’s bitterness at lunch today. Maybe she was not as resentful as I’d thought.

It couldn’t have anything to do with me. He didn’t know me from Adam.

I peeked up at him one more time and regretted it. He was glaring down at me again, his black eyes full of revulsion. As I flinched away from him, shrinking against my chair, the phrase *if looks could kill* suddenly ran through my mind.

At that moment, the bell rang loudly, making me jump, and Edward Cullen was out of his seat. Fluidly he rose—he was much taller than I’d thought—his back to me, and he was out the door before anyone else was out of their seat.

I sat frozen in my seat, staring blankly after him. He was so unnecessarily rude. I began gathering up my things slowly, trying to block the confusion and anger that filled me. I felt tight knots in my stomach. I hadn’t done anything wrong. How could I have? I hadn’t actually even met him.

“ Aren’t you Beauregard Swan?” a male voice asked. I looked up to see a cute, baby-faced boy, his pale blond hair carefully flat-ironed, smiling at me in a friendly way. He obviously didn’t think I smelled bad.

“ Beau,” I corrected him, with a smile.

“ I’m Mike.”

“ Hi, Mike.”

“ Do you need any help finding your next class?”

“ I’m headed to the gym, actually. I think I can find it.”

“ That’s my next class, too.” He seemed thrilled, though it wasn’t that big of a coincidence in a school this small.

We walked to class together; he was a chatterer—he supplied most of the conversation, which made it easy for me. He’d lived in California till he was ten, so he knew how I felt about the sun. It turned out he was in my English class also. He was the nicest person I’d met today.

But as we were entering the gym, he asked, “ So, did you stab Edward Cullen with a pencil or what? I’ve never seen him act like that.”

I cringed. So I wasn’t the only one who had noticed. And, apparently, that wasn’t Edward Cullen’s usual behavior. I decided to play dumb.

“ Was that the boy I sat next to in Biology?”
“Yeah,” he said. “He looked like he was in pain or something.”

“I don’t know,” I responded. “I never spoke to him.”

“He’s a weird guy.” Mike lingered by me instead of heading straight into the locker room. “If I were sitting by you, I would have talked to you.” He started blushing, “You seem cool!” He added quickly.

I smiled at him and he quickly walked through the locker room door, I followed slightly bemused. He was friendly and possibly liked me. But it wasn’t enough to make me forget the last hour.

The Gym teacher, Coach Clapp, found me a uniform but didn’t make me dress down for today’s class. At home, only two years of P.E. were required. Here, P.E. was mandatory all four years. Forks was literally my personal hell on Earth.

I watched four volleyball games running simultaneously. Remembering how many injuries I had sustained— and inflicted— playing volleyball, I felt faintly nauseated.

The final bell rang at last. I walked slowly to the office to return my paperwork. The rain had drifted away, but the wind was strong, and colder. I zipped my jacket up and shoved my free hand into a pocket.

When I walked into the warm office, I almost turned around and walked back out.

Edward Cullen stood at the desk in front of me. I recognized again that tousled bronze hair. He didn’t appear to notice the sound of my entrance. I stood pressed against the back wall, waiting for the receptionist to be free.

He was arguing with her in a low, attractive voice. I quickly picked up the gist of the argument. He was trying to trade from sixth-hour Biology to another time— any other time.

This could not be about me. It had to be something else, something that happened before I entered the Biology room. The look on his face must have been about another aggravation entirely. It was impossible that this stranger could take such a sudden, intense dislike to me.

The door opened again, and the cold wind suddenly gusted through the room, rustling the papers on the desk, waving through my hair. The girl who came in merely stepped to the desk, placed a note in the wire basket, and walked out again. But Edward Cullen’s back stiffened, and he turned slowly to glare at me—his face was absurdly handsome—with piercing, hate-filled eyes. For an instant, I felt a thrill of genuine fear, raising the hair on my arms. The look only lasted a second, but it chilled me more than the freezing wind. He turned back to the receptionist.

“Never mind, then,” he said hastily in a voice like velvet. “I can see that it’s impossible. Thank you so much for your help.” And he turned on his heel without another look at me and disappeared out the door.

I went meekly to the desk, my face white for once instead of red, and handed her the signed slip.

“How did your first day go, dear?” the receptionist asked maternally.

“How did your first day go, dear?” the receptionist asked maternally.

“Fine,” I lied, my voice cracking. I could see I hadn’t convinced her.

When I got to the truck, it was almost the last car in the lot. It seemed like a haven, already the closest thing to home I had in this wet, green hell. I sat inside for a while, just staring out the windshield blankly. But soon I was cold enough to need the heater, so I turned the key and the engine roared to
life. I headed back to Charlie’s house, grappling with the knots in my stomach till I was fighting tears.
The next day was better… and worse.

It was better because it wasn’t raining yet, though the clouds were dense and opaque. It was easier because I knew what to expect of my day. Mike came to sit by me in English, and walked me to my next class, with Chess Club Erica glaring at him all the while; which was kind of odd. People didn’t look at me quite as much as they had yesterday. I sat with a big group at lunch that included Mike, Erica, Jessica, and several other people whose names and faces I was starting to remember. I began to feel like I was treading water, instead of drowning in it.

It was worse because I was tired; I still couldn’t sleep with the wind echoing around the house. It was worse because Mr. Varner called on me in Trig when my hand wasn’t raised and I had the wrong answer. It was miserable because I had to play volleyball, and the one time I didn’t dodge out of the way of the ball, I somehow managed to hit two of my teammates in the head with it. And it was worse because Edward Cullen wasn’t in school at all.

All morning I was dreading lunch, fearing his bizarre glares. Part of me wanted to confront him and demand to know what his problem was. While I was lying awake in bed, I even imagined what I would say. But I knew myself too well to think I would really have the guts to do it. I made the Cowardly Lion look like the Terminator.

But when I walked into the cafeteria with Jessica— trying to keep my eyes from sweeping the place for him and failing entirely— I saw that his four adopted siblings were sitting together at the same table, and he was not with them.

Mike intercepted us and steered us to his table. Jessica seemed elated by the attention, and her friends quickly joined us. But as I tried to listen to their easy chatter, I was terribly uncomfortable, waiting nervously for the moment Edward Cullen would arrive. I hoped that he would simply ignore me when he came and prove that I was just making a big deal out of nothing.

He didn’t come, and as time passed I grew more and more tense.

I walked to Biology with more confidence when, by the end of lunch, he still hadn’t showed. Mike, who was taking on the qualities of a golden retriever, walked faithfully by my side to class. I held my breath at the door, but Edward Cullen wasn’t there, either. I exhaled and went to my seat. Mike followed, talking about an upcoming trip to the beach. He lingered by my desk till the bell rang. Then he smiled at me wistfully and went to sit by a girl with braces. I was starting to think I would have to do something about Mike; I wasn’t entirely sure if his attention was just an overly eager friendliness or something else.

In a small town like this, where everyone lived on top of everyone else, diplomacy was essential. I didn’t tend to make a big deal of who I found attractive. It was just easier that way. Besides, it hadn’t really mattered up to now. No one really paid attention to me in Phoenix, anyway.

I was relieved that I had the desk to myself, that Edward was absent. I told myself that repeatedly. But I couldn’t get rid of the nagging suspicion that I was the reason he wasn’t there. It was ridiculous, and egotistical, to think that I could affect anyone that much. It was impossible. But I couldn’t stop worrying about it.

When the school day was finally done, and the blush was fading out of my cheeks from the volleyball incident, I showered and changed quickly back into my jeans and navy-blue sweater. I
hurried from the boys’ locker room, pleased to find that I had successfully evaded my retriever friend for the moment. I hurried out to the parking lot. It was crowded now with fleeing students. I got in my truck and dug through my backpack to make sure I had what I needed.

Last night I’d discovered that Charlie couldn’t cook much besides fried eggs and bacon. So I requested that I be assigned kitchen detail for the duration of my stay. He was willing enough to let me take over. I also found out that he had no food in the house. So I had my shopping list and the cash from the jar in the cupboard labeled FOOD MONEY, and I was on my way to the Thriftway.

I gunned my deafening engine to life, ignoring the heads that turned in my direction, and backed carefully into the line of cars that were waiting to exit the parking lot. As I waited, trying to pretend that the earsplitting rumble was coming from someone else’s car, I saw the two Cullens and the Hale twins getting into their car. It was the shiny new Volvo. Of course.

I hadn’t noticed their clothes before— I’d been too mesmerized by their faces. Now that I looked, it was obvious that they were all dressed exceptionally well; simply, but in clothes that subtly hinted at designer origins. With their remarkable good looks, the style with which they carried themselves, they could have worn dishrags and pulled it off. It seemed excessive for them to have both looks and money. But as far as I could tell, life worked that way most of the time. It didn’t look as if it bought them any popularity here.

But I couldn’t really believe that. The isolation must had to be something they chose; I couldn’t imagine any door their beauty wouldn’t open for them.

They looked at my noisy truck as I passed them, just like everyone else. Except they weren’t like anyone else. I saw the big burly guy—Emmett—had his hand casually on the golden prom king’s hip. Despite their obvious confidence, I couldn’t help but feel surprised that he would do that in a small town like Forks. Looked like the rumors Jessica mentioned were true. The edgy blond boy caught me looking, and the way he narrowed his eyes made me turn straight ahead and punch the gas. The truck didn’t go any faster, the engine just grumbled even louder.

The Thriftway was not far from the school, just a few streets south, off the highway. It was nice to be inside the supermarket; it felt normal. I did the shopping at home, and I fell easily into the pattern of the familiar task. The store was big enough inside that I couldn’t hear the tapping of the rain on the roof to remind me where I was.

When I got home, I unloaded all the groceries, stuffing them in wherever I could find an open space. I hoped Charlie wouldn’t mind. I wrapped potatoes in foil and stuck them in the oven to bake, covered a steak in marinade and balanced it on top of a carton of eggs in the fridge.

When I was finished with that, I took my backpack upstairs. Before starting my homework, I changed into a pair of dry sweats, ran my fingers through my damp brown hair, and checked my e-mail for the first time. I had three messages.

“Beau,” my mom wrote.

Write me as soon as you get in. Tell me how your flight was. Is it raining? I miss you already. I’m almost finished packing for Florida, but I can’t find my pink blouse. Do you know where I put it?
Phil says hi. Mom.
I sighed and went to the next. It was sent eight hours after the first.

“Beau,” she wrote…

*Why haven’t you e-mailed me yet? What are you waiting for? Mom.*

The last was from this morning.

*Beauregard Michael, If I haven’t heard from you by 5: 30 p.m. today I’m calling Charlie.*

I checked the clock. I still had an hour, but my mom was well known for jumping the gun.

*Mom,*

*Calm down. I’m writing right now. Don’t do anything rash.*

*Beau.*

I sent that, and began again.

*Mom,*

*Everything is great. Of course it’s raining. I was waiting for something to write about. School isn’t bad, just a little repetitive. I met some nice kids who sit by me at lunch.*

*Your blouse is at the dry cleaners— you were supposed to pick it up Friday.*

*Charlie bought me a truck, can you believe it? I love it. It’s old, but really sturdy, which is good, you know, for me.*

*I miss you, too. I’ll write again soon, but I’m not going to check my e-mail every five minutes. Relax, breathe. I love you.*

*Beau.*

I had decided to read *Wuthering Heights*— the novel we were currently studying in English— yet again for the fun of it, and that’s what I was doing when Charlie came home. I’d lost track of the time, and I hurried downstairs to take the potatoes out and put the steak in to broil.

“Beau?” my father called out when he heard me on the stairs.
Who else? I thought to myself.

“Hey, Dad, welcome home.”

“Thanks.” He hung up his gun belt and stepped out of his boots as I bustled about the kitchen. As far as I was aware, he’d never shot the gun on the job. But he kept it ready. When I came here as a child, he would always remove the bullets as soon as he walked in the door. I guess he considered me old enough now not to shoot myself by accident, and not depressed enough to shoot myself on purpose.

“What’s for dinner?” he asked warily. My mom was an imaginative cook, and her experiments weren’t always edible. I was surprised, and sad, that he seemed to remember that far back.

“Steak and potatoes,” I answered, and he looked relieved.

He seemed to feel awkward standing in the kitchen doing nothing; he lumbered into the living room to watch TV while I worked. We were both more comfortable that way. I made a salad while the steak cooked, then set the table.

I called him in when dinner was ready, and he sniffed appreciatively as he walked into the room.

“Smells good, Beau.”

“Thanks.”

We ate in silence for a few minutes. It wasn’t uncomfortable. Neither of us was bothered by the quiet. In some ways, we were well suited for living together.

“So, how did you like school? Have you made any friends?” he asked as he was taking seconds.

“Well, I have a few classes with a girl named Jessica. I sit with her friends at lunch. And there’s this boy, Mike, who’s very friendly. Everybody seems pretty nice.” With one outstanding exception.

“That must be Mike Newton. Nice kid—nice family. His dad owns the sporting goods store just outside of town. He makes a good living off all the backpackers who come through here.”

“Do you know the Cullen family?” I asked hesitantly.

“Dr. Cullen’s family? Sure. Dr. Cullen’s a great man.”

“They… the kids… are a little different. They don’t seem to fit in very well at school.”

Charlie surprised me by looking angry.

“People in this town,” he muttered. “Dr. Cullen is a brilliant surgeon who could probably work in any hospital in the world, make ten times the salary he gets here,” he continued, getting louder. “We’re lucky to have him—lucky that his wife wanted to live in a small town. He’s an asset to the community, and all of those kids are well behaved and polite. I had my doubts, when they first moved in, with all those adopted teenagers. I thought we might have some problems with them. But they’re all very mature—I haven’t had one speck of trouble from any of them. That’s more than I can say for the children of some folks who have lived in this town for generations. And they stick together the way a family should—camping trips every other weekend…. Just because they’re newcomers, people have to talk.”

It was the longest speech I’d ever heard Charlie make. He must feel strongly about whatever people
were saying.

I backpedaled. “They seemed nice enough to me. I just noticed they kept to themselves. They’re all very attractive,” I added, trying to be more complimentary.

“You should see the doctor,” Charlie said, laughing. “It’s a good thing he’s happily married. A lot of the staff at the hospital have a hard time concentrating on their work with him around.”

We lapsed back into silence as we finished eating. He cleared the table while I started on the dishes. He went back to the TV, and after I finished washing the dishes by hand—no dishwasher—I went upstairs to work on my math homework. I could feel a tradition in the making.

That night it was finally quiet. I fell asleep quickly, exhausted.

The rest of the week was uneventful. I got used to the routine of my classes. By Friday I was able to recognize, if not name, almost all the students at school. In Gym, the others on my team learned not to pass me the ball and to step quickly in front of me if the other team tried to take advantage of my weakness. I happily stayed out of their way.

Edward Cullen didn’t come back to school.

Every day, I watched anxiously until the rest of the Cullens entered the cafeteria without him. Then I could relax and join in the luncheon conversation. Mostly it centered around a trip to the La Push Ocean Park in two weeks that Mike was putting together. I was invited, and I had agreed to go, more out of politeness than a strong urge to hit the beach. I believed beaches should be hot, and—aside from the ocean—dry.

By Friday I was perfectly comfortable entering my Biology class, no longer worried that Edward would be there. For all I knew, he had dropped out of school. I tried not to think about him, but I couldn’t totally suppress the worry that I was responsible for his continued absence, ridiculous as it seemed.

My first weekend in Forks passed without incident. Charlie, unused to spending time in the usually empty house, worked most of the weekend. I cleaned the house, got ahead on my homework, and wrote my mom more bogusly cheerful e-mail. I did drive to the library on Saturday, but it was so poorly stocked that I didn’t bother to get a card; I would have to visit Olympia or Seattle soon and find a good bookstore. I wondered idly what kind of gas mileage the truck got… and winced at the thought.

The rain stayed soft over the weekend, quiet, so I was able to sleep well.

People greeted me in the parking lot Monday morning. I didn’t know all their names, but I waved back and smiled at everyone. It was colder this morning, but at least it wasn’t raining. In English, Mike took his accustomed seat by my side. We had a pop quiz on *Wuthering Heights*. It was straightforward, very easy.

All in all, I was feeling a lot more comfortable than I had thought I would feel by this point. More comfortable than I had ever expected to feel here.

When we walked out of class, the air was full of swirling bits of white. I could hear people shouting excitedly to each other. The wind bit at my cheeks, my nose.

“Wow,” Mike said. “It’s snowing.”

I looked at the little cotton fluffs that were building up along the sidewalk and swirling erratically
past my face.

“Ugh.” Snow. There went my good day.

He looked surprised. “Don’t you like snow?”

“Snow means it’s too cold for rain.” Obviously. “Besides, I thought it was supposed to come down in flakes—you know, each one unique and all that. These just look like the ends of Q-tips.”

“ Haven’t you ever seen snow fall before?” he asked incredulously.

“Sure I have.” I paused. “On TV.”

Mike laughed. And then a big, squishy ball of dripping snow smacked into the back of his head. We both turned to see where it came from. I suspected Erica, who was walking away, her back toward us— in the wrong direction for her next class. Mike apparently had the same notion. He bent over and began scraping together a pile of the white mush.

“I’ll see you at lunch, okay?” I kept walking as I spoke. “Once people start throwing wet stuff, I go inside.”

He just nodded, his eyes on Erica’s retreating figure.

Throughout the morning, everyone chattered excitedly about the snow; apparently it was the first snowfall of the new year. I kept my mouth shut. Sure, it was drier than rain— until it melted in your socks.

I kept a sharp lookout on the way to the cafeteria with Jessica after Spanish. Mush balls were flying everywhere. I kept a binder in my hands, ready to use it as a shield if necessary. Jessica thought I was hilarious, but something in my expression kept her from lobbing a snowball at me herself.

Mike caught up to us as we walked in the doors, laughing, with ice melting in his rapidly curling hair. He and Jessica were talking animatedly about the snow fight as we got in line to buy food. I glanced toward that table in the corner out of habit. And then I froze where I stood. There were five people at the table.

Jessica pulled on my arm.

“Hello? Beau? What do you want?”

I looked down; my ears were hot. I had no reason to feel self-conscious, I reminded myself. I hadn’t done anything wrong.

“What’s with Beau?” Mike asked Jessica.

“Nothing,” I answered. “I’ll just get a soda today.” I caught up to the end of the line.

“Aren’t you hungry?” Jessica asked.

“Actually, I feel a little sick,” I said, my eyes still on the floor. Out of the corner of my eye I could see Mike make a concerned face, Jessica discretely shuffled a few steps away from me.

I waited for them to get their food, and then followed them to a table, my eyes on my feet.

I sipped my soda slowly, my stomach churning. Twice Mike asked, with unnecessary concern, how I was feeling. I told him it was nothing, but I was wondering if I should play it up and escape to the
nurse’s office for the next hour.

Ridiculous. I shouldn’t have to run away. Why was a freaking out? I was just being glared at. It wasn’t like Edward Cullen was going to stab me with a knife.

I decided to permit myself one glance at the Cullen family’s table. If he was glaring at me, I would skip Biology, like the coward I was.

I kept my head down and glanced out of the side of my eye. None of them were looking this way. I lifted my head a little.

They were laughing. Edward, Jasper, and Emmett all had their hair entirely saturated with melting snow. Alice and Royal were leaning away as Emmett shook his dripping hair toward them. They were enjoying the snowy day, just like everyone else— only they looked more like a scene from a movie than the rest of us.

But, aside from the laughter and playfulness, there was something different, and I couldn’t quite pinpoint what that difference was. I examined Edward the most carefully. His skin was less pale, I decided— flushed from the snow fight maybe— the circles under his eyes much less noticeable. But there was something more. I pondered, staring, trying to isolate the change.

“Beau, what are you staring at?” Jessica intruded, her eyes following my stare.

At that precise moment, his eyes flashed over to meet mine.

I quickly turned my head completely towards Jessica, shifting my shoulders in her direction, too. Jessica leaned back, surprised by my sudden movement.

I was sure, though, in the instant our eyes met, that he didn’t look harsh or unfriendly as he had the last time I’d seen him. He looked merely curious again, unsatisfied in some way.

“Edward Cullen is staring at you,” Jessica giggled in my ear.

“He doesn’t look angry, does he?” I couldn’t help asking.

“No,” she said, sounding confused by my question. “Should he be?”

“I don’t think he likes me,” I confided. I still felt queasy. I felt like he was staring at me.

“The Cullens don’t like anybody… well, they don’t notice anybody enough to like them. But he’s still staring at you.”

“Stop looking at him,” I insisted.

She snickered, but she looked away.

Mike interrupted us then— he was planning an epic battle of the blizzard in the parking lot after school and wanted us to join. Jessica agreed enthusiastically. The way she looked at Mike left little doubt that she would be up for anything he suggested, I wondered if Mike would notice her enthusiasm. I kept silent. I would have to hide in the gym until the parking lot cleared.

For the rest of the lunch hour I very carefully kept my eyes at my own table. I decided to honor the bargain I’d made with myself. Since he didn’t look angry, I would go to Biology. I started feeling knots in my stomach at the thought of sitting next to him again.

I didn’t really want to walk to class with Mike as usual— he seemed to be a popular target for the
snowball snipers—but when we went to the door, everyone besides me groaned in unison. It was raining, washing all traces of the snow away in clear, icy ribbons down the side of the walkway. I pulled my hood up, hiding my smile. I would be free to go straight home after Gym.

Mike kept up a string of complaints on the way to building four.

Once inside the classroom, I saw with relief that my table was still empty. Mrs. Banner was walking around the room, distributing one microscope and box of slides to each table. Class didn’t start for a few minutes, and the room buzzed with conversation. I kept my eyes away from the door, doodling idly on the cover of my notebook.

I heard very clearly when the chair next to me moved, but my eyes stayed carefully focused on the pattern I was drawing.

“Hello,” said a quiet, musical voice.

I looked up, stunned that he was speaking to me. He was sitting as far away from me as the desk allowed, but his chair was angled toward me. His hair was dripping wet, disheveled—even so, he looked like he’d just finished shooting a commercial. His dazzling face was friendly, open, a slight smile on his flawless lips. But his eyes were careful.

“My name is Edward Cullen,” he continued. “I didn’t have a chance to introduce myself last week. You must be Beau Swan.”

My mind was spinning with confusion. Had I made up the whole thing? He was perfectly polite now. I had to speak; he was waiting. But I couldn’t think of anything conventional to say.

“H-how do you know my name?” I stammered.

He laughed a soft, enchanting laugh.

“Oh, I think everyone knows your name. The whole town’s been waiting for you to arrive.”

I grimaced. I knew it was something like that.

“No,” I persisted stupidly. “I meant, why did you call me Beau?”

He seemed confused. “Do you prefer Beauregard?”

“No, I like Beau,” I said. “But I think Charlie— I mean my dad— must call me Beauregard behind my back—that’s what everyone here seems to know me as,” I tried to explain, feeling like an utter moron.

“Oh.” He let it drop. I looked away awkwardly.

Thankfully, Mrs. Banner started class at that moment. I tried to concentrate as she explained the lab we would be doing today. The slides in the box were out of order. Working as lab partners, we had to separate the slides of onion root tip cells into the phases of mitosis they represented and label them accordingly. We weren’t supposed to use our books. In twenty minutes, she would be coming around to see who had it right.

“Get started,” she commanded.

“After you, partner?” Edward asked. I looked up to see him smiling a crooked smile so beautiful that I could only stare at him like an idiot.
He raised his eyebrows. “Or I could start, if you wish.

“No,” I said, flushing. “I’ll go ahead.” I was showing off, just a little. I’d already done this lab, and I knew what I was looking for. It should be easy. I snapped the first slide into place under the microscope and adjusted it quickly to the 40X objective. I studied the slide briefly.

My assessment was confident. “Prophase.”

“Do you mind if I look?” he asked as I began to remove the slide. His hand caught mine, to stop me, as he asked. His fingers were ice cold, like he’d been holding them in a snowdrift before class. But that wasn’t why I jerked my hand away so quickly. When he touched me, it stung my hand as if an electric current had passed through us.

“I’m sorry,” he muttered, pulling his hand back immediately. However, he continued to reach for the microscope. I watched him, still staggered, as he examined the slide for an even shorter time than I had.

“Prophase,” he agreed, writing it neatly in the first space on our worksheet. He swiftly switched out the first slide for the second, and then glanced at it cursorily.

“Anaphase,” he murmured, writing it down as he spoke.

I kept my voice indifferent. “Mind if I look?”

He smirked and pushed the microscope to me.

I looked through the eyepiece eagerly, only to be disappointed. Dang it, he was right.

“Slide three?” I held out my hand without looking at him.

He handed it to me; it seemed like he was being careful not to touch my skin again. I took the most fleeting look I could manage.

“Interphase.” I passed him the microscope before he could ask for it. He took a swift peek, and then wrote it down. I would have written it while he looked, but his clear, elegant script intimidated me. I didn’t want to spoil the page with my clumsy scrawl.

We were finished before anyone else was close. I could see Mike and his partner comparing two slides again and again, and another group had their book open under the table. Which left me with nothing to do but try to not look at him… unsuccessfully. I glanced up, and he was staring at me, that same inexplicable look of frustration in his eyes. Suddenly I identified that subtle difference in his face.

“Did you get contacts?” I blurted out unthinkingly. He seemed puzzled by my unexpected question.

“No.”

“Oh,” I mumbled. “I thought there was something different about your eyes.”

He shrugged, and looked away.

In fact, I was sure there was something different. I vividly remembered the flat black color of his eyes the last time he’d glared at me— the color was striking against the background of his pale skin and his auburn hair. Today, his eyes were a completely different color: a strange gold, darker than butterscotch, but with the same warm tone. I didn’t understand how that could be, unless he was
lying for some reason about the contacts. Or maybe Forks was making me crazy in the literal sense of the word.

I looked down. His hands were clenched into hard fists again.

Mrs. Banner came to our table then, to see why we weren’t working. She looked over our shoulders to glance at the completed lab, and then stared more intently to check the answers.

“So, Edward, didn’t you think Beauregard should get a chance with the microscope?” Mrs. Banner asked.

“Beau,” Edward corrected automatically. “Actually, he identified three of the five.”

Mrs. Banner looked at me now; her expression was skeptical.

“Have you done this lab before?” she asked.

I smiled sheepishly. “Not with onion root.”

“Whitefish blastula?”

“Yeah.”

Mrs. Banner nodded. “Were you in an advanced placement program in Phoenix?”

“Yes.”

“Well,” she said after a moment, “I guess it’s good you two are lab partners.” She mumbled something else as he walked away. After she left, I began doodling on my notebook again.

“It’s too bad about the snow, isn’t it?” Edward asked. I had the feeling that he was forcing himself to make small talk with me. Paranoia swept over me again. It was like he had heard my conversation with Jessica at lunch and was trying to prove me wrong. Which was impossible. I really was becoming paranoid.

“Not really,” I answered honestly, instead of pretending to be normal like everyone else. I was still trying to dislodge the stupid feeling of suspicion, and I couldn’t concentrate.

“You don’t like the cold.” It wasn’t a question.

“Or the wet.”

“Forks must be a difficult place for you to live,” he mused.

“You have no idea,” I muttered darkly.

He looked fascinated by what I said, for some reason I couldn’t imagine. His face was such a distraction that I tried not to look at it any more than courtesy absolutely demanded.

“Why did you come here, then?”

No one had asked me that—not straight out like he did, demanding.

“It’s… complicated.”

“I think I can keep up,” he pressed.
I paused for a long moment, and then made the mistake of meeting his gaze. His dark gold eyes confused me, and I answered without thinking.

“My mother got remarried,” I said.

“That doesn’t sound so complex,” he disagreed, but he was suddenly sympathetic. “When did that happen?”

“Last September.” My voice sounded sad, even to me.

“And you don’t like him,” Edward surmised, his tone still kind.

“No, Phil is fine. Too young, maybe, but nice enough.”

“Why didn’t you stay with them?”

I couldn’t understand his interest, but he continued to stare at me with penetrating eyes, as if my dull life’s story was somehow vitally important.

“Phil travels a lot. He plays ball for a living.” I half-smiled.

“Have I heard of him?” he asked, smiling in response.

“Probably not. He doesn’t play well. Strictly minor league. He moves around a lot.”

“And your mother sent you here so that she could travel with him.” He said it as an assumption again, not a question.

I straightened my shoulders automatically. “No, she didn’t send me here. I sent myself.”

His eyebrows knit together. “I don’t understand,” he admitted, and he seemed unnecessarily frustrated by that fact.

I sighed. Why was I explaining this to him? He continued to stare at me with obvious curiosity.

“She stayed with me at first, but she missed him. It made her unhappy… so I decided it was time to spend some quality time with Charlie.” My voice was glum by the time I finished.

“But now you’re unhappy,” he pointed out.

“And?” I challenged.

“That doesn’t seem fair.” He shrugged, but his eyes were still intense.

I laughed once. “Hasn’t anyone ever told you? Life isn’t fair.”

“I believe I have heard that somewhere before,” he agreed dryly.

“So that’s all,” I insisted, wondering why he was still staring at me that way.

His gaze became appraising, he tilted his head slightly to the side.

“You put on a good show,” he said slowly. “But I’d be willing to bet that you’re suffering more than you let anyone see.”

I shrugged.
“Am I wrong?”

“Why does it matter?”

“I don’t entirely understand you, that’s all.” he raised an eyebrow at me.

“Why would you want to?” I asked, frowning.

“That’s a very good question,” he muttered, so quietly that I wondered if he was talking to himself.

However, after a few seconds of silence, I decided that was the only answer I was going to get.

I sighed, staring at the blackboard.

“Am I annoying you?” he asked. He sounded amused.

I glanced at him without thinking… and told the truth again. “Not exactly. I’m more annoyed at myself. My face is so easy to read— my mother always calls me her open book.” I shrugged.

“On the contrary, I find you very difficult to read.” Despite everything that I’d said and he’d guessed, he sounded like he meant it.

“You must be a good reader then,” I replied.

“Usually.” He smiled widely, flashing a set of perfect, ultra-white teeth.

Mrs. Banner called the class to order then, and I turned with relief to listen. I was in disbelief that I’d just explained my ordinary life to this bizarre, beautiful boy who may or may not despise me. He’d seemed engrossed in our conversation, but now I could see, from the corner of my eye, that he was leaning away from me again, his hands gripping the edge of the table with unmistakable tension.

I tried to appear attentive as Mrs. Banner illustrated, with transparencies on the overhead projector, what I had seen without difficulty through the microscope. But my thoughts were far away from the lecture.

When the bell finally rang, Edward rushed as swiftly and as gracefully from the room as he had last Monday. And, like last Monday, I stared after him with my jaw hanging slightly open.

Mike rushed to my table almost as quickly. I imagined him with a wagging tail.

“That was awful,” he groaned. “They all looked exactly the same. You’re lucky you had Cullen for a partner.”

“I didn’t have any trouble with it,” I said, stung by his assumption. I regretted the snub instantly.

“I’ve done the lab before, though,” I added before he could get his feelings hurt.

“Cullen seemed friendly enough today,” he commented as we shrugged into our raincoats. He didn’t seem pleased about it.

I tried to sound indifferent. “I wonder what was with him last Monday.”

I couldn’t concentrate on Mike’s chatter as we walked to Gym, and P.E. didn’t do much to hold my attention, either. Mike was on my team today. He helpfully covered my position as well as his own, so I only had to pay attention when it was my turn to serve; my team ducked warily out of the way every time I was up.
The rain was just a mist as I walked to the parking lot, but I was happier when I was in the dry cab. I got the heater running, for once not caring about the mind-numbing roar of the engine. I unzipped my jacket, put the hood down, and ran my fingers through my damp hair.

I looked around me to make sure it was clear. That’s when I noticed the still, white figure. Edward Cullen was leaning against the front door of the Volvo, three cars down from me, and staring intently in my direction. I swiftly looked away and threw the truck into reverse, almost hitting a rusty Toyota Corolla in my haste. Lucky for the Toyota, I stomped on the brake in time. It was just the sort of car that my truck would make scrap metal of. I took a deep breath, still looking out the other side of my car, and cautiously pulled out again, with greater success. I stared straight ahead as I passed the Volvo, but from a peripheral peek, I could swear I saw him laughing.
Phenomenon

When I opened my eyes in the morning, something was different.

It was the light. It was still the gray-green light of a cloudy day in the forest, but it was clearer somehow. I realized there was no fog veiling my window.

I jumped up to look outside, and then groaned.

A fine layer of snow covered the yard, dusted the top of my truck, and whitened the road. But that wasn’t the worst part. All the rain from yesterday had frozen solid—coating the needles on the trees in fantastic, gorgeous patterns, and making the driveway a deadly ice slick. I had enough trouble not falling down when the ground was dry; it might be safer for me to go back to bed now.

Charlie had left for work before I got downstairs. In a lot of ways, living with Charlie was like having my own place, and I found myself reveling in the aloneness instead of being lonely.

I threw down a quick bowl of cereal and some orange juice from the carton. I felt excited to go to school, and that scared me. I knew it wasn’t the stimulating learning environment I was anticipating, or seeing my new set of friends. If I was being honest with myself, I knew I was eager to get to school because I would see Edward Cullen. And that was very, very stupid.

I should be avoiding him after everything. His death glares were still fresh in my memory, despite his random questioning yesterday I still felt like he didn’t like me much. And I was suspicious of him; why should he lie about his eyes? I was still frightened of the hostility I sometimes felt emanating from him, and I was still tongue-tied whenever I pictured his perfect face. I didn’t know why I cared, as far as I knew he didn’t care much for me. So I shouldn’t be at all anxious to see him today.

It took every ounce of my concentration to make it down the icy brick driveway alive.

I almost lost my balance when I finally got to the truck, but I managed to cling to the side mirror and save myself. Clearly, today was going to be a struggle.

Driving to school, I distracted myself from my fear of falling and my unwanted speculations about Edward Cullen by thinking about Mike and Erica, and the obvious difference in how my fellow teenagers responded to me here. I was sure I looked exactly the same as I had in Phoenix. I had gotten attention from a few girls back in Phoenix, but I had gently made it clear that I wasn’t interested in girls. I had definitely never gotten any attention from any boys, even though I was sure there were boys in my old school who could have been interested. Perhaps it was because I was a novelty here, where novelties were few and far between. Possibly my clumsiness was seen as endearing rather than laughable. Whatever the reason, Mike’s puppy dog behavior and Erica’s apparent rivalry with him were disconcerting. I wasn’t sure if I didn’t prefer being ignored.

My truck seemed to have no problem with the black ice that covered the roads. I drove very slowly, though, not wanting to carve a path of destruction through Main Street.

When I got out of my truck at school, I saw why I’d had so little trouble. Something silver caught my eye, and I walked to the back of the truck—carefully holding the side for support—to examine my tires. There were thin chains crisscrossed in diamond shapes around them. Charlie had gotten up who knows how early to put snow chains on my truck. I probably should have been the one to think about putting chains on the tires, if I could figure out how to do that. I appreciated that Charlie knew I couldn’t do it myself. My throat suddenly felt tight. I wasn’t used to being taken care of, and
Charlie’s unspoken concern caught me by surprise.

I was standing by the back corner of the truck, struggling to fight back the sudden wave of emotion the snow chains had brought on, when I heard an odd sound.

It was a high-pitched screech, and it was fast becoming painfully loud. I looked up, startled.

I saw several things simultaneously. Nothing was moving in slow motion, the way it does in the movies. Instead, the adrenaline rush seemed to make my brain work much faster, and I was able to absorb in clear detail several things at once.

Edward Cullen was standing four cars down from me, staring at me in horror. His face stood out from a sea of faces, all frozen in the same mask of shock. But of more immediate importance was the dark blue van that was skidding, tires locked and squealing against the brakes, spinning wildly across the ice of the parking lot. It was going to hit the back corner of my truck, and I was standing between them. I didn’t even have time to close my eyes.

Just before I heard the shattering crunch of the van folding around the truck bed, something hit me, hard, but not from the direction I was expecting. My head cracked against the icy blacktop, and I felt something solid and cold pinning me to the ground. I was lying on the pavement behind the tan car I’d parked next to. But I didn’t have a chance to notice anything else, because the van was still coming. It had curled gratingly around the end of the truck and, still spinning and sliding, was about to collide with me again.

A low oath made me aware that someone was with me, and the voice was impossible not to recognize. Two long, white hands shot out protectively in front of me, and the van shuddered to a stop a foot from my face, the large hands fitting exactly into a deep dent in the side of the van’s body.

Then his hands moved so fast they blurred. One was suddenly gripping under the body of the van, and something was dragging me, swinging my legs around like a rag doll, till they hit the tire of the tan car. A groaning metallic thud hurt my ears, and the van settled, glass popping, onto the asphalt—exactly where, a second ago, my legs had been.

It was absolutely silent for one long second before the screaming began. In the abrupt bedlam, I could hear more than one person shouting my name. But more clearly than all the yelling, I could hear Edward Cullen’s low, frantic voice in my ear.

“Beau? Are you all right?”

“I’m fine.” My voice sounded strange. I tried to sit up, and realized he was holding me against the side of his body in an iron grasp.


I became aware of a throbbing ache centered above my left ear.

“Ow,” I said, surprised.

“That’s what I thought.” His voice, amazingly, sounded like he was suppressing laughter.

“How in the…” I trailed off, trying to clear my head, get my bearings. “How did you get over here so fast?”

“I was standing right next to you, Beau,” he said, his tone serious again.
I turned to sit up, and this time he let me, releasing his hold around my waist and sliding as far from me as he could in the limited space. I looked at his concerned, innocent expression and was disoriented again by the force of his gold-colored eyes.

What was I asking him?

And then they found us, a crowd of people with tears streaming down their faces, shouting at each other, shouting at us.

“Don’t move,” someone instructed.

“Get Tyler out of the van!” someone else shouted.

There was a flurry of activity around us. I tried to get up, but Edward’s cold hand pushed my shoulder down.

“Just stay put for now.”

“But it’s cold,” I complained. It surprised me when he chuckled under his breath. There was an edge to the sound.

“You were over there,” I suddenly remembered, and his chuckle stopped short. “You were by your car.”

His expression turned hard. “No, I wasn’t.”

“I saw you.” All around us was chaos. I could hear the gruffer voices of adults arriving on the scene. But I obstinately held on to our argument; I was right, and he was going to admit it.

“Beau, I was standing with you, and I pulled you out of the way.”

He stared at me, and something strange happened. It was like the gold of his eyes intensified, like his eyes were drugging me, hypnotizing me. It was devastating in a weird, exciting way. But his expression was anxious. I felt like he trying to communicate something crucial.


The gold in his eyes blazed. “Please, Beau.”

“Why?” I demanded.

“Trust me,” he pleaded, his soft voice overwhelming.

I could hear the sirens now. “Will you promise to explain everything to me later?”

“Fine,” he snapped, abruptly exasperated.

“Fine,” I repeated, unable to process his mood swings with everything else that was happening. What was I supposed to think, when what I remembered happening was impossible?

It took six EMTs and two teachers—Mr. Varner and Coach Clapp—to shift the van far enough away from us to bring the stretchers in. Edward insisted he hadn’t been touched, and I tried to do the same, but the traitor told them I’d hit my head and probably had a concussion. I almost died of embarrassment when they put on the neck brace. It looked like the entire school was there, watching soberly as they loaded me in the back of the ambulance. Edward got to ride in the front. It was all a hundred times worse than I’d imagine today would be, and I hadn’t even made it to the sidewalk.
To make matters worse, Chief Swan arrived before they could get me safely away.

“Beau!” he yelled in panic when he recognized me on the stretcher.

“I’m completely fine, Char— Dad,” I sighed. “There’s nothing wrong with me.”

He turned to the closest EMT for a second opinion. I tuned him out to consider the jumble of inexplicable images churning chaotically in my head—images that were not possible. When they’d lifted me away from the car, I had seen the deep dent in the tan car’s bumper— a very distinct dent that fit the contours of Edward’s shoulders… as if he had braced himself against the car with enough force to damage the metal frame…

And then there was his family, looking on from the distance, with expressions that ranged from disapproval to fury but held no hint of concern for their brother’s safety.

I remembered the sensation of almost flying through the air… that hard mass that had pinned me to the ground… Edward’s hand under the frame of the van, like it was holding the van off the ground…

I tried to think of a logical solution that could explain what I had just seen. All I could come up with was that I was having some kind of psychotic episode. I didn’t feel crazy, but maybe crazy people always felt sane.

Naturally, the ambulance got a police escort to the county hospital. I felt ridiculous the whole time they were unloading me. What made it worse was that Edward simply glided through the hospital doors of his own accord.

They put me in the emergency room, a long room with a line of beds separated by pastel-patterned curtains. A nurse put a pressure cuff on my arm and a thermometer under my tongue. Since no one bothered pulling the curtain around to give me some privacy, I decided I wasn’t obligated to wear the stupid-looking neck brace anymore. When the nurse walked away, I quickly unfastened the Velcro and threw it under the bed.

There was another flurry of hospital personnel, another stretcher brought to the bed next to me. I recognized Tyler Crowley from my Government class beneath the bloodstained bandages wrapped tightly around his head. Tyler looked a hundred times worse than I felt. But he was staring anxiously at me.

“Beau, I’m so sorry!”

“I’m fine, Tyler— you look awful, are you all right?” As we spoke, nurses began unwinding his soiled bandages, exposing a myriad of shallow slices all over his forehead and left cheek.

He ignored me. “I thought I was going to kill you! I was going too fast, and I hit the ice wrong…” He winced as one nurse started dabbing at his face.

“Don’t worry about it; you missed me.”

“How did you get out of the way so fast? You were there, and then you were gone…”

“Umm… Edward shoved me out of the way.”

He looked confused. “Who?”

“Edward Cullen— he was standing next to me.” I’d always been a terrible liar; I didn’t sound
convincing at all.

“Cullen? I didn’t see him… wow, it was all so fast, I guess. Is he okay?”

“I think so. He’s here somewhere, but they didn’t make him use a stretcher.”

I knew I wasn’t crazy. What had happened? There was no way to explain away what I’d seen.

They wheeled me away then, to X-ray my head. I told them there was nothing wrong, and I was right. Not even a concussion. I asked if I could leave, but the nurse said I had to talk to a doctor first. So I was trapped in the ER, waiting, harassed by Tyler’s constant apologies and promises to make it up to me. No matter how many times I tried to convince him I was fine, he continued to torment himself. Finally, I closed my eyes and ignored him. He kept up a remorseful mumbling.

“Is he sleeping?” a musical voice asked. My eyes flew open.

Edward was standing at the foot of my bed, smirking. I glared at him. It wasn’t easy— it would have been more natural to ogle.

“Hey, Edward, I’m really sorry—” Tyler began.

Edward lifted a hand to stop him.

“No blood, no foul,” he said, flashing his brilliant teeth. He moved to sit on the edge of Tyler’s bed, facing me. He smirked again.

“So, what’s the verdict?” he asked me.

“There’s nothing wrong with me at all, but they won’t let me go,” I sighed. “How come you aren’t strapped to a gurney like the rest of us?”

“It’s all about who you know,” he answered. “But don’t worry, I came to spring you.”

Then a doctor walked around the corner, and my mouth fell open. He was young, he was blond… and he was more handsome than any movie star I’d ever seen. He looked something like a young Marlon Brando combined with James Dean and Cary Grant. He was pale, though, and tired-looking, with circles under his eyes. From Charlie’s description, this had to be Edward’s father.

“So, Mister Swan,” Dr. Cullen said in a gently appealing voice, “how are you feeling?”

“I’m fine,” I said, for the last time, I hoped.

He walked to the light-board on the wall over my head and turned it on.


“It’s fine,” I repeated with a sigh, narrowing my eyes at Edward, who conspicuously looked away.

The doctor’s cool fingers probed lightly along my skull. He noticed when I winced.

“Tender?” he asked.

“Not really.” I’d had worse.

I heard a chuckle and looked over to see Edward smiling.
“Well, your father is in the waiting room—you can go home with him now. But come back if you feel dizzy or have trouble with your eyesight at all.”

“Can’t I go back to school?” I asked, imagining Charlie trying to be attentive.

“Maybe you should take it easy today.”

I glanced at Edward. “Does he get to go to school?”

“Someone has to spread the good news that we survived,” Edward said smugly.

“Actually,” Dr. Cullen corrected, “most of the school seems to be in the waiting room.”

“Oh no,” I moaned.

Dr. Cullen raised his eyebrows. “Do you want to stay?”

“No, no!” I insisted, throwing my legs over the side of the bed and hopping down quickly. Too quickly—I staggered, and Dr. Cullen caught me. He looked concerned.

“I’m fine,” I assured him again. No need to tell him my balance problems had nothing to do with hitting my head.

“Take some Tylenol for the pain,” he suggested as he steadied me.

“It doesn’t hurt that bad,” I insisted.

“It sounds like you were extremely lucky,” Dr. Cullen said, smiling as he signed my chart with a flourish.

“Lucky Edward happened to be standing next to me,” I amended with a glance at the subject of my statement.

“Oh, well, yes,” Dr. Cullen agreed, suddenly occupied with the papers in front of him. Then he looked away, at Tyler, and walked to the next bed. My intuition flickered; the doctor was in on it.

“I’m afraid that you’ll have to stay with us just a little bit longer,” he said to Tyler, and began checking his cuts.

As soon as the doctor’s back was turned, I moved to Edward’s side.

“Can I talk to you for a minute?” I whispered under my breath. He took a step back from me, his jaw suddenly clenched.

“Your father is waiting for you,” he said through his teeth.

I glanced at Dr. Cullen and Tyler.

“I’d like to speak with you alone, if you don’t mind,” I pressed.

He glared, and then turned his back and strode down the long room. I nearly had to run to keep up. As soon as we turned the corner into a short hallway, he spun around to face me.

“What do you want?” he asked, sounding annoyed. His eyes were cold.

His unfriendliness intimidated me. My words came out with less severity than I’d intended. “You
owe me an explanation,” I reminded him.

“I saved your life—I don’t owe you anything.”

I flinched back from the resentment in his voice. “You promised. Why are you acting like this?”

“Beau, you hit your head, you don’t know what you’re talking about.” His tone was cutting.

His attitude infuriated me, and I glared defiantly at him. “There’s nothing wrong with my head.”

He glared back. “What do you want from me, Beau?”

“I want to know the truth,” I said. “I want to know why I’m lying for you.”

“What do you think happened?” he snapped.

It was harder to say the words out loud, where I could hear how crazy it sounded. It shook my
conviction, but I tried to keep my voice even and calm.

“What I know is that you weren’t anywhere near me—Tyler didn’t see you, either, so don’t tell me I
hit my head too hard. That van was going to crush us both—and it didn’t, and your hands left dents
in the side of it—and you left a dent in the other car, and you’re not hurt at all—and the van should
have smashed my legs, but you were holding it up…” It just kept sounding worse and worse. I
couldn’t continue. I was so frustrated I could feel tears forming in my eyes; I took a deep breath and
swallowed hard.

He was staring at me incredulously. But his face was tense, defensive.

“You think I lifted a van off you?” His tone questioned my sanity, but there was something off. It
was like a perfectly delivered line by a skilled actor.

I merely nodded once; jaw tight.

“Nobody will believe that, you know.” His voice held an edge of derision now.

“I’m not going to tell anybody.” I said each word slowly, carefully controlling my emotions.

Surprise flitted across his face. “Then why does it matter?”

“It matters to me,” I said. “I don’t like to lie—so there’d better be a good reason why I’m doing it.”

“Can’t you just thank me and get over it?”

“Thank you.” I said, and then I folded my arms. Waiting.

“You’re not going to let it go, are you?”

“No.”

“In that case… I hope you enjoy disappointment.”

We scowled at each other in silence. I was the first to speak, trying to keep myself focused. I was in
danger of being distracted by his livid, glorious face. It was like trying to stare down a destroying
angel.

“If you were going to be like this about it,” I said frigidly, “Why did you even bother?”
He paused, and for a brief moment his stunning face was unexpectedly vulnerable.

“I don’t know,” he whispered.

And then he turned his back on me and walked away.

I was so angry; it took me a few minutes until I could move. When I could walk, I made my way slowly to the exit at the end of the hallway.

The waiting room was more unpleasant than I’d feared. It seemed like every face I knew in Forks was there, staring at me. Charlie rushed to my side; I put up my hands.

“There’s nothing wrong with me,” I assured him quietly. I was still upset by the whole situation.

“What did the doctor say?”

“Dr. Cullen saw me, and he said I was fine, and I could go home.” I sighed. Mike and Jessica and Erica were all there, beginning to converge on us. “Let’s go,” I urged.

Charlie put one arm behind my back, not quite touching me, and led me to the glass doors of the exit. I waved sheepishly at my friends, hoping to convey that they didn’t need to worry anymore. It was a huge relief—the first time I’d ever felt that way—to get into the cruiser.

We drove in silence. I was so wrapped up in my thoughts that I barely knew Charlie was there. I was positive that Edward’s defensive behavior in the hall was a confirmation of the bizarre things I still could hardly believe I’d witnessed.

When we got to the house, Charlie finally spoke.

“Um… you’ll need to call Renée.” He hung his head, guilty.

I was appalled. “You told Mom!”

“Sorry.”

I slammed the cruiser’s door a little harder than necessary on my way out.

My mom was in hysterics, of course. I had to tell her I felt fine at least thirty times before she would calm down. She begged me to come home—forgetting the fact that home was empty at the moment—but her pleas were easier to resist than I would have thought. I was consumed by the mystery Edward presented. And more than a little obsessed by Edward himself. Stupid, stupid, stupid. I wasn’t as eager to escape Forks as I should be, as any normal, sane person would be.

I decided I might as well go to bed early that night. Charlie continued to watch me anxiously, and it was getting on my nerves. I stopped on my way to grab three Tylenol from the bathroom. They did help, and, as the pain eased, I drifted to sleep.

That was the first night I dreamed of Edward Cullen.
Invitations

In my dream it was very dark, and what dim light there was seemed to be radiating from Edward’s skin. I couldn’t see his face, just his back as he walked away from me, leaving me in the blackness. No matter how fast I ran, I couldn’t catch up to him; no matter how loud I called, he never turned. Troubled, I woke in the middle of the night and couldn’t sleep again for what seemed like a very long time. After that, he was in my dreams nearly every night, but always on the periphery, never within reach.

The month that followed the accident was uneasy, tense, and, at first, embarrassing.

To my dismay, I found myself the center of attention for the rest of that week. Tyler Crowley was impossible, following me around, obsessed with making amends to me somehow. I tried to convince him what I wanted more than anything else was for him to forget all about it—especially since nothing had actually happened to me—but he remained insistent. He followed me between classes and sat at our now-crowded lunch table. Mike and Erica didn’t seem to like that; they flashed more side-eye at him than they did at each other, which made me worry that I’d gained another unwelcome fan.

No one seemed concerned about Edward, though I explained over and over that he was the hero—how he had pulled me out of the way and had nearly been crushed, too. I tried to be convincing. Jessica, Mike, Erica, and everyone else always commented that they hadn’t even seen him there till the van was pulled away.

I wondered to myself why no one else had seen him standing so far away, before he was suddenly, impossibly saving my life. With chagrin, I realized the probable cause—no one else was as aware of Edward as I always was. No one else watched him the way I did. How pitiful.

Edward was never surrounded by crowds of curious bystanders eager for his firsthand account. People avoided him as usual. The Cullens and the Hales sat at the same table as always, not eating, talking only among themselves. None of them, especially Edward, glanced my way anymore.

When he sat next to me in class, as far from me as the table would allow, he seemed totally unaware of my presence. Like my seat was empty. Only now and then, when his fists would suddenly ball up—skin stretched even whiter over the bones—did I wonder if he wasn’t quite as oblivious as he appeared.

I wanted very much to talk to him, and the day after the accident I tried. The last time I’d seen him, outside the ER, we’d both been so agitated. I still was angry that he wouldn’t trust me with the truth, even though I was keeping my part of the bargain flawlessly. But he had in fact saved my life, no matter how he’d done it. And, overnight, the heat of my anger faded and I began to realize that I hadn’t really thanked him properly.

He was already seated when I got to Biology, looking straight ahead. I sat down, expecting him to turn toward me. He showed no sign that he realized I was there.

“Hello, Edward,” I said pleasantly, to show him I wasn’t upset anymore.

He turned his head a fraction toward me without meeting my gaze, nodded once, and then looked the other way.

And that was the last contact I’d had with him, though he was there, a foot away from me, every
day. I watched him sometimes, unable to stop myself—from a distance, though, in the cafeteria or parking lot. I watched as his golden eyes grew perceptibly darker day by day. Then abruptly they were honey-colored again. And the slow progression continued. But in class I gave no more notice that he existed than he showed toward me. I was miserable. And the dreams continued.

I tried to figure out his attitude and I kept coming back to the same thought; he wished he hadn’t pushed me out of the way of Tyler’s van. He said himself that day that he didn’t know why he had saved me. The thought ate away at me.

Despite my outright lies, the tone of my e-mails alerted Renée to my depression, and she called a few times, worried. I tried to convince her it was just the weather that had me down.

Mike, at least, was pleased by the obvious coolness between me and my lab partner. I mused that he’d been worried that Edward’s daring rescue might have made us best buddies, and he was relieved that it seemed to have the opposite effect. He grew more confident, sitting on the edge of my table to talk before Biology class started, ignoring Edward as completely as he ignored us.

The snow washed away for good after that one dangerously icy day. Mike was disappointed he’d never gotten to stage his snowball fight but pleased that the beach trip would soon be possible. The rain continued heavily, though, and the weeks passed.

Jessica made me aware of another event looming on the horizon—she called the first Tuesday of March to talk to me about the girls’ choice spring dance in two weeks.

“So, just to be clear… you weren’t planning on me asking you… right?” she asked carefully. “Because, I mean, we hang out a lot, but I assumed…” her voice trailed off.

“I wasn’t planning on you asking me, Jess.” I was somewhat surprised she thought there was the possibility that I would want her to.

“I always figured you were…” she stopped short to rethink her phrasing, “I mean when I first met you I guessed… uh, that I wasn’t your type?” she said it so delicately, like she was afraid of offending me.

There was a silence for a moment and then we both laughed.

“You’re right. You’re not my type, Jess.” I couldn’t help but smile. “But thanks for thinking of me.”

“If you need help finding a date…” I think she realized she didn’t have a solid idea of who I could even go with, “I’m sure we could find someone!” she said hopefully.

“No, Jess, I’m not going,” I assured her. Dancing was glaringly outside my range of abilities.

“It will be really fun.” Her attempt to convince me sounded more sympathetic than anything, like the thought of me being there without a date would be awful but she didn’t want me to feel bad. Then again maybe those were just my own feelings.

“Who are you thinking of asking?” I tried to change the subject.

“Well, I was thinking of asking Mike.” I could tell she was smiling widely.

“Mike Newton?” Uh oh. I still hadn’t determined if Mike constantly following me around was just him being overly friendly or something more.

“Yeah! He’s just so cute,” she was clearly excited, “He hangs out with you a lot, what do you
I didn’t want to say that I thought Mike might not be interested in the same way I wasn’t interested, but at the same time she had sensed where my attractions lie fairly quickly so maybe I was wrong.

“You have fun with Mike,” I encouraged.

The next day, I was surprised that Jessica wasn’t her usual gushing self in Trig and Spanish. She was silent as she walked by my side between classes, and I was afraid to ask her why. If Mike had turned her down, it meant I was right, but I hoped I was wrong for Jessica’s sake.

My fears were strengthened during lunch when Jessica sat as far from Mike as possible, chatting animatedly with Tyler. Mike was unusually quiet.

Mike was still quiet as he walked me to class, the uncomfortable look on his face a bad sign. But he didn’t broach the subject until I was in my seat and he was perched on my desk. As always, I was electrically aware of Edward sitting close enough to touch, as distant as if he were merely an invention of my imagination.

“So,” Mike said, looking at the floor, “Jessica asked me to the spring dance.”

“That’s great.” I made my voice bright and enthusiastic. “You’ll have a lot of fun with Jessica.”

“Well…” He floundered as he examined my smile, clearly not happy with my response. “I told her I had to think about it.”

“Why would you do that?” I let disapproval color my tone, though I was relieved he hadn’t given her an absolute no.

His face was bright red as he looked down again. I began to feel nervous.

“I was wondering if… well, I was thinking maybe we could… you know… You and me could… go.” If it was possible, his face got even redder. “Like, stag. Go stag. Together.”

I paused for a moment, feeling horribly awkward. I hoped my face didn’t betray how I felt. From the corner of my eye, I saw Edward’s head tilt reflexively in my direction.

“Mike, I think you should tell her yes,” was all I could think to say.

“Did someone already ask you to go?” Did Edward notice how Mike’s eyes flickered in his direction?

“No,” I assured him. “I’m not going to the dance at all.”

“Why not?” Mike demanded.

I didn’t want to get into the safety hazards that dancing presented, so I quickly made new plans.

“I’m going to Seattle that Saturday,” I explained. I needed to get out of town anyway—it was suddenly the perfect time to go.

“Can’t you go some other weekend?”

“Sorry, no,” I said. “So you shouldn’t make Jess wait any longer—it’s rude.”
“Yeah, you’re right,” he mumbled, and turned, dejected, to walk back to his seat.

I closed my eyes and pressed my fingers to my temples, trying to push the guilt and sympathy out of my head. What a mess, even though Mike didn’t outright ask me I couldn’t help but feel bad. Not just for him, but for Jessica, too, who clearly liked him. Mrs. Banner began talking. I sighed and opened my eyes.

And Edward was staring at me curiously, that same, familiar edge of frustration even more distinct now in his black eyes.

I stared back, surprised, expecting him to look quickly away. But instead he continued to gaze with probing intensity into my eyes, like he was trying to find something very important inside them. There was no question of me looking away. My hands started to shake.

“Mr. Cullen?” the teacher called, seeking the answer to a question that I hadn’t heard.

“The Krebs Cycle,” Edward answered, seeming reluctant as he turned to look at Mrs. Banner.

I looked down at my book as soon as his eyes released me, trying to find my place. I couldn’t believe the rush of emotion pulsing through me—just because he’d happened to look at me for the first time in six weeks. I couldn’t allow him to have this level of influence over me. It was pathetic. More than pathetic, it was unhealthy.

I tried very hard not to be aware of him for the rest of the hour, and, since that was impossible, at least not to let him know that I was aware of him. When the bell rang at last, I turned my back to him to gather my things, expecting him to leave immediately as usual.

“Beau?”

His voice shouldn’t have been so familiar to me, as if I’d known the sound of it all my life rather than for just a few short weeks.

I turned slowly toward him, not wanting to feel what I knew I would feel when I looked at his too-perfect face. I’m sure my expression was guarded; his was unreadable.

He didn’t say anything.

“Yes?” I asked.

He just looked at me.

“So are you or are you not speaking to me again?” I finally asked with an unintended but slightly petulant tone to my voice.

His lips twitched, fighting a smile.

“No, not really,” he admitted.

“Okay.” I closed my eyes and sighed. He waited.

“Then what do you want, Edward?” I asked, keeping my eyes closed; it was easier to talk to him coherently that way.

“I’m sorry.” He sounded sincere. “I’m being very rude, I know. But it’s better this way, really.”

I opened my eyes. His face was very serious.
“I don’t know what you mean,” I said, my voice hesitant.

“It’s better if we’re not friends,” he explained. “Trust me.”

My eyes narrowed. I’d heard that before.

He seemed surprised by my reaction.

“What are you thinking?” He asked, his voice seemed softer but I could see frustration in his face.

“I guess… It’s just too bad you didn’t figure that out earlier,” I sighed, again. “You could have saved yourself all this regret.”

“Regret?” My answer seemed to have caught him off guard. “Regret for what?”

“For not just letting Tyler’s van crush me.”

He looked completely shocked. He stared at me in disbelief for a moment and when he finally spoke he almost sounded mad.

“You think I regret saving your life?” the words were quiet, but intense.

“I can tell that you do,” I was exhausted by his mood swings, “I just don’t know why.”

“You don’t know anything.” He was definitely mad.

I had reached my limit. His mood swings were too much for me to deal with today. I gathered my books together, then stood and walked to the door. I needed to be out of the room—make a point with a dramatic exit—but of course I caught the toe of my boot on the doorjamb and dropped my books. I stood there for a moment, thinking about leaving them. Then I sighed and bent to pick them up. He was there; he’d already stacked them into a pile. He handed them to me, his face hard.

“Thank you,” I mumbled.

“You’re welcome,” he answered. He still sounded mad, but there was something else in his voice that I couldn’t quite identify.

I straightened up swiftly and hurried off to Gym without looking back.

Gym was brutal. We’d moved on to basketball. My team never passed me the ball, so that was good, but I fell down a lot. Sometimes I took people with me. Today I was worse than usual because my head was so filled with Edward. I tried to concentrate on my feet, but he kept creeping back into my thoughts just when I really needed my balance.

It was a relief, as always, to leave. I couldn’t wait to be back inside my truck, alone. The truck was in decent shape after the accident, all things considered. I’d had to replace the taillights, and if the paint job wasn’t already hopeless, I would have touched up the new scrapes. Tyler’s parents had to sell their van for parts.

I almost had a stroke when I rounded the corner and saw a figure leaning against the side of my truck. Then I quickly realized it was just Erica. I started walking again.

“Hey, Erica,” I called.

“Hi, Beau.”
“What’s up?” I said as I fumbled with my keys. I wasn’t paying attention to the uncomfortable edge in her voice, so her next words took me by surprise.

“Oh, I was just wondering… if you would go to the spring dance with me?”

“I’m… I’m not going to the dance, Erica.” I said, too startled to be diplomatic.

I had to turn and look at her then. Her face was down, her black hair hiding her eyes.

“Oh, okay.”

I recovered my composure and tried to make her feel better. “Thank you for asking me, but I’m going to be in Seattle that day.”

“Oh,” she said. “Well, maybe next time.”

“Sure,” I said without thinking. I didn’t want to encourage her to pursue the impossible.

“See ya,” She waved over her shoulder as she hurried off before I could set things straight.

I heard a low chuckle.

Edward was walking past the front of my truck, looking straight forward, his lips pressed together. I jerked the door open and jumped inside, slamming it a little too hard behind me. I revved the deafening engine and reversed out into the aisle. Edward was in his car already, two spaces down, sliding out smoothly in front of me, cutting me off. He stopped there—to wait for his family; I could see the four of them walking this way, but still by the cafeteria. I considered taking out the rear of his shiny Volvo as revenge for his ridiculous mood swings, but there were too many witnesses. I looked in my rearview mirror. A line was beginning to form. Directly behind me, Tyler Crowley was in his recently acquired used Sentra, waving. I was too preoccupied with my thoughts to acknowledge him.

While I was sitting there, looking everywhere but at the car in front of me, I heard a knock on my passenger side window. I looked over; it was Tyler. I glanced back in my rearview mirror, confused. His car was still running, the door left open. I leaned across the cab to crank the window down. It was stiff. I got it halfway down, then gave up.

“I’m sorry, Tyler, I’m stuck behind Cullen.” I gestured to the Volvo. Obviously there was nothing I could do.

“Oh, I know— I just wanted to ask you something while we’re trapped here.” He grinned.

I sighed, “Oh? What?”

“Will you go with me to the spring dance?” he continued.

What was going on in this school? I knew for a fact that Tyler had a reputation for being a flirt with the girls. Unlike Mike, I knew for certain he wasn’t interested in boys.

“I’m not going to be in town, Tyler.” My face was red. I could tell.

“Yeah, Mike said that,” he grinned.

“Then why—”

He shrugged. “I was hoping you were just letting him down easy.”
“I wasn’t.” I was having trouble hiding my frustration, “besides, wouldn’t you rather go with a girl?”

“Usually, but I thought maybe you’d like to have someone to go with as a date instead of going stag.” His self-assured cockiness would normally charm me in different circumstances, but today it just added to my annoyance.

“Sorry, Tyler,” I said, working to hide my irritation. “I really am going out of town.”

“That’s cool. We still have prom.”

And before I could respond, he was walking back to his car. I could feel the shock on my face. I looked forward to see Alice, Royal, Emmett, and Jasper all sliding into the Volvo. In his rearview mirror, Edward’s eyes were on me. He was unquestionably shaking with laughter, as if he’d heard every word Tyler had said. I revved the engine, wondering how much damage it would do to the Volvo and the black car beside it if I just muscled my way through and made my escape. I was pretty sure my truck could win that fight.

But they were all in, and Edward was speeding away. I drove home slowly, carefully, and thoroughly confused. Was Mike going to ask Jessica to the dance? Would she blame me if he didn’t? Was Tyler serious about taking me to the dance? Or prom? At least fretting over all this drama kept my mind off Edward.

When I got home, I decided to make chicken enchiladas for dinner. It was a long process, and it would keep me busy. While I was simmering the onions and chilies, the phone rang. I was almost afraid to answer it, but it might be Charlie or my mom.

It was Jessica, and she was jubilant; Mike had caught her after school to accept her invitation. I celebrated with her briefly while I stirred. Maybe Mike liked girls after all. She had to go; she wanted to call Angela and Lauren to tell them. I suggested—with casual innocence—that Lauren, a reserved, intelligent girl who had rarely spoke to me at the lunch table, could ask Tyler; I’d heard he was still available. Jess thought that was a great idea. She still sincerely wished I would go to the dance. I gave her my Seattle excuse.

After I hung up, I tried to concentrate on dinner—dicing the chicken carefully; I didn’t want to take another trip to the emergency room. But my head was spinning, trying to analyze every word Edward had spoken today. What did he mean when he said it was better if we weren’t friends?

My stomach twisted in knots as I realized what he must have meant. He must see how absorbed I was by him; he must not want to lead me on… so we couldn’t even be friends… because he wasn’t interested in me at all.

Of course he wasn’t interested in me, I thought dejectedly, my eyes stinging—a delayed reaction to the onions. Besides, even if he liked boys, I wasn’t interesting. And he was. Interesting… and brilliant… and mysterious… and perfect… and beautiful… and possibly able to lift full-sized vans with one hand.

Well, that was fine. I could leave him alone. I would leave him alone. I would get through my self-imposed sentence here in purgatory, and then hopefully some school in the Southwest, or possibly Hawaii, would offer me a scholarship. I focused my thoughts on sunny beaches and palm trees as I finished the enchiladas and put them in the oven.

Charlie seemed suspicious when he came home and smelled the green peppers. My mom was famous for her disastrous Mexican food. But he was still game to take the first bite. He seemed to like it. It was fun to watch as he slowly began trusting me in the kitchen.
“Dad?” I asked when he was almost done.

“Yeah, Beau?”

“Um, I just wanted to let you know that I’m going to Seattle for the day a week from Saturday… if that’s okay?” I didn’t want to ask permission—it set a bad precedent—but I felt rude, so I tacked it on at the end.

“Why?” He sounded surprised, as if he were unable to imagine something that Forks couldn’t offer.

“Well, I wanted to get a few books—the library here is pretty limited—and maybe look at some better winter clothes.” I had more money than I was used to having, since, thanks to Charlie, I hadn’t had to pay for a car. Not that the truck didn’t cost me quite a bit in the gas department.

“That truck probably doesn’t get very good gas mileage,” he said, echoing my thoughts.

“I know, I’ll stop in Montesano and Olympia—and Tacoma if I have to.”

“Are you going all by yourself?”

“Yes.”

“Seattle is a big city—you could get lost,” he fretted.

“Dad, Phoenix is five times the size of Seattle—and I can read a map, don’t worry about it.”

“Do you want me to come with you?”

I wondered if he was really that worried about me, or if he just thought all the Saturdays he’d left me alone were starting to add up to neglect. He was probably worried. I was sure that, in his head, he still pictured me as five-year-old most of the time.

“That’s okay, dad. It probably won’t be that exciting, anyway.”

“Okay, Beau.”

“Thanks.” I smiled at him.

“Will you be back in time for the dance?”

I just stared back at him until he got it.

It didn’t take him long. “Oh, that’s right,” he realized.

“Yeah.” I laughed. I didn’t get my balance issues from my mom.

The next morning, when I pulled into the parking lot, I deliberately parked as far as possible from the silver Volvo. I didn’t want to see him. I wanted to keep my distance, to not notice him anymore.

Getting out of the cab, I fumbled with my key and it fell into a puddle at my feet. As I bent to get it, a white hand flashed out and grabbed it before I could. I jerked upright. Edward Cullen was right next to me, leaning casually against my truck.

“How do you do that?” I gasped.
“Do what?” He held my key out as he spoke. As I reached for it, he dropped it into my palm.

“Appear out of thin air.”

“Beau, it’s not my fault if you are exceptionally unobservant.” His voice was quiet as usual—velvet, muted. His lips were holding back a smile, like he thought I was hilarious.

I glared at his perfect face. How was I supposed to ignore him if he kept talking to me? Wasn’t he the one that said it would be better if we weren’t friends? His eyes were light again today, a deep, golden honey color. I had to look down to reassemble my now-tangled thoughts.

“Why the traffic jam last night?” It was the only thing I could think to say. “I thought you were supposed to be pretending I don’t exist.”

“That was for Tyler’s sake, not mine. I had to give him his chance.” He snickered.

“What?” I asked, perplexed. Irritation started to grow in my mind; had he put Tyler up to asking me to the dance? That didn’t seem likely. My confusion seemed to amuse him.

“And I’m not pretending you don’t exist,” he continued.

I met his eyes, trying to remain as focused as I could despite myself. “I don’t know what you want from me,” I told him.

His amused expression quickly disappeared. His face seemed guarded.

“Nothing.” He said too quickly, almost like he was lying.

“Then you probably should have let the van take me out. Easier that way.”

He stared for a second. His lips pressed into a hard line, all signs of humor gone.

“Beau, you are utterly absurd,” he said, his low voice cold.

My stomach was in the tightest of knots. I turned my back and started to walk away.

“Wait,” he called.

I kept walking, sloshing through the rain and forcing myself not to look back. But he was next to me, easily keeping pace.

“I’m sorry, that was rude,” he said as we walked.

I ignored him.

“I’m not saying it isn’t true,” he continued, “but it was rude to say it, anyway.”

“Why won’t you leave me alone?” I grumbled.

“I wanted to ask you something, but you sidetracked me,” he chuckled. He seemed to have recovered his good humor.

I sighed, but I slowed down. “Fine, then. What do you want to ask?”

“I was wondering if, a week from Saturday—you know, the day of the spring dance—”

“Are you trying to be funny?” I interrupted him, wheeling toward him. My face got drenched from
the rain as I looked up at his expression.

His eyes were wickedly amused. “Will you please allow me to finish?”

*Walk away,* I told myself.

I didn’t move.

“I heard you say you were going to Seattle that day, and I was wondering if you wanted a ride.”

That was unexpected.

“What?” I wasn’t sure what he was getting at.

“Do you want a ride to Seattle?”

“With who?” I asked, mystified.

“Myself, obviously.” He enunciated every syllable, like he thought maybe English wasn’t my first language.

I was still stunned. “*Why?*”

“Well, I was planning to go to Seattle in the next few weeks, and, to be honest, I’m not sure if your truck can make it.”

“My truck works just fine, thank you very much for your concern.” I started to walk again, hoping he wouldn’t follow. He did.

“But can your truck make it there on one tank of gas?” He matched my pace again.

“I don’t see how that is any of your business.” Stupid, shiny Volvo owner.

“The wasting of finite resources is everyone’s business.”

“Honestly, Edward.” I felt a thrill go through me as I said his name, and I didn’t like it. “I can’t keep up with you. I thought you didn’t want to be my friend.”

“I said it would be better if we weren’t friends, not that I didn’t want to be.”

“Oh, thanks, now that’s all cleared up.” I said, my voice rich with sarcasm. I realized I had stopped walking again. We were under the shelter of the cafeteria roof now, so I could more easily look at his face. Which certainly didn’t help my clarity of thought.

“It would be more… prudent for you not to be my friend,” he explained. “But I’m tired of trying to stay away from you, Beau.”

His eyes were gloriously intense as he uttered that last sentence, his voice smoldering. I couldn’t remember how to breathe.

“Will you go with me to Seattle?” he asked, his voice still intense.

I couldn’t speak yet, so I just nodded.

He smiled briefly, and then his face became serious.

“You really *should* stay away from me,” he warned. “I’ll see you in class.”
He turned abruptly and walked back the way we’d come.
I made my way to English in a daze. I didn’t even realize when I first walked in that class had already started.

“Thank you for joining us, Mr. Swan,” Mr. Mason said in a disparaging tone.

I flushed and hurried to my seat.

It wasn’t till class ended that I realized Mike wasn’t sitting in his usual seat next to me. I felt a twinge of guilt. But he and Erica both met me at the door as usual, so I figured I wasn’t totally unforgiven. Mike seemed to become more himself as we walked, gaining enthusiasm as he talked about the weather report for this weekend. The rain was supposed to take a minor break, and so maybe his beach trip would be possible. I tried to sound eager, to make up for disappointing him yesterday. It was hard; rain or no rain, it would still only be in the high forties, if we were lucky.

The rest of the morning passed in a blur. It was difficult to believe that I hadn’t just imagined what Edward had said, and the way his eyes had looked. Maybe it was just a very convincing dream that I’d confused with reality. That seemed more probable. After all, what were the chances that he was that interesting, that attractive, and interested in me? It didn’t seem likely.

I was both eager and nervous as Jessica and I entered the cafeteria. I wanted to see his face, to see if he’d gone back to the cold, indifferent person I’d known for the last several weeks. Or if, by some miracle, I’d really heard what I thought I’d heard this morning. Jessica babbled on about her dance plans—Lauren had asked Tyler to the dance, and Angela had asked another boy I didn’t know and they were all going together—completely unaware of how preoccupied I was. Disappointment flooded through me as my eyes unerringly focused on his table. The other four were there, but he was absent. Had he gone home? Was he just going to disappear suddenly whenever something happened?

I followed the still-babbling Jessica through the line, crushed. I’d lost my appetite—I bought bottle of lemonade, more for something to carry than to actually drink. I just wanted to go sit down. No. I wanted to go home, I wanted to go to sleep and wake up in a world where Edward Cullen wasn’t driving me crazy with his mood swings and his cryptic mutterings and his stupid, beautiful, perfect face.

“Edward Cullen is staring at you again,” Jessica said, finally breaking through my abstraction with his name. “I wonder why he’s sitting alone today.”

My head snapped up. I followed her gaze to see Edward, smiling crookedly, staring at me from an empty table across the cafeteria from where he usually sat. Once he’d caught my eye, he raised one hand and motioned with his index finger for me to join him. As I stared in disbelief, he winked.

“Does he mean you?” Jessica asked with astonishment in her voice. I would have been insulted if I wasn’t completely shocked myself.

“Maybe he needs help with his Biology homework,” I muttered. “Um, I’d better go see what he wants.”

I could feel her staring after me as I walked away. I could also feel my face turning red the closer I got to Edward.

When I reached his table, I stood behind the chair across from him, unsure.
“Why don’t you sit with me today?” he asked, smiling.

I sat down automatically, watching him with caution. He was still smiling. It was hard to believe that someone so beautiful could be real. Part of me was afraid that he might disappear in a sudden puff of smoke, and I would wake up. Part of me wished he would.

He stared at me, smiling. He seemed to be waiting for me to say something.

“This is different,” I finally managed.

“Well…” He paused, and then the rest of the words followed in a rush. “I decided as long as I was going to hell, I might as well do it thoroughly.”

I waited for him to explain this new cryptic statement, but he didn’t.

The silence got more uncomfortable as the seconds ticked by.

“You know I don’t have any idea what you mean,” I eventually pointed out.

“I know.” He smiled again, and then he changed the subject. “I think your friends are angry with me for stealing you.”

“They’ll survive.” I could feel their stares boring into my back. For once, it didn’t bother me.

“I may not give you back, though,” he said with a wicked glint in his eyes.

My breath caught in my throat.

He laughed.

“You look worried.”

“No,” I said, but my voice broke, tellingly. “Surprised, actually… what brought all this on?”

“I told you—I got tired of trying to stay away from you. So I’m giving up.” He was still smiling, but his ocher eyes were serious.

“Giving up?” I repeated in confusion.

“Yes—giving up trying to be good. I’m just going to do what I want now, and let the chips fall where they may.” His smile faded as he explained, and a hard edge crept into his velvet voice.

“You lost me again.”

The breathtaking crooked smile reappeared. “I always say too much when I’m talking to you—that’s one of the problems.”

“Don’t worry—I don’t understand any of it,” I said wryly.

“I’m counting on that.”

We stared at each other for a few seconds, but the quiet wasn’t awkward this time. It was more… charged. My face started to get hot again.

“So,” I said, looking away so that I could catch my breath. “In plain English, are we friends now?”

“Friends…,” he mused, dubious.
“Or not,” I offered.

He grinned. “Well, we can try, I suppose. But I’m warning you now that I’m not a good friend for you.” Behind his smile, the warning was real.

“You say that a lot,” I noted, trying to ignore the sudden knots forming in my stomach and keep my voice even. I wasn’t sure that I believed what he was saying, but I could tell that he believed it.

“Yes, because you’re not listening to me. I’m still waiting for you to hear me. If you’re smart, you’ll avoid me.”

Then I had to smile, and I watched as his smile got bigger in response. “I thought we’d already come to the conclusion that I’m… what was it? Absurd. I suppose… not smart isn’t far behind.”

He smiled apologetically.

“So, as long as I’m being absurdly unintelligent,” He laughed at that, “we’ll try to be friends?”

“That sounds about right.” I looked down at my hands wrapped around the lemonade bottle, not sure what to do now, but feeling oddly satisfied. Still, it was so strange to sit with him here—like normal people. I was so sure only one of us was normal.

“What are you thinking?” he asked curiously.

I looked up into his deep gold eyes, became befuddled, and, as usual, blurted out the truth.

“I’m trying to figure out what you are.”

His jaw tightened, but he kept his smile in place with some effort.

“Are you having any luck with that?” he asked in an offhand tone.

“No too much,” I admitted.

He chuckled. “What are your theories?”

I blushed. I had been vacillating during the last month between Clark Kent and Peter Parker. There was no way I was going to own up to that.

“Won’t you tell me?” he asked, tilting his head to one side with a shockingly tempting smile. I felt my throat go dry.

I shook my head. “Too embarrassing.”

“That’s really frustrating, you know,” he complained.

“Really?” I raised my eyebrows, “Like, someone refusing to tell you what they’re thinking, even if all the while he’s making cryptic little remarks specifically designed to keep you up at night wondering what he could possibly mean… frustrating like that?”

He frowned, but the pout of his lips was distractingly attractive.

“Or is it frustrating like, say, he’s also done a bunch of other strange things—for example, saving your life under impossible circumstances one day, then treating you like a pariah the next—and he never explained any of that, either, even after he promised he would. Frustrating like that?”
His frown twitched, but I thought I saw the hint of a guilty smile. “You’re not over that, are you?”

“No, not quite.”

“Would an apology help?”

“It wouldn’t hurt.”

He smiled, “I’m sorry I broke my promise.”

It was a genuine apology and I didn’t expect it. I felt a warmth course through my body.

“Th-thank you.” I said softly, “It’s still not an explanation.”

He glanced over my shoulder, and then, unexpectedly, he snickered.

“What?”

“Your boyfriend seems to think I’m being unpleasant to you—he’s debating whether or not to come break up our fight.” He snickered again.

“I don’t have a boyfriend, and you’re trying to change the subject.”

He ignored the second half of my statement. “You might not think of him that way, but he wishes you did.”

“You don’t know that.”

“I do. I told you, most people are easy to read.”

“Except me.”

“Yes. Except for you.” His mood shifted suddenly; his eyes turned brooding. “I wonder why that is.”

I had to look away from the intensity of his stare. I concentrated on unscrewing the lid of my lemonade. I took a swig, staring at the table without seeing it.

“Aren’t you hungry?” he asked, distracted.

“No.” My stomach was full of butterflies. There was no way I could eat now.

“You?” I looked at the empty table in front of him.

“No, I’m not hungry.” I didn’t understand his expression—it looked like he was enjoying some private joke.

“Can you do me a favor?” I asked after a second of hesitation.

He was suddenly wary. “That depends on what you want.”

“It’s not much,” I promised.

He waited, still guarded but clearly curious.

“Could you warn me beforehand? The next time you decide to ignore me for my own good. Just so I’m prepared.” I looked at the lemonade bottle as I spoke, tracing the circle of the opening with my pinkie finger.
“That sounds fair.” He was pressing his lips together to keep from laughing when I looked up.

“Thanks.”

“Then can I have a favor in return?” he asked.

“Sure.” It was my turn to be curious. What would he want from me?

“Tell me one theory.”

Whoops. “Not that favor.”

“You didn’t qualify, you just promised one favor,” he reminded me.

“And you’ve broken promises yourself,” I reminded him back.

“Just one theory—I won’t laugh.”

“Yes, you will.” I was positive about that.

He looked down, and then glanced up at me through his long black lashes, his gold eyes scorching.

“Please?” he breathed, leaning toward me. Without meaning to, I leaned closer to him, like he was a magnet and I was trapped in his pull, till his face was less than a foot from mine. My mind went blank. Holy crow, how did he do that?

“Er, what?” I asked, dazed. I forced myself to sit back.

“Tell me just one little theory.” He practically purred the words. “Please?” His eyes still smoldered at me.

“Um, well, bitten by a radioactive spider?” Was he a hypnotist, too? Or was I just a hopeless pushover?

“That’s not very creative,” he scoffed.

“I’m sorry, that’s all I’ve got,” I said, miffed.

“You’re not even close,” he teased.

“No spiders?”

“Nope.”

“And no radioactivity?”

“None.”

“Dang,” I sighed.

“Kryptonite doesn’t bother me, either,” he chuckled.

“You’re not supposed to laugh, remember?”

He struggled to compose his face, but his shoulders shook from holding the laughter back.

“I’ll figure it out eventually,” I warned him.
His humor vanished like a switch had flipped off. “I wish you wouldn’t try.”

“Because…?”

“What if I’m not a superhero? What if I’m the bad guy?” He smiled playfully, but his eyes were impenetrable.

“Oh,” I said, as several things he’d hinted fell suddenly into place. “I see.”

“Do you?” His face was abruptly severe, as if he were afraid that he’d accidentally said too much.

“You’re dangerous?” I guessed, my pulse quickening as I intuitively realized the truth of my own words. He was dangerous. He’d been trying to tell me that all along. He just looked at me, eyes full of some emotion I couldn’t comprehend.

“But not the bad guy,” I whispered, shaking my head. “No, I don’t believe that.”

“You’re wrong.” His voice was almost inaudible. He looked down, stealing my bottle lid and then spinning it on its side between his fingers. I stared at him, wondering why I didn’t feel afraid. He meant what he was saying—that was obvious. But I just felt anxious, on edge… and, more than anything else, fascinated. The same way I always felt when I was near him.

The silence lasted until I noticed that the cafeteria was almost empty.

I jumped to my feet, and he looked up. He seemed… sad. But resigned. Like this was the reaction he’d been waiting for.

“We’re going to be late,” I told him, scrambling to gather my things.

He was surprised for just a second, and then the now-familiar amusement was back.

“I’m not going to class today,” he said, twirling the lid so fast it was just a blur.

“Why not?”

“It’s healthy to ditch class now and then.” He smiled up at me, but his eyes were still troubled.

“Well, I’m going,” I told him. Maybe if he asked me to ditch with him… No, that was stupid and irresponsible to ditch class for a boy.

He turned his attention back to his makeshift top. “I’ll see you later, then.”

I hesitated, torn, but then the first bell sent me hurrying out the door—with a last glance confirming that he hadn’t moved at all, and the lid was still spinning in a tight circle like it would never stop.

As I half-ran to class, my head was spinning just as fast. So few questions had been answered in comparison to how many new questions had been raised.

I was lucky; Mrs. Banner wasn’t in the room yet when I arrived. I settled quickly into my seat, aware that both Mike and Angela were staring at me. Mike looked resentful; Angela looked surprised, and slightly awed.

Mrs. Banner came in the room then, calling the class to order. She was juggling a few small cardboard boxes in her arms. She put them down on Mike’s table, telling him to start passing them around the class.
“Okay, guys, I want you all to take one piece from each box,” she said as she produced a pair of rubber gloves from the pocket of her lab jacket and pulled them on. The sharp sound as the gloves snapped into place against her wrists seemed ominous to me. “The first should be an indicator card,” she went on, grabbing a white card with four squares marked on it and displaying it. “The second is a four-pronged applicator—” she held up something that looked like a nearly toothless hair pick “—and the third is a sterile micro-lancet.” She held up a small piece of blue plastic and split it open. The barb was invisible from this distance, but my stomach flipped.

“I’ll be coming around with a dropper of water to prepare your cards, so please don’t start until I get to you.” She began at Mike’s table again, carefully putting one drop of water in each of the four squares. “Then I want you to carefully prick your finger with the lancet…” She grabbed Mike’s hand and jabbed the spike into the tip of Mike’s middle finger. Oh no. Clammy moisture broke out across my forehead and my ears began a faint ringing.

“Put a small drop of blood on each of the prongs.” She demonstrated, squeezing Mike’s finger till the blood flowed. I swallowed convulsively, my stomach heaving.

“And then apply it to the card,” she finished, holding up the dripping red card for us to see. I closed my eyes, trying to hear through the humming in my ears.

“The Red Cross is having a blood drive in Port Angeles next weekend, so I thought you should all know your blood type.” She sounded proud of herself. “Those of you who aren’t eighteen yet will need a parent’s permission—I have slips at my desk.”

She continued through the room with her water drops. I put my cheek against the cool black tabletop and tried to hold on as everything seemed to get farther away, slithering down a dark tunnel. The squeals, complaints, and giggles as my classmates skewered their fingers all sounded far off in the distance. I breathed slowly in and out through my mouth.

“Beau, are you all right?” Mrs. Banner asked. Her voice was close to my head, but still far away, and it sounded alarmed.

“I already know my blood type, Mrs. Banner. I’m O negative.” I said in a weak voice. I couldn’t open my eyes.

“Are you feeling faint?”

“Yes, ma’am,” I muttered, internally kicking myself for not ditching when I had the chance.

“Can someone help Beau to the nurse, please?” She called. I didn’t have to look up to know that it would be Mike who volunteered.

“Can you walk?” Mrs. Banner asked.


Mike seemed eager as he put his arm around my waist and pulled my arm over his shoulder. I leaned against him heavily on the way out of the classroom.

Mike towed me slowly across campus. When we were around the edge of the cafeteria, out of sight of building four in case Mrs. Banner was watching, I stopped.

“Just let me sit for a minute, please?” I begged. He helped me sit on the edge of the walk. “And whatever you do, keep your hand in your pocket,” I warned. I was still so dizzy. I slumped over on my side, putting my cheek against the freezing, damp cement of the sidewalk, closing my eyes.
seemed to help a little.

“Wow, you’re green, Beau,” Mike said nervously.

“Just gimme… a minute…”

“Beau?” a different voice called from the distance.

Oh, please no. Please let me be imagining that horribly familiar voice.

“What’s wrong—is he hurt?” His voice was closer now, and he sounded upset. I wasn’t imagining it. I squeezed my eyes shut, wondering if maybe I would die. That would be nice right now. If not that, at the very least, to not to throw up would be great.

Mike seemed stressed. “I think he fainted. I don’t know what happened, he didn’t even stick his finger.”

“Beau.” Edward’s voice was right beside me, relieved now. “Can you hear me?”

“No,” I groaned. “Go away.”

He chuckled.

“I was taking him to the nurse,” Mike explained in a defensive tone, “but he wouldn’t go any farther.”

“I’ll take him,” Edward said. I could hear the smile still in his voice. “You can go back to class.”

“What? No,” Mike protested. “I’m supposed to do it.”

Suddenly the sidewalk disappeared from beneath me. My eyes flew open in shock. Edward had scooped me up in his arms, like I weighed nothing at all. Then again, I didn’t weigh as much as a van.

“I’m fine, I swear. Put me down.” Please, please let me not vomit on him. He was walking before I was finished talking.

“Hey!” Mike called, already ten paces behind us. Edward ignored him.

“You look awful,” he told me, grinning.

“Put me back on the sidewalk,” I groaned. “I’ll be fine in a few minutes.”

He simply looked forward, smiling. I’d never been carried by someone before, it felt strange. Despite my nausea, I felt a strange tingling sensation running down my back and limbs. Being this close to Edward, touching him wasn’t something I was remotely prepared for in this moment.

“So you faint at the sight of blood?” he asked. This seemed to entertain him.

I didn’t answer. I closed my eyes again and took a deep breath. The nausea was already fading.

“And not even your own blood,” he continued, enjoying himself. I don’t know how he opened the door while carrying me, but it was suddenly warm, so I knew we were inside.

“Oh my,” I heard a female voice gasp.
“He fainted in Biology,” Edward explained.

I opened my eyes. I was in the office, and Edward was striding past the front counter toward the nurse’s door. Ms. Cope, the redheaded front office receptionist, ran ahead of him to hold it open. The grandmotherly nurse looked up from a novel, astonished, as Edward swung me into the room and placed me gently on the crackly paper that covered the brown vinyl mattress on the one cot. Then he moved to stand against the wall as far across the narrow room as possible. His eyes were bright, excited.

“He’s just a little faint,” he reassured the startled nurse. “They’re blood typing in Biology.”

The nurse nodded sagely. “There’s always one.”

He muffled a snicker.

“Just lie down for a minute, honey; it’ll pass.”

“I know,” I sighed. The nausea was mostly gone.

“Does this happen a lot?” she asked.

“Sometimes,” I admitted. Edward coughed to hide another laugh.

“You can go back to class now,” she told him.

“I’m supposed to stay with him.” He said this with such assured authority that—even though she pursed her lips—the nurse didn’t argue it further.

“I’ll go get you some ice for your head, dear,” she said to me, and then bustled out of the room.

“You were right,” I moaned, letting my eyes close.

“I usually am—but about what in particular this time?”

“Ditching is healthy.” I practiced breathing evenly.

“You scared me for a minute there,” he admitted after a pause. His tone made it sound like he was confessing a humiliating weakness. “I thought Newton was dragging your dead body off to bury it in the woods.”

“Hilarious.” I still had my eyes closed, but I was feeling more normal every minute.

“Honestly—I’ve seen corpses with better color. I was concerned that I might have to avenge your murder.”

“That’s morbid.”

He chuckled.

“Poor Mike. I’ll bet he’s mad.”

“He absolutely loathes me,” Edward said cheerfully.

“You can’t know that,” I argued, but then I wondered…

“You should have seen his face. It was obvious.”
“How did you see me? I thought you were ditching.” I was pretty much fine now, though the queasiness would probably pass faster if I’d eaten something for lunch. On the other hand, maybe it was lucky my stomach was empty.

“I was in my car, listening to a CD.” Such a normal response—it surprised me.

I heard the door and opened my eyes to see the nurse with a cold compress in her hand.

“Here you go, dear.” She laid it across my forehead. “You’re looking better,” she added.

“I think I’m fine,” I said, sitting up. Just a little ringing in my ears, no spinning. The mint green walls stayed where they should.

I could see she was about to make me lie back down, but the door opened just then, and Ms. Cope stuck her head in.

“We’ve got another one,” she warned.

I hopped down to free up the cot for the next invalid.

I handed the compress back to the nurse. “Here, I don’t need this.”

And then Mike staggered through the door, now supporting a sallow-looking Lee Stephens, another boy in our Biology class. Edward and I drew back against the wall to give them room.

“Oh no,” Edward muttered. “Go out to the office, Beau.”

I looked up at him, bewildered.

“Trust me—go.”

I spun and caught the door before it closed, floundering out of the infirmary. I could feel Edward right behind me.

“You actually listened to me.” He said, surprised.

“I smelled the blood,” I said, wrinkling my nose. Lee wasn’t sick from watching other people, like me.

“People can’t smell blood,” he contradicted.

“Yeah, I can.”

“No. Humans can smell the iron in blood, but only when it’s rubbed against skin or sometimes when there are large amounts or it’s dried.” The way he said humans, like they were a different species from himself was strange. “Either way, you shouldn’t be able to smell a pinprick of fresh blood.”

“Well, I can—that’s what makes me sick. It smells like rust… and salt.”

He was staring at me with an unfathomable expression.

“What?” I asked.

“It’s nothing.”

Mike came through the door then, glancing from me to Edward. The look he gave Edward
confirmed what Edward had said about loathing. He looked back at me, his eyes glum.

“You look better,” he accused.

“Just keep your hand in your pocket,” I warned him again.

“It’s not bleeding anymore,” he muttered. “Are you going back to class?”

“Are you kidding? I’d just have to turn around and come back.”

“Yeah, I guess…. So are you going this weekend? To the beach?” While he spoke, he flashed another glare toward Edward, who was standing against the cluttered counter, motionless as a sculpture, staring off into space.

I tried to sound as friendly as possible. “Sure, I said I was in.”

“We’re meeting at my dad’s store, at ten.” His eyes flickered to Edward again, wondering if he was giving out too much information. His body language made it clear that it wasn’t an open invitation.

“I’ll be there,” I promised.

“I’ll see you in Gym, then,” he said, moving uncertainly toward the door.

“Yeah, see you,” I replied. He looked at me once more, his round face slightly pouting, and then as he walked slowly through the door, his shoulders slumped. A swell of sympathy washed over me. I didn’t want to hurt his feelings, but it seemed like it just kept happening. I pondered seeing his disappointed face again… in Gym.

“Gym,” I groaned.

“I can take care of that.” I hadn’t noticed Edward moving to my side, but he spoke now in my ear. “Go sit down and look pale,” he muttered.

That wasn’t a challenge; I was always pale, and my recent swoon had left a light sheen of sweat on my face. I sat in one of the creaky folding chairs and rested my head against the wall with my eyes closed. Fainting always exhausted me.

I heard Edward speaking softly at the counter.

“Ms. Cope?”

“Yes?” I hadn’t heard her return to her desk.

“Beau has Gym next hour, and I don’t think he feels well enough. Actually, I was thinking I should take him home now. Do you think you could excuse him from class?” His voice was like melting honey. I could imagine how much more overwhelming his eyes would be.

“Do you need to be excused, too, Edward?” Ms. Cope fluttered.

Why couldn’t I do that?

“No, I have Mrs. Goff, she won’t mind.”

“Okay, it’s all taken care of. You feel better, Beau,” she called to me. I nodded weakly, hamming it up just a bit.
“Can you walk, or do you want me to carry you again?” With his back to the receptionist, his expression became sarcastic.

“I’ll walk.” I stood carefully, and I was still fine.

He held the door for me, his smile polite but his eyes mocking. I walked out into the cold, fine mist that had just begun to fall. It felt nice—the first time I’d enjoyed the constant moisture falling out of the sky—as it washed my face clean of the sticky perspiration.

“Thanks,” I said as he followed me out. “It’s almost worth getting sick to miss Gym.”

“Anytime.” He was staring straight forward, squinting into the rain.

“So are you going? This Saturday, I mean?” I was hoping he would, though it seemed unlikely. I couldn’t picture him loading up to carpool with the rest of the kids from school; he didn’t belong in the same world. But just hoping that he might gave me the first twinge of enthusiasm I’d felt for the outing.

“Where are you all going, exactly?” He was still looking ahead, expressionless, but his question made me hope he was considering it.

“Down to La Push, to First Beach.”

I studied his face, trying to read it. His eyes seemed to narrow infinitesimally. He glanced down at me from the corner of his eye, smiling wryly.

“I really don’t think I was invited.”

I sighed. “I just invited you.”

“Let’s you and I not push poor Mike any further this week. We don’t want him to snap.” His eyes danced; he was enjoying the idea more than he should.

“Mike-schmike,” I muttered, preoccupied by the way he’d said you and I. I liked it more than I should.

We were near the parking lot now. I veered left, toward my truck. Something caught my jacket and yanked me back half a step.

“Where do you think you’re going?” he asked, surprised. He was gripping a fistful my jacket in one hand.

I was confused. “I’m going home.”

“Didn’t you hear me promise to take you safely home? Do you think I’m going to let you drive in your condition?” He smirked.

“What condition?” I complained.

“You’ve had quite the day, Beau.” He smiled.

“Okay, so what do you suggest?”

His smile got wider, “I suggest that you get into my car, and you let me drive you home.”

“Okay, first of all that’s not necessary, and second, what about my truck?”
“Necessary is a subjective word. I’ll have Alice drop it off after school.”

I turned to face him, and he let go of my jacket. Looking up into his smug, handsome face I felt that strange tingling run down my back again.

“Are you going to put up a fuss?” he asked when I didn’t speak.

“Is there any point in resisting?”

I tried to decipher all the layers to his smile, but I didn’t get very far. “It warms my cold heart to see you learning so quickly. This way.”

“You’re not cute.” I narrowed my eyes. This was a lie, he was cute. Very cute. He laughed.

“It’s open,” he grinned as we reached the shiny Volvo. He got in the driver’s side.

“I really am perfectly capable of driving myself home!” I put up one last feeble attempt.

He lowered the automatic window and leaned toward me across the seat. “Get in, Beau.”

I didn’t move. He sighed.

“Please, Beau?”

“This is really is unnecessary,” I sighed as I climbed into the passenger seat. He smiled widely.

The inside of the Volvo was just as pristine as the outside. Instead of the smell of gasoline and tobacco, there was just a faint pleasant smell. Like a delicate, expensive cologne. It was almost familiar, but I couldn’t place it. Whatever it was, it smelled amazing.

As the engine gently purred to life, he fiddled with the controls, turning the heater up and the music down.

“Clair de Lune?” I asked.

“You know Debussy?” He sounded surprised.

I shrugged. “My mother played a lot of classical music around the house—I only know my favorites.”

“It’s one of my favorites, too.” He stared out through the rain, lost in thought.

“Well, imagine that,” I said. “We have something in common.”

He didn’t say anything, but he was smiling.

I listened to the music, relaxing against the light gray leather seat. It was impossible not to respond to the familiar, soothing melody. The rain blurred everything outside the window into gray and green smudges. I began to realize we were driving very fast; the car moved so steadily, so evenly, though, I didn’t feel the speed. Only the town flashing by gave it away.

“What is your mother like?” he asked me suddenly.

I glanced over to see him studying me with his curious, butterscotch eyes.

“She looks a lot like me—same eyes, same chin. I have Charlie’s brown hair, though. My mom is
more outgoing than I am, and braver. She’s irresponsible and slightly eccentric, and she’s a very unpredictable cook. She’s my best friend.” I stopped. Talking about her was making me sad.

“How old are you, Beau?” His voice sounded frustrated for some reason I couldn’t imagine. He’d stopped the car, and I realized we were at Charlie’s house already. The rain was so heavy that I could barely see the house at all. It was like the car was submerged under a river.

“I’m seventeen,” I responded, a little confused.

“You don’t seem seventeen.” His tone was reproachful; it made me laugh.

“What?” he asked, curious again.

“My mom always says I was born thirty-five years old and that I get more middle-aged every year.” I laughed, and then sighed. “Well, someone has to be the adult.” I paused for a second. “You don’t seem much like a junior in high school yourself,” I noted.

He made a face and changed the subject.

“So why did your mother marry Phil?”

I was surprised he would remember the name; I’d mentioned it just once, almost two months ago. It took me a moment to answer.

“My mother… she’s very young for her age. I think Phil makes her feel even younger. At any rate, she’s crazy about him.” I shook my head. The attraction was a mystery to me, but would anyone ever be good enough for my mom?

“Do you approve?” he asked.

“Does it matter?” I countered. “I want her to be happy… and he is who she wants.”

“That’s very generous…. I wonder,” he mused.

“What?”

“Would she extend the same courtesy to you, do you think? No matter who your choice was?” He was suddenly intent, his eyes searching mine.

“I-I think so,” I stuttered. “But she’s the parent, after all. It’s a little bit different.”

“No one too scary then,” he teased.

I grinned in response. “What do you mean by scary? Multiple facial piercings and extensive tattoos?”

“That’s one definition, I suppose.”

“What’s your definition?” But he ignored my question and asked me another.

“Do you think that I could be scary?” He raised one eyebrow, and the faint trace of a smile lightened his face.

I thought for a moment, wondering whether the truth or a lie would go over better. I decided to go with the truth. “Hmmm… I think you could be, if you wanted to.”

“Are you frightened of me now?” The smile vanished, and his heavenly face was suddenly serious.
“No.” But I answered too quickly. The smile returned.

“So, now are you going to tell me about your family?” I asked to distract him. “It’s got to be a much more interesting story than mine.”

He was instantly cautious. “What do you want to know?”

“The Cullens adopted you?” I verified.

“Yes.”

I hesitated for a moment. “What happened to your parents?”

“They died many years ago.” His tone was matter-of-fact.

“I’m sorry,” I mumbled.

“I don’t really remember them that clearly. Carlisle and Esme have been my parents for a long time now.”

“And you love them.” It wasn’t a question. It was obvious in the way he spoke of them.

“Yes.” He smiled. “I couldn’t imagine two better people.”

“You’re very lucky.”

“I know I am.”

“And your brother and sister?”

He glanced at the clock on the dashboard. “My brother and sister, and Jasper and Royal for that matter, are going to be quite upset if they have to stand in the rain waiting for me.”

“Oh, sorry, I guess you have to go.”

I didn’t want to get out of the car.

“And you probably want your truck back before Chief Swan gets home, so you don’t have to tell him about the Biology incident.” He grinned at me.

“I’m sure he’s already heard. There are no secrets in Forks.” I sighed.

He laughed, and there was an edge to his laughter.

“Have fun at the beach… good weather for sunbathing.” He glanced out at the sheeting rain.

“Won’t I see you tomorrow?”

“No. Emmett and I are starting the weekend early.”

“What are you going to do?” A friend could ask that, right? I hoped the disappointment wasn’t too apparent in my voice.

“We’re going to be hiking in the Goat Rocks Wilderness, just south of Rainier.

I remembered Charlie had said the Cullens went camping frequently.
“Oh, well, have fun.” I tried to sound enthusiastic. I don’t think I fooled him, though. A smile was playing around the edges of his lips.

“Will you do something for me this weekend?” He turned to look me straight in the face, utilizing the full power of his burning gold eyes.

I nodded helplessly.

“Don’t be offended, but you seem to be one of those people who just attract accidents like a magnet. So… try not to fall into the ocean or get run over or anything, all right?” He smiled crookedly.

The helplessness had faded as he spoke. I glared at him.

“I’ll see what I can do,” I narrowed my eyes. He smirked.

I jumped out into the rain and ran for the porch. By the time I turned around, the Volvo had disappeared.

“Oh!” I clutched at my jacket pocket, remembering that I had forgotten to give him the key to my truck.

The pocket was empty.
As I sat in my room, trying to concentrate on the third act of *Macbeth*, I was really listening for my truck. I would have thought, even over the pouring rain, I could have heard the engine’s roar. But when I went to peek out the curtain—again—it was suddenly there.

I wasn’t looking forward to waking up on Friday, and it more than lived up to my negative expectations. Of course, there were the fainting comments. Jessica especially seemed to get a kick out of that story. Luckily Mike had kept his mouth shut, and no one seemed to know about Edward’s involvement. She did have a lot of questions about lunch, though.

“So what did Edward Cullen want yesterday?” Jessica asked in Trig.

“I don’t know,” I answered truthfully. “He never really got to the point.”

“You looked kind of anxious,” she finished.

“Did I?” I kept my expression blank.

“You know, I’ve never seen him sit with anyone but his family before. That was weird.”

“ Weird,” I agreed

She seemed disappointed; she flipped her hair emphatically—I guessed she’d been hoping to hear something exciting.

The worst part about Friday was that, even though I knew he wasn’t going to be there, I still hoped. When I walked into the cafeteria with Jessica and Mike, I couldn’t keep from looking at his table, where Royal, Alice, and Jasper sat talking, heads close together. I wondered how Alice felt about having to drive my truck home last night.

At my usual table, everyone was full of our plans for the next day. Mike was animated again, putting a great deal of trust in the local weatherman who promised sun tomorrow. I’d have to see that before I believed it. But it was warmer today—almost sixty. Maybe the outing wouldn’t be completely miserable.

I intercepted a few unfriendly glances from a boy with silver blond hair who I didn’t know, which I didn’t understand until I was walking out of the room. I was right behind him and he was talking animatedly to a girl who also had sleek, silver blond hair, who I realized was Lauren.

“…don’t know why Beauregard”—he sneered my name—“doesn’t just sit with the Cullens from now on,” the boy was muttering to Lauren in a nasal, malicious voice. Lauren’s body language seemed to indicate she was put out.

“He’s our friend; he sits with us,” Lauren whispered back kindly.

I paused to let Jess and Angela pass me. I didn’t want to hear anymore.

That night at dinner, Charlie seemed enthusiastic about my trip to La Push in the morning. I think he felt guilty for leaving me home alone on the weekends, but he’d spent too many years building his habits to break them now. Of course he knew the names of all the kids going, and their parents, and their great-grandparents, too, probably. He seemed to approve. I wondered if he would approve of my plan to ride to Seattle with Edward Cullen. Not that I was going to mention it.
“Dad, do you know a place called Goat Rocks or something like that? I think it’s south of Mount Rainier,” I asked casually.

“Yeah—why?”

I shrugged. “Some kids were talking about camping there.”

“It’s not a very good place for camping.” He sounded surprised. “Too many bears. Most people go there during the hunting season.”

“Oh.” I murmured. “Maybe I got the name wrong.”

I meant to sleep in, but the light woke me. I opened my eyes to see a clear yellow light streaming through my window. I couldn’t believe it. I hurried to the window to check, and sure enough, there was the sun. It was in the wrong place in the sky, too low, and it didn’t seem to be as close as it should be, but it was definitely the sun. Clouds ringed the horizon, but a large patch of blue was visible in the middle. I lingered by the window as long as I could, afraid that if I left the blue would disappear again.

The Newtons’ Olympic Outfitters store was just north of town. I’d seen the store, but I’d never stopped there—not having much need for any supplies required for being outdoors over an extended period of time. In the parking lot I recognized Mike’s Suburban and Tyler’s Sentra. As I pulled up next to their vehicles, I could see the group standing around in front of the Suburban. Erica was there, along with two boys I had class with; I was fairly sure their names were Ben and Conner. Jess was there, flanked by Angela and Lauren. Two other girls stood with them, as well as the boy who had been whispering to Lauren in the cafeteria. He gave me a dirty look as I got out of the truck, and tried to whisper something to Lauren, she shook out her beautiful hair and tried to ignore him.

So it was going to be one of those days.

At least Mike was happy to see me.

“You came!” he called, delighted. “And I said it would be sunny today, didn’t I?”

“I told you I was coming,” I reminded him.

“We’re just waiting for Lee and Samantha… unless you invited someone,” Mike added.

“Nope,” I lied lightly, hoping I wouldn’t get caught in the lie. But also wishing that Edward would just show up out of nowhere like he always seemed to do.

Mike look satisfied, anyway.

“Will you ride in my car? It’s that or Lee’s mom’s minivan.”

“Sure.”

He smiled blissfully. It was so easy to make Mike happy.

“You can have shotgun,” he promised. I hid my chagrin. It wasn’t as simple to make Mike and Jessica happy at the same time. I could see Jessica looking at us with a strange, confused look. At this point I had decided that Mike might like both me and Jessica but, like a puppy, he could only focus on one of us at a time.

The numbers worked out in my favor, though. Lee brought two extra people, and suddenly every
seat was necessary. I managed to wedge Jess in between Mike and me in the front seat of the Suburban. Mike could have been more graceful about it, but at least Jess seemed elated.

It was only fifteen miles to La Push from Forks, with gorgeous, dense green forests edging the road most of the way and the wide Quillayute River snaking beneath it twice. I was glad I had the window seat. We’d rolled the windows down—the Suburban was a bit claustrophobic with nine people in it—and I tried to absorb as much sunlight as possible.

I’d been to the beaches around La Push many times during my Forks summers with Charlie, so the mile-long crescent of First Beach was familiar to me. It was still breathtaking. The water was dark gray, even in the sunlight, white-capped and heaving to the gray, rocky shore. Islands rose out of the steel harbor waters with sheer cliff sides, reaching to uneven summits, and crowned with austere, soaring firs. The beach had only a thin border of actual sand at the water’s edge, after which it grew into millions of large, smooth stones that looked uniformly gray from a distance, but close up were every shade a stone could be: terra-cotta, sea green, lavender, blue gray, dull gold. The tide line was strewn with huge driftwood trees, bleached bone white in the salt waves, some piled together against the edge of the forest fringe, some lying solitary, just out of reach of the waves.

There was a brisk wind coming off the waves, cool and briny. Pelicans floated on the swells while seagulls and a lone eagle wheeled above them. The clouds still circled the sky, threatening to invade at any moment, but for now the sun shone bravely in its halo of blue sky.

We picked our way down to the beach, Mike leading the way to a ring of driftwood logs that had obviously been used for parties like ours before. There was a fire circle already in place, filled with black ashes. Erica and the boy I thought was named Ben gathered broken branches of driftwood from the drier piles against the forest edge, and soon had a teepee-shaped construction build atop the old cinders.

“Have you ever seen a driftwood fire?” Mike asked me. I was sitting on one of the bone-colored benches; the other girls clustered, gossiping excitedly, on either side of me. Mike kneeled by the fire, lighting one of the smaller sticks with a cigarette lighter.

“No,” I said as he placed the blazing twig carefully against the teepee.

“You’ll like this then—watch the colors.” He lit another small branch and laid it alongside the first. The flames started to lick quickly up the dry wood.

“It’s blue,” I laughed in surprise.

“The salt does it. Pretty, isn’t it?” He lit one more piece, placed it where the fire hadn’t yet caught, and then came to sit by me. Thankfully, Jess was on his other side. She turned to him and claimed his attention. I watched the strange blue and green flames crackle toward the sky.

After a half hour of chatter, some of the boys wanted to hike to the nearby tidal pools. It was a dilemma. On the one hand, I loved the tide pools. They had fascinated me since I was a child; they were one of the only things I ever looked forward to when I had come to Forks. On the other hand, I’d also fallen into them a lot. Not a big deal when you’re seven and with your dad. It reminded me of Edward’s request—that I not fall into the ocean.

Lauren’s mean friend, who I found out was her twin brother, Logan, made the decision for me. He didn’t want to hike, and he was definitely wearing the wrong shoes for it. Lauren sighed and dutifully stayed behind with her brother. Most of the other girls besides Angela and Jessica decided to stay on the beach as well. I waited until Tyler and Erica had committed to remaining with them before I got up to join the pro-hiking group. Mike gave me a huge smile when he saw I was coming.
The hike wasn’t too long, though I hated to lose the sky in the woods. The green light of the forest was strangely at odds with the adolescent laughter, too murky and ominous to be in harmony with the light banter around me. I had to watch each step I took very carefully, avoiding roots below and branches above, and I soon fell behind. Eventually I broke through the emerald confines of the forest and found the rocky shore again. It was a low tide, and a tidal river flowed past us on its way out to the sea. Along its pebbled banks, shallow pools that never completely drained were teeming with life.

I was very careful not to lean too far over the little ocean ponds. The others were fearless, leaping over the rocks, perching precariously on the edges. I found a very stable-looking rock on the fringe of one of the largest pools and sat there cautiously, spellbound by the natural aquarium below me. The bouquets of brilliant anemones undulated ceaselessly in the invisible current, twisted shells scurried about the edges, obscuring the crabs within them, starfish stuck motionless to the rocks and each other, while one small black eel with white racing stripes wove through the bright green weeds, waiting for the sea to return. I was completely absorbed, except for one small part of my mind that wondered what Edward was doing now, and trying to imagine what he would be saying if he were here with me.

Finally, the boys were hungry, and I got up stiffly to follow them back. I tried to keep up better this time through the woods, so naturally I fell a few times. I got some shallow scrapes on my palms, and the knees of my jeans were stained green, but it could have been worse.

When we got back to First Beach, the group we’d left behind had multiplied. As we got closer we could see the shining, straight black hair and copper skin of the newcomers, teenagers from the reservation come to socialize. The food was already being passed around, and the boys hurried to claim a share while Erica introduced us as we each entered the driftwood circle. Angela and I were the last to arrive, and, as Erica said our names, I noticed a younger boy sitting on the stones near the fire glance up at me in interest. I sat down next to Angela, and Mike brought us sandwiches and an array of sodas to choose from, while a boy who looked to be the oldest of the visitors rattled off the names of the seven others with him. All I caught was that one of the girls was also named Jessica, and the boy who noticed me was named Jacob.

It was relaxing to sit with Angela; she was a restful kind of person to be around—she didn’t feel the need to fill every silence with chatter. She left me free to think undisturbed while we ate. And I was thinking about how disjointedly time seemed to flow in Forks, passing in a blur at times, with single images standing out more clearly than others. And then, at other times, every second was significant, etched in my mind. I knew exactly what caused the difference, and it disturbed me.

During lunch the clouds started to advance, slinking across the blue sky, darting in front of the sun momentarily, casting long shadows across the beach, and blackening the waves. As they finished eating, people started to drift away in twos and threes. Some walked down to the edge of the waves, trying to skip rocks across the choppy surface.

Others were gathering a second expedition to the tide pools. Mike—with Jessica shadowing him—headed up to the single shop in the nearby village. Some of the local kids went with them; others went along on the hike. By the time they all scattered, I was alone on my driftwood log, with Lauren and Tyler occupying themselves by the CD player someone had thought to bring, while Logan scowled and sulked nearby, and three teenagers from the reservation perched around the circle, including the boy named Jacob and the oldest boy who had acted as spokesperson.

A few minutes after Angela left with the hikers, Jacob sauntered over to take her place by my side. He looked to be about fifteen, or maybe a young sixteen, and had long, glossy black hair pulled back with a rubber band at the nape of his neck. His skin was beautiful, silky and russet-colored; his eyes
were dark, set deep above the high planes of his cheekbones. He still had just a hint of childish roundness left around his chin. Altogether, a very pretty face. However, I still grimaced at the first words that came out of his mouth.

“You’re Beauregard Swan, aren’t you?”

It was like the first day of school all over again.

“Beau,” I sighed, but I smiled.

“Right,” He said, like he’d already known that. “I’m Jacob Black.” He held out his hand. “You bought my dad’s truck.”

“Oh… Oh!” I felt relieved, shaking his sleek hand. “You’re Billy’s son. I probably should remember you. I’m sorry.”

“No, I’m the youngest of the family—you would remember my older sisters.”

“Rachel and Rebecca,” I suddenly recalled. Charlie and Billy thrown us together a lot during my visits, to keep us busy while they fished. We were all too shy to make much progress as friends. Of course, I’d kicked up enough tantrums to end the fishing trips by the time I was eleven.

“Rachel and Rebecca and… Jake, wasn’t it?”

He smiled. “You do remember that. No one’s called me that since my sisters left.”

“They aren’t here?” I examined the girls at the ocean’s edge, wondering if I would recognize them now.

“No.” Jacob shook his head. “Rachel got a scholarship to Washington State, and Rebecca married a Samoan surfer—she lives in Hawaii now.”

“Married. Wow.” I was stunned. The twins were only a little over a year older than I was.

“So how do you like the truck?” he asked.

“I love it. It runs great.”

“Yeah, but it’s really slow,” he laughed. “I was so relieved when Charlie bought it. My dad wouldn’t let me work on building another car when we had a perfectly good vehicle right there.”

“It’s not that slow,” I objected.

“Have you tried to go over sixty?”

“Well, no.” I admitted.

“Good. Don’t.” He grinned again.

I couldn’t help grinning back.

“It does great in a collision,” I offered in my truck’s defense.

“I don’t think a tank could take out that old monster,” He agreed with another laugh.

“So you build cars?” I asked, impressed.
“When I have free time, and parts. You wouldn’t happen where I could get my hands on a master cylinder for a 1986 Volkswagen Rabbit?” he added jokingly. He had a pleasant, husky voice.

“Sorry,” I laughed, “I haven’t seen any lately, but I’ll keep my eyes open for you.” As if I knew what that was. He was very easy to talk with.

He flashed a brilliant smile, looking at me appreciatively in a way I was learning to recognize. I wasn’t the only one who noticed.

“You know Beauregard, Jacob?” Logan asked—in what I imagined was an insolent tone—from across the fire.

“Beau and I have sort of known each other since I was born,” he laughed, smiling at me again.

“That’s really nice. Isn’t it, Logan?” Lauren narrowed her pale green eyes at Logan, who huffed. Jacob raised his eyebrows at Logan’s reaction. “Yes, isn’t it wonderful?”

His sarcasm seemed to throw Logan off, but he wasn’t done with me yet. “Beau, I was just thinking that it was too bad none of the Cullens could come out today. Didn’t you think to invite them?” His expression of concern was unconvincing.

“I… I mean…” I looked around to make sure Mike wasn’t nearby, “I did invite Edward, but he couldn’t come.” I said quietly.

“I think it’s nice that she invited Edward,” Lauren offered kindly. “No one really talks to the Cullens.”

“You’re talking about Dr. Carlisle Cullen’s family?” the tall, older boy asked. He was really closer to a man than a boy, his hair was cut short, and his voice was very deep.

“Yes, do you know them?” Lauren smiled faintly, I could tell she found him a bit intimidating. I did too.

“The Cullens don’t come here,” he said in a tone that closed the subject, ignoring her question. Tyler, trying to win back Lauren’s attention, asked her opinion of the CD he held. Logan went back to scowling and huffing.

I stared at the deep-voiced boy, taken aback, but he was looking away toward the dark forest behind us. He’d said that the Cullens didn’t come here, but his tone had implied something more—that they weren’t allowed; they were prohibited. His manner left a strange impression on me, and I tried to ignore it without success.

Jacob interrupted my meditation. “So is Forks driving you insane yet?”

“Oh, I’d say that’s an understatement.” I chuckled darkly.

He grinned sympathetically.

I was still turning over the brief comment on the Cullens and piecing it together with what I’d read from Edward’s reactions the other day. I looked at Jacob, speculating.

“What?” he asked.

“Do you want to walk down the beach with me?”
He looked at Logan, then back to me and grinned widely, “Yeah, let’s get out of here.”

As we walked north across the multihued stones toward the driftwood seawall, the clouds finally closed ranks across the sky, causing the sea to darken and the temperature to drop. I shoved my hands deep into the pockets of my jacket. I eyed the sweet-natured boy walking alongside me. Jake just had on a long-sleeved t-shirt, but he swung his arms as he walked, not bothered by the cold. The wind whipped his silky black hair into twists and knots on his back. There was something very warm and open about his face.

“Nice friends,” he commented when were far enough from the fire that the clattering of the stones beneath our feet was more than enough to drown out our voices.

“Not mine.”

He laughed, “I could tell.”

“So you’re, what, seventeen?” I asked, trying to make conversation.

“I just turned sixteen.” He confessed, flattered.

“You’re a year younger than me?”

“I’m tall for my age,” he explained.

“I’m surprised we didn’t hang out more when we were younger.” I offered, he grinned. “Do you come up to Forks much?” I asked.

“Not too much,” he admitted with a frown. “But when I get my car finished I can go up as much as I want—I just got my license.” He said proudly.

“That’s great,” I smiled, “hey can I ask you a something?”

“Sure.”

“Who was that other boy Lauren and Logan were talking to? He seemed way older than the rest of us.

“Oh, that’s Sam—he’s nineteen,” he informed me.

“What was that he was saying about the doctor’s family?” I asked casually.

“The Cullens? Oh, they’re not supposed to come onto the reservation.” He looked away, out toward James Island, as he confirmed what I’d thought I’d heard in Sam’s voice.

“Why not?”

He glanced back at me, biting his lip. “I’m not supposed to say anything about that.”

“Is it a secret?”

He pursed his lips. “Sort of.”

“I won’t tell anyone, I’m just curious.” I instinctively moved closer to him without meaning to. Something about his personality was warm and inviting. It was even magnetic, but in a different way from Edward.
He smiled at me, he seemed pleased that I had moved so close. Then he lifted on eyebrow and
leaned in even closer to me, his voice was even huskier than before.

“Do you like scary stories?” he asked ominously.

For one second, I could hear Edward’s voice clearly in my head. *Do you think I could be scary?*

“How scary are we talking here?”

“You’ll never sleep again,” he promised.

“Well, now I have to hear it.” I realized we were still standing incredibly close, but I didn’t really
mind. Something about it felt right.

Jacob smirked, then strolled to a nearby driftwood tree that had its roots sticking out like the 
attenuated legs of a huge, pale spider. He perched lightly on one of the twisted roots while I sat
beneath him on the body of the tree. He stared down at the rocks, a smile was hovering around the
edges of his full lips. I could see he was going to try to make this good.

“What do you know any of our tribe legends, about where we came from—the Quileutes, I mean?”

“Not really,” I admitted.

“Well, the legends talk about Ka’wa’iti who created the first Quileutes by transforming wolves into
humans. He taught them how to be human and become a powerful tribe.”


“Yeah,” he smiled, “The scary story isn’t actually a Quileute legend. It’s more of a folk story some of
the elders tell. Stories about the *cold ones*.” His voice dropped a little lower.

“The cold ones?” I asked, deeply intrigued at this point.

“Yes. Some of the stories I hear are old stories, going back to the first Quileutes, and some are much
more recent. If you believe the stories, my own great-grandfather knew some of them. He was the
one who made the treaty that kept them off our land.” He rolled his eyes.

“Your great-grandfather?”

“He was a tribal elder, like my father. You see, the cold ones are the natural enemies of the wolf—
well, not the wolf, really, but the wolves that turn into men, like our ancestors. You would call them
werewolves.”

“Werewolves have enemies?”

“Only one.”

I stared at him intently, realizing I was totally enthralled by him and his story.

“So you see,” Jacob continued, “the cold ones are traditionally our enemies. But this pack that came
to our territory during my great-grandfather’s time was different. They didn’t hunt the way others of
their kind did—they weren’t supposed to be dangerous to the tribe. So, my great-grandfather made a
truce with them. If they would promise to stay off our lands, we wouldn’t expose them to the pale-
faces.” He winked at me.

“If they weren’t dangerous, then why…?” I tried to understand, I hoped he couldn’t tell how
seriously I took his ghost story.

“There’s always a risk for humans to be around the cold ones, even if they’re civilized like this clan was. You never know when they might get too hungry to resist.” He deliberately worked a thick edge of menace into his tone.

“What do you mean, ‘civilized’?”

“They claimed that they didn’t hunt humans. They supposedly were somehow able to prey on animals instead.”

I tried to keep my voice casual. “So how does it fit in with the Cullens? Are they like the cold ones your great-grandfather met?”

“No.” He paused dramatically. “They are the same ones.”

He must have thought the expression on my face was fear inspired by his story. He smiled, pleased, and continued.

“There are more of them now, a new female and a new male, but the rest are the same. In my great-grandfather’s time they already knew of the leader, Carlisle. He’d been here and gone before your people had even arrived.” He was fighting a smile.

“And what are they?” I finally asked. “What are the cold ones?”

He smiled darkly.

“Blood drinkers,” he replied in a chilling voice. “Your people call them vampires.”

I stared out at the rough surf after he answered, not sure what my face was giving away.

_Do you think I could be scary?_ Edward’s voice repeated in my head.

“You have goose bumps,” Jacob laughed delightedly.

“You’re a good storyteller,” I complimented him, still staring into the waves.

“Pretty crazy stuff, though, isn’t it? No wonder my dad doesn’t want us to talk about it to anyone.”

I couldn’t control my expression enough to look at him yet. “Don’t worry, I won’t give you away.”

“I guess I just violated the treaty,” he laughed.

“I’ll take it to the grave,” I promised, and then I shivered.

“Seriously, though, don’t say anything to Charlie. He was pretty mad at my dad when he heard some of us weren’t going to the hospital since Dr. Cullen started working there.”

“I won’t say anything to Charlie, of course not.”

“So, do you think we’re a bunch of superstitious natives or what?” he asked in a playful tone, but with a hint of worry. I still hadn’t looked away from the ocean.

I turned and smiled at him as normally as I could.

“No. I think you’re very good at telling scary stories, though. I still have goose bumps, see?” I held
up my arm and pulled back my jacket sleeve to show him.

“Cool.” He smiled.

I involuntarily shivered, I wasn’t sure if it was from the cold or the story, but Jacob approached and rubbed my arms to warm me up.

“You ok?” He was still smiling.

“Yeah,” I looked up at his warm face and smiled, “Yeah I’m great.”

He grinned, that warm grin I already liked so much. His grin warmed me from the inside out.

And then the sound of the beach rocks clattering against each other warned us that someone was approaching. Our heads snapped up at the same time to see Mike and Jessica about fifty yards away, walking toward us.

“There you are, Beau,” Mike called in relief, waving his arm over his head.

“Is that your boyfriend?” Jacob asked, alerted by the jealous edge in Mike’s voice. I was surprised he asked so frankly.

“No, definitely not,” I whispered. I didn’t know if it was because we’d known each other longer, if not well, or if it was because Jake was so easygoing, but I already felt more comfortable with him than I did with any of the kids I’d be riding home with. I winked at him, carefully turning away from Mike to do so. He smiled, absolutely elated.

“So when I get my car finished…” he began.

“You should come see me in Forks. We could hang out sometime.” As I said it, I knew that I truly meant it. I really did like Jacob and I wanted to see more of him. I felt strangely confused for some reason.

Mike had reached us now, with Jessica still a few paces back. I could see his eyes appraising Jacob, narrowing slightly. He looked like a puppy when it couldn’t tell if something was a friend or a foe.

“Where have you been?” he asked, though the answer was right in front of him.

“Jacob was just telling me some local stories,” I replied. “It was really interesting.”

I smiled at Jacob warmly, and he grinned back, filling me with that warmth that radiated from his aura.

“Well,” Mike paused, carefully reassessing the situation as he watched our camaraderie. “We’re packing up—it looks like it’s going to rain soon.”

We all looked up at the glowering sky. It certainly did look like rain.

“Okay.” I stood up slowly, “I’m coming.”

“It was nice to see you again,” Jacob said, and I could tell he was taunting Mike just a bit.

“It really was. Next time Charlie comes down to see Billy, I’ll come, too.” I promised with a smile.

His grin stretched across his face. “That would be cool.”
“And thank you,” I added earnestly.

I pulled up my hood as we tramped across the rocks toward the parking lot. A few drops were beginning to fall, making black spots on the stones where they landed. When we got the Suburban the others were already loading everything into the back. I crawled into the backseat by Angela and Tyler, announcing that I’d already had my turn in the shotgun position. Angela just stared out the window at the escalating storm, and Lauren was turned around in the middle seat talking animatedly with Tyler, so I could simply lay my head back on the seat and close my eyes and try very hard not to think.
Nightmare

I told Charlie I had a lot of Homework to do, and that I’d filled up at La Push and didn’t want dinner. There was a basketball game on that he was excited about, so he wasn’t aware of anything off about my expression.

Once in my room, I locked the door. I dug through my desk until I found my old headphones, and I plugged them into my little CD player. I picked up a CD that Phil had given me for Christmas. It was one of his favorite bands, but they were a little heavy for my taste. I stuck it into place and lay down on my bed. I put on the headphones, hit Play, and turned up the volume until it hurt my ears. I closed my eyes, and then added a pillow over the top of my face.

I concentrated only on the music, trying to make out the lyrics, to unravel the complicated drum patterns. By the third time I’d listened through the CD, I knew all the words to the choruses, at least. I actually kind of liked the band after all, once I got past the initial noise. I’d have to thank Phil again.

And it worked. The eardrum-shattering beats made it impossible for me to think—which was the whole point. I listened to the CD again and again, until I was singing along with the songs, until, finally, I fell asleep.

I opened my eyes to a familiar place. Though part of my mind seemed to know I was dreaming, most of me was just present in the green light of the forest. I could hear the waves crashing against the rocks somewhere nearby, and I knew that if I found the ocean, I’d be able to see the sun. I was trying to follow the sound, but then Jacob Black was there, tugging on my and, pulling me back toward the blackest part of the forest. “Jacob? What’s wrong?” I asked. His face was frightened as he yanked with all his strength against my resistance; I didn’t want to go into the dark.

“Run, Beau, you have to run!” he whispered, terrified.

“This way, Beau!” I recognized Mike’s voice calling out of the gloomy heart of the trees, but I couldn’t see him.

“Please, Beau, please!” Jessica’s voice echoed from somewhere near Mike’s. “Why?” I asked, still pulling against Jacob’s grasp, desperate now to find the sun as more voices of my friends, and even Charlie and my mom began to echo from the shadows.

But suddenly, Jacob let go of my hand and yelped, suddenly shaking, falling to the dim forest floor. He twitched on the ground as I watched in horror. The voices grew louder.

“Jacob!” I screamed. But he was gone. In his place was a large red-brown wolf with black eyes. The wolf faced away from me, pointing toward the shore, the hair on the back of his shoulders bristling, low growls issuing from between his exposed fangs. “Beau, run!” several of the voices cried out from behind me. They kept saying it over and over, growing louder and louder till it was deafening. But I didn’t turn. I was watching a light coming toward me from the beach.

Suddenly the voices all stopped.

Edward stepped out from the trees, his skin faintly glowing, his eyes black and dangerous. He helped up one hand and beckoned me to come with him. The wolf growled at my feet.

I took a hesitant step forward, toward Edward. He smiled then, and his teeth were sharp, pointed.

“Trust me,” he purred.
I took another hesitant step.

The wolf launched himself across the space between me and the vampire, fangs aimed at the jugular.

“No!” I screamed wrenching upright out of my bed.

My sudden movement caused the headphones to pull the CD player off the bedside table, and it clattered to the wooden floor.

My light was still on, and I was sitting fully dressed on the bed, with my shoes on. I glanced, disoriented, at the clock on my dresser. It was five-thirty in the morning. I groaned, fell back, and rolled over onto my face, kicking off my boots. I was too uncomfortable to get anywhere near sleep, though. I rolled back over and unbuttoned my jeans, yanking them off awkwardly as I tried to say horizontal. I pulled off my shirt that still smelled of sea-salt and the driftwood fire and tossed it towards the closet. I pulled the pillow back over my eyes.

It was all no use, of course. My subconscious had dredged up exactly the images I’d been trying so desperately avoid. I was going to have to face them now.

I sat up, and my head spun for a minute. *First things first*, I thought to myself, happy to put it off as long as possible. I headed toward the bathroom.

The shower didn’t last nearly as long as I hoped it would. I wrapped a towel around my waist and crossed back to my room. I couldn’t tell if Charlie was still asleep, or if he had already left. I went to look out my window, and the cruiser was gone. Fishing again, probably.

I dressed slowly in my most comfy sweats and then made my bed—something I never usually did. I couldn’t put it off any longer. I went to my desk and switched on the old computer.

I hated using the Internet here. My modem was sadly outdated, my free service substandard; just dialing up took so long that I decided to go get myself a bowl of cereal while I waited.

I ate slowly, chewing each bite with care. When I was done, I washed the bowl and spoon, dried them, and put them away. My feet dragged as I climbed the stairs. I went to my CD player first, picking it up off the floor and placing it carefully in the center of the table. I pulled out the headphones, and put them away in the desk drawer. Then I turned the same CD on, turning it down to the level of background noise.

With another sigh, I turned to my computer, which was finally ready. I opened my favorite search engine and then typed in one word.

*Vampire.*

It took an infuriatingly long time, of course. When the results came up, there was a lot to sift through—everything from movies and TV shows to role-playing games, underground metal, and gothic cosmetic companies.

Then I found a promising site—Vampires A-Z. I waited impatiently for it to load, quickly clicking closed each ad that flashed across the screen. Finally the screen was finished—simple white background with black text, academic-looking. Two quotes greeted me on the homepage:

*Throughout the vast shadowy world of ghosts and demons there is no figure so terrible, no figure so dreaded and abhorred, yet dight with such fearful fascination, as the vampire, who is neither ghost*
nor demon, but yet who partakes the dark natures and possesses the mysterious and terrible qualities of both.—Rev. Montague Summers

If there is in this world a well-attested account, it is that of the vampires. Nothing is lacking: official reports, affidavits of well-known people, of surgeons, of priests, of magistrates; the judicial proof is most complete. And with all that, who is there who believes in vampires?—Rousseau

The rest of the site was an alphabetized listing of all the different myths of vampires held throughout the world. The first I clicked on, the Danag, was a Filipino vampire supposedly responsible for planting taro on the islands long ago. The myth continued that the Danag worked with humans for many years, but the partnership ended one day when a woman cut her finger and a Danag sucked her wound, enjoying the taste so much that it drained her body completely of blood.

I read carefully through the descriptions, looking for anything that sounded familiar, let alone plausible. It seemed that most vampire myths centered around beautiful women as demons and children as victims; they also seemed like constructs to explain away the high mortality rates for young children, and to give men an excuse for infidelity. Many of the stories involved bodiless spirits and warnings against improper burials. There wasn’t much that sounded like the movies I’d seen, and only a very few, like the Hebrew Estrie and the Polish Upier, who were even preoccupied with drinking blood.

Only three entries really caught my attention: The Romanian Varacolaci, a powerful undead being who could appear as a beautiful pale-skinned human, The Slovak Nelapsi, a creature so strong and fast it could massacre an entire village in the single hour after midnight, and one other, the Stregoni benefici.

About this last there was only one brief sentence.

**Stregoni benefici:** An Italian vampire, said to be on the side of goodness, and a mortal enemy of all evil vampires.

It was a relief, that one small entry, the one myth among hundreds that claimed the existence of good vampires.

Overall though, there was little that coincided with Jacob’s stories or my own observation. I’d made a little catalogue in my mind as I’d read and carefully compared it with each myth. Speed, strength, beauty, pale skin, eyes that shift color; and then Jacob’s criteria: blood drinkers, enemies of the werewolf, cold-skinned, and immortal. There were very few myths that matched even one factor.

And then another problem, one that I’d remembered from the scary movies that I’d seen and was backed up by today’s reading—vampires couldn’t come out in the daytime, the sun would burn them to a cinder. They slept in coffins all day and came out only at night.

Aggravated, I snapped off the computer’s main power switch, not waiting for things to shut down properly. Through my frustrated, I felt overwhelming embarrassment. It was all so ridiculous. I was sitting in my room, researching vampires. What was wrong with me? I decided that most of the blame belonged to the town of Forks for making me go crazy like this.

I had to get out of the house, but there was nowhere I wanted to go that didn’t involve a three day-
drive. I changed into a pair of jeans and pulled on my boots anyway, unclear where I was headed, and went downstairs. I shrugged into my raincoat without checking the weather and headed out the door.

It was overcast, but not raining yet. I ignored my truck and started east on foot, angling across the yard toward the ever-encroaching forest. It didn’t take long till I was deep enough for the house and the road to be invisible, for the only sound to be the squish of the damp earth under my feet and the sudden cries of the jays.

There was a thin ribbon of a trail that led through the forest here, or I wouldn’t risk wandering on my own like this. My sense of direction was hopeless; I could get lost in much less helpful surroundings. The trail wound deeper and deeper into the forest, mostly east as far as I could tell. It snaked around the Sitka spruces and the hemlocks, the yews and the maples. I only had a vague idea of the names of the trees around me thanks to Charlie pointing them out to me from the cruiser in the earlier days. There were many I didn’t know, and I others I couldn’t be sure about due to the thick blankets of green moss.

I followed the trail as long as my frustration at myself pushed me forward. As that started to ebb, I slowed. A few drops of moisture trickled down from the canopy above me, but I couldn’t be certain if it was beginning to rain or if it was simply pools left over from yesterday, held high in the leaves above me, slowly dripping their way back to the earth. A recently fallen tree—I knew it was recent because it wasn’t entirely carpeted in moss—rested against the trunk of one of her sisters, creating a sheltered little bench just a few safe feet off the trail. I stepped over the ferns and sat carefully, making sure my jacket was between the damp seat and my clothes wherever they touched, and leaned my hooded head back against the living tree.

This was the wrong place to come. I should have known, but where else was there to go? The forest was deep green and far too much like the scene in last night’s dream to allow for any peace of mind. No that there was no longer the sound of my soggy footsteps, the silence was piercing. The birds were quiet, too, the drops increasing in frequency so it must be raining above. The ferns stood higher than my head, now that I was seated, and I knew someone could walk by on the patch, three feet away, and not see me.

Here in the trees it was much easier to believe the absurdities that embarrassed me indoors. Nothing had changed in this forest for thousands of years, and all the myths and legends of a hundred different lands seemed much more likely in this green haze than they had in my clear-cut bedroom. I unwillingly forced myself to focus on the two most vital questions I had to answer.

First, I had to decide if it was possible that what Jacob had said about the Cullens could be true.

Immediately my mind responded with a resounding negative. It was silly and morbid to entertain such ridiculous notions. But what, then? I asked myself. There was no rational explanation for how I was alive right now. I listed again in my head the things I’d observed myself: the impossible speed and strength, the eye color shifting from black to gold and back again, the inhuman beauty, the pale, icy skin. And more—small things that registered slowly—how they never seemed to eat, the disturbing grace with which they moved. And the way he sometimes spoke, with unfamiliar cadences an phrases that better fit the style of a turn-of-the-century novel than that of a twenty-first century classroom. He had skipped class the day we’d done blood typing. He hadn’t said no to the beach trip till he heard where we were going. He seemed to know what everyone around him was thinking… except me. He had told me he was the villain, dangerous….

Do you think I could be scary?

Could the Cullens be vampires?
Well, they were *something*. Something outside the possibility of rational justification was taking place in front of my eyes. Whether it be Jacob’s *cold ones* or my own superhero theory, Edward Cullen was not…human. He was something more. So then—maybe. That would have to be my answer for now. And then the most important question of all. What was I going to do if it was true?

*If* Edward was a vampire—I could hardly make myself think the words—then what should I do? Involving someone else was definitely out. I couldn’t even believe myself; anyone I told would have me committed.

Only two options seemed practical. The first was to take his advice: to be smart, to avoid him as much as possible. To cancel our plans, to go back to ignoring him as far as I was able. To pretend there was an impenetrably thick glass wall between us in the one class where we were forced together. To tell him to leave me alone—and mean it this time. I felt a sudden twinge of sadness as I considered that option. An immediate sense of loss for something that, if I was being truthful, I didn’t really even have. My mind rejected that, quickly skipping on to the next option.

I could do nothing different. After all, if he was something… sinister, he’d done nothing to hurt me so far. In fact, I would be a dent in Tyler’s fender if he hadn’t acted so quickly. So quickly, I argued with myself, that it might have been sheer reflexes. But if it was a reflex to save lives, how bad could he be? I retorted. Then again, Edward had skipped class when there was blood typing. If he was a blood drinker like Jacob had said then maybe he saved me to keep my blood from spilling out in the parking lot, but then why did he talk to me? Sit with me at lunch? My head spun around in answerless circles.

My mind flitted back to my dream last night. The dark Edward in my dream last night was a reflection only of my fear of the word Jacob had spoken, and not Edward himself. Even so, when I’d screamed out in terror at the werewolf’s lunge, it wasn’t fear for Edward that brought the cry of “no” to my lips. It was the fear for the wolf. For Jacob. As Edward stood there, beckoning me forward with his fangs bared I feared for Jacob. I feared for the voices in the woods.

Do you think I could be scary?

I knew Edward was dangerous. On some level, I knew it. It was the thought I had put out of my head, the reality I didn’t want to face but I couldn’t ignore it. But I also couldn’t ignore that despite the desperate pleas of the voices of those I loved, despite my fear for the sweet, warm boy from the beach, I still had wanted to go with Edward. And I knew in that I had my answer. I didn’t know if there ever was a choice, really. I was already in too deep. Now that I knew—if I knew—I could do nothing about my frightening secret. Because when I thought of him, of his voice, his hypnotic eyes, the electric force of his personality, I wanted nothing more than to be with him right now. Even if… but I couldn’t think it. Not here, alone in the darkening forest. Not while the rain made it dim as twilight under the canopy and pattered like footsteps across the matted earthen floor. I shivered and rose quickly from my place of concealment, worried that somehow the path would have disappeared with the rain.

But it was there, safe and clear, winding its way out of the dripping green maze. I followed it hastily, my hood pulled close around my face, becoming surprised, as I nearly ran through the trees, at how far I had come. I started to wonder if I was heading out at all, or following the path farther into the confines of the forest. Before I could get too panicky, though, I began to glimpse some open spaces through the webbed branches. And then I could hear a car passing on the street, and I was free. Charlie’s lawn stretched out in front of me, the house beckoning me, promising me warmth and dry clothes.
It was noon when I got back inside. I went upstairs and got dressed for the day, dry jeans and a comfy t-shirt, since I was staying indoors. It didn’t take too much to concentrate on my task for the day, a paper on *Macbeth* that was due Wednesday. I settled into outlining a rough draft contentedly, more serene than I’d felt since...well, since Thursday afternoon, if I was being honest.

That had always been my way, though. Making decisions was the painful part for me, the part I agonized over. But once the decision was made, I simply followed through—usually with relief that the choice was made. Sometimes the relief was tainted by despair, like decision to come to Forks. But it was still better than wrestling with the alternatives. This decision was ridiculously easy to live with. Dangerously easy. For the briefest moment, I considered that. Why was it so easy? Why couldn’t I make the decision that I innately knew was probably better for me? The decision to choose to stay away from Edward and choose someone else. Someone like Mike, sweet, confused Mike. Or someone like Jake; warm and kind. I sighed, changing my mind seemed like a choice I no longer had. I put it all out of my mind and focused on other things.

And so the day was quiet, productive—I finished my paper before eight. Charlie came home with a large catch, and I made a mental note to pick up a book of recipes for fish while I was in Seattle next week. The chills that flashed up my spine whenever I thought of that trip were no different than the ones I’d felt before I’d taken my walk with Jacob. They should be different, I thought. I should be afraid. I knew I should be, but I couldn’t feel the right kind of fear.

I slept dreamlessly that night exhausted from beginning my day so early, and sleeping so poorly the night before. I woke, for the second time since arriving in Forks, to the bright yellow light of a sunny day. I skipped to the window, stunned to see that there was hardly a cloud in the sky, and those there were just fleecy little white puffs that couldn’t possibly be carrying any rain. I opened the window—surprised when it opened silently, without sticking, not having opened it in who knows how many years—and sucked in the relatively dry air. It was nearly warm and hardly winter at all. My blood was electric in my veins.

Charlie was finishing breakfast when I came downstairs, and he picked up on my mood immediately.

“Nice day out,” he commented.

“Yeah,” I agreed with a grin.

He smiled back, his brown eyes crinkling around the edges. When Charlie smiled, it was easier to see why he and my mother had jumped too quickly into an early marriage. Most of the young romantic he’d been in those days faded before I’d known him, as the curly brown hair—the same color, if not the same texture, as mine—had slowly grayed around his temples. But when he smiled I could see a little of the man who had run away with Renée when she was just two years older than I was now.

I ate breakfast cheerily, watching the dust motes stirring in the sunlight that streamed in the back window. Charlie called out a goodbye, and I heard the cruiser pull away from the house. I hesitated on my way out the door, hand on my rain jacket. It would be tempting fate to leave it home. With a sigh, I folded it over my arm and stepped out into the brightest light I’d seen in months.

By dint of much elbow grease, I was able to get both windows in the truck almost completely rolled down. I was one of the first ones to school; I hadn’t even checked the clock in my hurry to get outside. I parked and headed toward the seldom-used picnic benches on the south side of the cafeteria. The benches were still a little damp, so I sat on my jacket, glad to have a use for it. My homework was done—the product of my slow social life—but there were a few Trig problems I wasn’t sure I had right. I took out my book industriously, but halfway through rechecking the first problem I was daydreaming, watching the sunlight play on the red-barked trees. I sketched
inattentively along the margins of my homework. After a few minutes, I suddenly realized I’d drawn five pairs of dark eyes staring out of the page at me. I scrubbed them out with the eraser.

“Beau!” I heard someone call, and it sounded like Mike. I looked around to realize that the school had become populated while I’d been sitting there, absentminded. Everyone was in t-shirts, some even in shorts thought the temperature couldn’t be over sixty. Mike was coming toward me in khaki shorts and a striped Rugby shirt, waving. “Hey, Mike,” I called, waving back, cheerfully.

He came to sit by me, his perfectly flat-ironed hair shining golden in the light, his grin stretching across his face. He was so delighted to see me, I couldn’t help but feel gratified.

“I never noticed before—your hair has red in it,” He commented, catching one of the short strands between two fingers.

“Only in the sun.”

I became just a little uncomfortable when he ran his hands through my hair to smooth it back into place.

“Great day isn’t it?”

“My kind of day,” I agreed.

“What did you do yesterday?” His tone was just a bit too proprietary.

“I mostly worked on my essay.” I didn’t add that I was finished with it—no need to sound smug.

He hit his forehead on the heel of his hand. “Oh yeah—that’s due Thursday, right?”

“Um, Wednesday, I think.”

“Wednesday?” He frowned. “That’s not good… What are you writing yours on?” “Whether Shakespeare’s treatment of the female characters is misogynistic.” He stared at me like I’d just spoken pig Latin.

“I guess I’ll just have to work on that tonight,” he said, deflated. “I was going to ask if you wanted to go out.”

“Oh.” I was taken off guard. Why couldn’t I ever have a pleasant conversation with Mike anymore without it getting awkward?

“Well, we could go get some dinner or something…and I could work on it later.” He smiled at me hopefully.

“Mike…” I hated being put on the spot, and I felt a conversation approaching that I had been carefully avoiding for a long time. “I don’t… Maybe that’s not the best idea.” His face fell. “Why?” he asked, his eyes guarded. My thoughts flickered to Edward, wondering if that’s where his thoughts were as well.

“I think…Well, here’s the thing…” I felt like he didn’t understand me, I didn’t quite understand myself. I sighed. “Mike, do you like Jessica?”

He was bewildered, obviously not thinking in that direction at all. “Jessica?” “Yes, Jessica.” I repeated, “Do you like her?”

“Well…” He thought about it long and hard, “Yeah. I guess I do.” He said it almost guiltily but I
sensed he genuinely meant it.

“Mike,” I said softly before he worked himself up too much, “Jessica really likes you.” I said slowly and emphatically, “And she’s one of my best friends and I don’t want to hurt her feelings.”

His face started to turn red, “But—“

“And I think, Mike,” I interrupted him, “that when you’re asking to hang out with me it’s in a more-than-friends way.”

He was bright red now, but he remained silent.

“So,” I continued, “I think it’d be best if we didn’t get dinner. Ok?”

“Oh,” he exhaled—clearly blindsided by the conversation. I decided it was a good time for me to leave.

“It’s time for class, and I can’t be late again.” I gathered my books up and stuffed them in my bag. He didn’t move

“Hey…” I gently patted his shoulder, “You coming?”

He looked up at me; his face wasn’t as red now. He slowly stood and we walked in silence to building three. His expression was distracted. I hoped whatever thoughts he was immersed in were leading him in the right direction. I also hoped I hadn’t hurt his feelings or discouraged him from being honest with himself. Maybe in California he would have had a better chance and been more encouraged to explore his feelings, but in a small town like Forks I worried he’d never really come to terms with it all.

Before we parted, he stopped and turned to me.

“Thanks, Beau.” He was sort of smiling, so that was encouraging at least.

When I saw Jessica in Trig, she was bubbling with enthusiasm. She, Angela, and Lauren were going to Port Angeles that night to go dress shopping for the dance, and she wanted me to come, too. I was indecisive. It would be nice to get out of town with some friends, but I wasn’t that well-versed in fashion—contrary to Jessica’s apparent belief. It was sweet, though, that she wanted me to come. My head was still hazy, but the sunlight had put me in a pleasant mood, so I gave her a maybe, telling her I’d have to check with Charlie first.

She talked of nothing but the dance on the way to Spanish continuing as if without interruption when class finally ended, five minutes late, and we were on our way to lunch. I was far too lost in my own frenzy of anticipation to notice much of what she said. I was painfully eager to see not just him but all the Cullens—to compare them with the new suspicions that plagued my mind. As I crossed the threshold of the cafeteria, I felt a tingle of fear slither down my spine and settle in my stomach. Would they be able to know what I was thinking? And then a different feeling jolted through me—would Edward be waiting to sit with me again?

As was my routine, I glanced first toward the Cullens’ table. A shiver of panic trembled in my stomach as I realized it was empty. With dwindling hope, my eyes scoured the rest of the cafeteria, hoping to find him alone, waiting for me. The place was nearly filled—Spanish had made us late—but there was no sign of Edward of any of his family. I felt despondent.

I shuffled along behind Jessica, not able to listen anymore.
We were late enough that everyone was already at our table. I avoided the empty chair next to Mike in favor of one by Angela. I noticed Mike held the chair out politely for Jessica, and that her face lit up in response. He shot a look toward me and smiled. Looks like things worked out with Mike after all; I felt relieved.

Angela asked a few quiet questions about the *Macbeth* paper, which I answered as naturally as I could while still grappling with the encroaching sadness. She, too, invited me to go with them tonight, and I agreed now, trying to distract myself.

I'd been holding on to a last shred of hope when I entered Biology, but when I saw his empty seat I felt a new wave of disappointment. I knew I shouldn't let his absence bother me so much, and a new wave of emotion hit me as I wrestled with that new thought.

The rest of the day passed slowly, dismally. In Gym, we had a lecture on the rules of badminton, the next torture they had lined up for me. But at least it meant I got to sit and listen instead of stumbling around on the court. The best part was the coach didn’t finish, so I got another day off tomorrow. Never mind that the day after they would arm me with a racket before unleashing me on the rest of the class.

I was glad to leave campus, so I would be free to mope a little bit before I went out tonight with Jessica and company. But right after I walked in the door of Charlie’s house, Jessica called to cancel our plans. I was genuinely happy that Mike had asked her out to dinner—I was relieved that he finally seemed to be catching on—but I was somewhat disappointed that I wouldn’t have the company to distract me. She rescheduled our shopping trip for tomorrow night.

Which left me with little else in the way of distractions. I had fish marinating for dinner, with a salad and bread left over from the night before, so there was nothing to do there. I spent a focused half our on homework, but then I was through with that, too. I checked my e-mail, reading the backlog of letters from my mother, getting more and more panicked as they progressed to the present. I sighed and typed up a response.

*Mom, I'm sorry. I've been out a lot the past few days. I went to the beach with some friends, and I had to write a paper.*

I sighed, and struggled with something else to say. It wasn’t fair to punish my mom with a short, rude email just because I was upset.

*It's sunny outside today—I know, I'm shocked too—so I'm going to go outside and soak up as much vitamin D as I can. Maybe today's the day I finally get a tan. I miss you a lot, tell Phil I said hi.*

*I love you,*

*Beau*

I decided to kill an hour with non-school-related reading. I had a small collection of books that went with me to Forks, the shabbiest volume being a compilation of the works of Jane Austen. I selected that one and headed to the backyard, grabbing a ragged old quilt from the linen cupboard at
the top of the stairs on my way down.

Outside in the small, square yard, I folded the quilt in half and laid it out of the reach of the trees’ shadows on the thick lawn that would always be slightly wet, no matter how long the sun shone. I lay on my stomach, crossing my ankles in the air, flipping through the different novels in the book, trying to decide which would occupy my mind the most thoroughly. My favorites were *Pride and Prejudice* and *Sense and Sensibility*. I’d read the first most recently, so I started *Sense and Sensibility*, only to remember after I began chapter three that the hero of the story happened to be named Edward. Frustrated, I turned to *Mansfield Park*, but the hero of that piece was named Edmund, and that was just too close. Weren’t there any other names available in the late eighteenth century? I closed the book and rolled over onto my back with a sigh. I pushed my sleeves up as high as they would go, and closed my eyes. I thought of nothing but the warmth on my skin and the light, pleasant breeze. I focused on the heat that touched my eyelids, my cheekbones, my nose, my lips, my forearms, my neck, soaked through my light shirt….

The next thing I was conscious of was the sound of Charlie’s cruiser turning onto the bricks of the driveway. I sat up in surprise, realizing the light was gone, behind the trees, and I had fallen asleep. I looked around, muddled, with the sudden feeling that I wasn’t alone.

“Charlie?” I asked. But I could hear his door slamming in front of the house. I jumped up, feeling edgy, gathering the now-damp quilt and my book. I ran inside to get some oil heating on the stove, realizing that dinner would be late. Charlie was hanging up his gun belt and stepping out of his boots when I came in.

“Sorry, Dad, dinner’s not ready yet—I fell asleep outside.” I stifled a yawn.

“Don’t worry about it,” he said. “I wanted to catch the score on the game, anyway.”

I watched TV with Charlie after dinner, for something to do. There wasn’t anything on I wanted to watch, so I tried my hardest to pay attention to the baseball game. I asked a few questions here and there, trying to understand better, and Charlie would respond quickly. I thought maybe I was annoying him, but he seemed happy to be doing something together. Despite my lack of interest in the game, I was happy too.

“Dad,” I said during a commercial, “Jessica and Angela are going to look at dresses for the dance tomorrow night in Port Angeles, and they wanted me to help them choose…do you mind if I go with them?”

“Jessica Stanley?” He asked, confused.

“And Angela Weber.”

He was definitely confused, “Are you going to the dance with one of them? I thought you said you weren’t going.”

“I’m not going, Dad. I’m just helping them find dresses—you know, giving my opinion and stuff.”

“Well, okay.” He chuckled, “I don’t know how you do it. Your mom used to drive me crazy when she’d make me go shopping with her.”

“I manage okay.” I smiled.

“It’s a school night, though.” He added. “We’ll leave right after school, so we can get back early. You’ll be okay for dinner, right?”

“Beau, I fed myself for seventeen years before you got here,” he reminded me. “I don’t know how you survived.” I said, sarcastically.
He grinned, keeping his eyes on the TV.

I laughed, “I’ll leave some things for cold-cut sandwiches in the fridge, ok? Right on top.”

It was sunny again in the morning. I awakened with renewed hope that I stubbornly tried to suppress. I dressed for the warmer weather in a dark blue, deep V-neck shirt—something I could wear in the dead of winter in Pheonix.

I had planned my arrival at school so that I barely had time to make it to class. With a tinge of disappointment, I circled the full lot looking for a space, while also searching for the silver Volvo that was clearly not there. I parked in the last row and hurried to English, arriving breathless, but subdued, before the final bell.

It was the same as yesterday—I just couldn’t keep the little sprouts of hope from budding in my mind, only to have them squashed painfully as I searched the lunchroom in vain and sat at my empty Biology table.

The Port Angeles plan was back on again for tonight. Lauren couldn’t make it but told us to have fun and let her know if we saw anything she’d like. I was anxious to get out of town so I could stop glancing over my shoulder, hoping to see him appearing out of the blue the way he always did. I vowed to myself that I would be in a good mood tonight, and thankfully Angela and Jessica’s excitement was infectious. Maybe I could do some clothes shopping as well. I didn’t want to think that I might be shopping alone in Seattle this weekend, no longer interested in the earlier arrangement. Surely he wouldn’t cancel on me without at least telling me.

After school, Jessica followed me home in her old white Mercury so that I could ditch my books and truck. I quickly brushed my teeth and fixed my hair when I was inside, feeling a slight lift of excitement as I contemplated getting out of Forks. I changed into a nicer, better fitting pair of jeans, grabbed my wallet, and left a note for Charlie on the table, explaining again where to find dinner. I ran out to join Jessica and she wolf-whistled at me.

“Yeow, looking good, Swan.” She winked.

I laughed, “Control yourself, Stanley.”

“You ready?” She snickered.

“Let’s get out of here.”

We went to Angela’s house next, and she was waiting for us. Jessica whooped and hollered about girls’ night out as Angela and I laughed. My excitement increased exponentially as we actually drove out of the town limits.
Port Angeles

Jess drove faster than the Chief, so we made it to Port Angeles by four. I couldn’t remember the last time I’d had a night out with friends—a girls’ night out, as Jessica had proclaimed—and it was invigorating. We listened to whiny rock songs while Jessica jabbered on about the boys we hung out with. Jessica’s dinner with Mike had gone very well, and she was hoping that by Saturday night they would have progressed to the first-kiss stage. I smiled to myself, pleased. Angela was passively happy to be going to the dance, but not really interested in Conner, who she was going with. Jess tried to get her to confess who her type was, but I interrupted with a question about dresses for a bit, to spare her. Angela threw a grateful glance my way.

Port Angeles was a beautiful little tourist trap, much more polished and quaint than Forks. But Jessica and Angela knew it well, so they didn’t plan to waste time on the picturesque boardwalk by the bay. Jess drove straight to the one big department store in town, which was a few streets in from the bay area’s visitor-friendly face.

The dance was billed as semiformal, and we weren’t exactly sure what that meant. Both Jessica and Angela seemed surprised and almost disbelieving when I told them I’d never been to a dance in Phoenix.

“You really never went with a boyfriend or something?” Jess asked dubiously as we walked through the front doors of the store.

“Really,” I tried to convince her, not wanting to confess my dancing problems in addition to my lackluster love life. “I’ve never had a boyfriend or anything close. I didn’t go out much.”

“Why not?” Jessica demanded.

“No one asked me,” I answered honestly.

“I find that hard to believe—you’re so cute!”

“I swear, no one did.” I sighed, blushing softly.

Jessica interrupted my self-appraisal. “People ask you out here,” she reminded me, “and you tell them no.”

We were in the juniors’ section now, scanning the racks for dress-up clothes.

“Well, except for Tyler,” Angela amended quietly.

“Excuse me?” I gasped. “What did you say?”

“Tyler told everyone he’s taking you to prom.” Jessica informed me, concealing a smirk.

“He said what?” I sounded like I was choking.

“I told you it wasn’t true,” Angela whispered to Jessica.

I was silent, still lost in shock that was quickly turning to irritation. Tyler had only asked me because he felt bad about the accident. He liked girls. We found the dress racks, and now we had work to do.

“That’s why Logan doesn’t like you,” Jessica giggled while we pawed through the clothes. “He knows Lauren likes Tyler and he thinks you’re trying to steal him from her.”
“And he totally has a crush on Tyler, too.” Angela added, smiling. Jessica made of show of shushing her like it was some big secret, but she was laughing.

I sighed. “Do you think that if I ran Tyler over with my truck he would stop feeling guilty about the accident? That he might give up on making amends and call it even?”

“Maybe,” Jess snickered. “If that’s why he’s doing this.”

I glared at her and gave her a playful shove, she only snickered harder.

The dress selection wasn’t large, but both of them found a few things to try on. I sat on a low chair just inside the dressing room, by the three-way mirror.

Jess was torn between two—one a long, strapless, basic black number, the other a knee-length electric blue with spaghetti straps. I encouraged her to go with the blue; why not play up the eyes?

“And the girls.” She shimmied at me, before darting back into the dressing room.

Angela chose a pale pink dress that draped around her tall frame nicely and brought out the honey tints in her light brown hair. I complimented them both generously and helped by returning the rejects to their racks. The whole process was much shorter and easier than similar trips I’d taken with my mom at home. I guess there was something to be said for limited choices.

We headed over to shoes and accessories. While they tried things on I watched and critiqued, only vaguely considering heading over to the men’s section for some new clothes for myself. A thought I had managed to keep out of my head all night slowly crept into the forefront of my mind.

“Angela?” I began, hesitant, while she was trying on a pair of pink strappy heels—she was overjoyed to have a date tall enough that she could wear high heels at all. Jessica had drifted over to the jewelry counter and we were alone.

“Yes?” She held her leg out, twisting her ankle to get a better view of the shoe.

I chickened out. “I like those.”

“I think I’ll get them—though they’ll never match anything but the one dress,” she mused.

“Oh, go ahead—they’re on sale,” I encouraged. She smiled, putting the lid back on a box that contained more practical-looking off-white shoes.

I tried again. “Um, Angela…” She looked up curiously.

“Is it normal for the…Cullens”—I kept my eyes on the shoes—“to be out of school a lot?” I failed miserably in my attempt to sound nonchalant.

“Yes, when the weather is good they go backpacking all the time—even the doctor. They’re all real outdoorsy,” she told me quietly, examining her shoes, too. She didn’t ask one question, let alone the hundreds that Jessica would have unleashed. I was beginning to really like Angela.

“Oh.” I let the subject drop as Jessica returned to show us the rhinestone jewelry she’d found to match her silver shoes.

We planned to go to dinner at a little Italian restaurant on the boardwalk, but the dress shopping hadn’t taken as long as we’d expected. Jess and Angela were going to take their dresses back to the car and then walk down to the bay. I told them I would meet them at the restaurant in an hour—I
wanted to look for a bookstore. They were both willing to come with me, but I encouraged them to go have fun—they didn’t know how preoccupied I could get when surrounded by books; it was something I preferred to do alone. They walked off to the car chattering happily, and I headed in the direction Jess pointed out.

I had no trouble finding the bookstore, but it wasn’t what I was looking for. The windows were full of crystals, dream-catchers, and books about spiritual healing. I didn’t even go inside. Through the glass I could see a fifty-year-old woman with long, gray hair worn straight down her back, clad in a dress right out of the sixties, smiling welcomingly behind the counter. I decided that I would try my luck in finding a more conventional book store.

I meandered through the streets, which were filling up with end-of-the-workday traffic, and hoped I was headed toward downtown. I wasn’t paying as much attention as I should to where I was going; I was wrestling with my thoughts. I was trying hard not to think about him, and what Angela had said… and more than anything trying to beat down my hopes for Saturday, fearing disappointment, when I looked up to see someone’s silver Volvo parked along the street and it all hit me. Stupid, unreliable vampire, I thought to myself. I chuckled darkly, even then.

I kept walking along in a southerly direction, toward some glass-fronted shops that looked promising. But when I got to them, they were just a repair shop and a vacant space. I still had too much time to go looking for Jess and Angela yet, and I needed to lift my spirits before I met back up with them. I ran my fingers through my hair a couple of times and took some deep breaths before I continued around the corner.

I started to realize, as I crossed another road, that I was going the wrong direction. The little foot traffic I had seen was going north, and it looked like the buildings were mostly warehouses. I decided to turn east at the next corner, and then loop around after a few blocks and try my luck on a different street on my way back to the boardwalk.

A group of four men turned around the corner I was heading for, dressed too casually to be heading home from the office, but they were too grimy to be tourists. A couple of them were carrying beer cans. As they approached me, I realized they weren’t too many years older than I was. They were joking loudly among themselves, laughing raucously and punching each other’s arms. I scooted as far to the inside of the sidewalk as I could to give them room, walking swiftly, looking past them to the corner.

“Hey, there!” one of them called as they passed, and he had to be talking to me since no one else was around. I glanced up automatically. Two of them had paused, and the other two were slowing. The closest, a heavyset, dark-haired man in his early twenties, seemed to be the one who had spoken. He was wearing a flannel shirt open over a dirty t-shirt, cut-off jeans, and sandals. He reeked of alcohol. He took a step toward me.

“Hello,” I mumbled, a knee-jerk reaction. Then I quickly looked away and walked faster around toward the corner. I could hear them laughing at full volume behind me.

“Hey, wait!” one of them called after me again, but I kept my head down and rounded the corner with a sigh of relief. I could still hear them chortling behind me.

I found myself on a sidewalk leading past the backs of several somber-colored warehouses, each with large bay doors for unloading trucks, padlocked for the night. The south side of the street had no sidewalk, only a chain-link fence topped with barbed wire protecting some kind of engine parts storage yard. I’d wandered far past the part of Port Angeles that I, as a guest, was intended to see. It was getting dark, I realized, the clouds finally returning, piling up on the western horizon, creating an early sunset. The eastern sky was still clear, but graying, shot through with streaks of pink and
orange. I’d left my jacket in the car, and a sudden shiver made me cross my arms tightly across my chest. A single van passed me, and then the road was empty.

The sky suddenly darkened further, and, as I looked over my shoulder to glare at the offending cloud, I realized with a shock that two men were walking quietly twenty feet behind me.

They were from the same group I’d passed at the corner, though neither was the stocky one who’d spoken to me. I turned my head forward at once, quickening my pace. A chill that had nothing to do with the weather made me shiver again. I quickly moved my wallet from my back pocket to my front pocket. I didn’t have much money with me, just a twenty and some ones, and I thought about “accidentally” dropping my wallet and walking away. A small, frightened voice in the back of my mind warned me that I needed to move faster.

I listened intently to their quiet footsteps, which were much too quiet when compared to the boisterous noise they’d been making earlier, and it didn’t sound like they were speeding up, or getting any closer to me. Breathe, I had to remind myself. You don’t know they’re following you. I continued to walk as quickly as I could without actually running, focusing on the right-hand turn that was only a few yards away from me now. I could hear them, staying as far back as they’d been before. A blue car turned onto the street from the south and drove quickly past me. I thought of jumping out in front of it, but I hesitated, inhibited, unsure that I was really being pursued, and then it was too late.

I reached the corner, but a swift glance revealed that it was only a blind drive to the back of another building. I was half-turned in anticipation; I had to hurriedly correct and dash across the narrow drive, back to the sidewalk. The street ended at the next corner, where there was a stop sign. I concentrated on the faint footsteps behind me, deciding whether or not to run. They sounded farther back, though, and I knew they could outrun me in any case. I was sure to trip and go sprawling if I tried to go any faster. The footfalls were definitely farther back. I risked a quick glance over my shoulder, and they were maybe forty feet back now, I saw with relief. But they were both staring at me.

It seemed to take forever for me to get to the corner. I kept my pace steady, the men behind me falling ever so slightly farther behind with every step. Maybe they realized they had scared me and were sorry. I saw two cars going north pass the intersection I was heading for, and I exhaled in relief. There would be more people around once I got off this deserted street. I skipped around the corner with a grateful sigh.

And skidded to a stop.

The street was lined on both sides by blank, door-less, windowless walls. I could see in the distance, two intersections down, streetlamps, cars, and more pedestrians, but they were all too far away. Because lounging against the western building, midway down the street, were the other two men from the group, both watching with wicked smiles as I froze dead on the sidewalk. I realized then that I wasn’t being followed.

I was being herded.

I paused for only a second, but it felt like a very long time. I turned then and darted to the other side of the road. I had a sinking feeling that it was a wasted attempt. The footsteps behind me were louder now.

“There you are!” The booming voice of the stocky, dark-haired man shattered the intense quiet and made me jump. In the gathering darkness, it seemed like he was looking past me.
“Yeah,” a voice called loudly behind me, making me jump again as I tried to hurry down the street.
“We just took a little detour.”

My steps had to slow now. I was closing the distance between myself and the lounging pair too quickly. I can usually shout pretty loudly, and I sucked in air, preparing to call for help, but my throat was so dry I wasn’t sure how much volume I could manage. I knew little about fighting, but I put myself in a defensive stance.

“Stay away from me,” I warned in a voice that was supposed sound strong and fearless. But I was right about the dry throat—no volume.

“Don’t be like that.” He called, and the raucous laughter started again behind me.

I braced myself, feet apart, and raised my fists. I wasn’t exceptionally strong but I was scrappy. I could probably do some damage. And there was always the standard knee to the groin, of course. That same pessimistic voice in my mind spoke up then, reminding me that I probably didn’t have a chance against one of them, and there were four. Shut up! I commanded the voice before panic incapacitated me. I wasn’t going out without taking someone with me. I took a deep breath and prepared myself.

Headlights suddenly flew around the corner, the car almost hitting the stocky one, forcing him to jump back toward the sidewalk. I dove into the road—this car was going to stop, or have to hit me. But the silver car unexpectedly fishtailed around, skidding to a stop with the passenger door open just a few feet from me.

“Get in,” a furious voice hissed.

I felt an instantaneous feeling of security wash over me—even before I was off the street—as soon as I heard his voice. I jumped into the seat, slamming the door shut behind me.

It was dark in the car, no light had come on with the opening of the door, and I could barely see his face in the glow from the dashboard. The tires squealed as he spun around to face north, accelerating too quickly, swerving toward the stunned men on the street. I caught a glimpse of them diving for the sidewalk as we straightened out and sped toward the harbor.

“Put on your seat belt,” He said through gritted teeth, and I realized I was clutching the seat with both hands. I quickly obeyed; the snap as the belt connected was loud in the darkness. He took a sharp left, racing forward, blowing through several stop signs without pause.

But I felt oddly at ease, and totally unconcerned about where we were going. I stared at his beautiful face and felt a profound relief that went beyond my sudden rescue. It took me a few minutes of staring at his face to realize that he looked incredibly angry.

“Are you ok?” I asked, surprised at how hoarse my voice sounded.

“No,” he answered shortly, and his tone was livid.

I sat in silence, watching his face while his blazing eyes stared straight ahead, until the car came to a sudden stop. I glanced around, but it was too dark to see anything beside the vague outline of dark trees crowding the roadside. We weren’t in town anymore.

“Beau?” he asked, his voice tight, controlled.

“Yes?” My voice was still rough. I tried to clear my throat quietly.
“Are you all right?” He still didn’t look at me, but the fury was plain on his face.

“Yes,” I croaked softly.

“Distract me, please,” He practically choked out the words.

“I’m sorry, what?”

He exhaled sharply.

“Please, just talk. Talk about anything you want until I calm down,” he clarified, closing his eyes and locking his jaw.

“Um.” I wracked my brain for something to say, “I’m going to run over Tyler Crowley tomorrow before school?”

He was still squeezing his eyes closed, but the corner of his mouth twitched.

“Why?”

“He’s telling everyone that he’s taking me to prom—either he’s insane or he’s still trying to make up for almost killing me last…well, you were there, you remember, and he thinks taking me to prom is somehow the correct way to do this. So I figure if I endanger his life, then we’re even, and he can’t keep trying to make amends. I don’t need enemies and maybe’s Lauren’s brother, Logan, would back off if Tyler left me alone. I might have to total his Sentra, though. If he doesn’t have a ride he can’t take anyone to prom…,” I babbled on.

“I heard about that.” He sounded a bit more composed.

“You did?” I asked in disbelief, my irritation with Tyler was mounting. “If he’s paralyzed from the neck down, he can’t go to the prom either.” I muttered.

Edward sighed, and finally opened his eyes.

“Better?”

“Not really.”

I waited, but he didn’t speak again. He leaned his head back against the seat, staring at the ceiling of the car. His face was rigid.

“What’s wrong?” My voice came out in a whisper.

He didn’t say anything, just continued to stare. I looked down at his hand that was resting on the center console, it was in a tight fist. Much like those early days in Biology. For a moment I hesitated, then I reached out and rested my hand on his arm. When I looked back up, he was facing me. His face looked less furious; more a mixture of anger with the mildest touch of surprise.

“Edward, what’s wrong?” I asked again.

“Sometimes I have a problem with my temper, Beau.” He finally spoke, barely above a whisper. “But it wouldn’t be helpful for me to turn around and hunt down those…” He didn’t finish his sentence; he looked away, struggling for a moment to control his anger again. “At least,” he continued, “that’s what I’m trying to convince myself.”

“No, it wouldn’t.” I said softly.
“I shouldn’t go back to those… those thugs.” It wasn’t quite a statement, or a question. Somewhere in the middle.

“Um, no.”

He sighed a long, slow sigh.

Everything Jacob had said back on the beach was resurfacing in my mind as we sat there in silence. What did Edward think he would do? Did I want to know? If everything I suspected was true, if everything Jacob had told me about the cold ones was true… I realized I didn’t want to know what Edward would do. What Edward could do.

I glanced at the clock on the dashboard. It was past six-thirty.

“Jessica and Angela will be worried,” I murmured. “I was supposed to meet them.”

I slowly removed my hand from his arm and he started the engine without another word, turning around smoothly and speeding back towards town. We were under the streetlights in no time at all, still going too fast, weaving with ease through the cars slowly cruising the boardwalk. He parallel-parked against the curb in a space I would have thought much too small for the Volvo, but he slid in effortlessly in one try. I looked out the window to see the lights of La Bella Italia, and Jess and Angela just leaving, pacing anxiously away from us.

“How did you know where…?” I began, but then I just shook my head. I heard the door open and turned to see him getting out.

“What are you doing?” I asked.

“I’m taking you to dinner.” He smiled slightly, but his eyes were hard. He stepped out of the car and closed the door. I fumbled with my seat belt, and he had rounded the car and was opening the door for me before I had the chance to do it myself.

He spoke before I could. “Go stop Jessica and Angela before I have to track them down, too. I don’t think I could restrain myself if I ran into your other friends again.”

I shivered at the thought of Jess and Angela running into those men.

“Jess! Angela!” I yelled after them, waving when they turned. They rushed back to me, the pronounced relief on both their faces simultaneously changing to surprise as they saw who I was standing next to. They hesitated a few feet from us.

“Where have you been?” Jessica’s voice was full of worry.

“I got lost,” I admitted sheepishly. “And then I ran into Edward.” I gestured toward him.

“Would it be all right if I joined you?” he asked in his silken, irresistible voice. I could see from their staggered expressions he had never unleashed his talents on them before.

“Er… sure,” Jessica breathed.

“Um, actually, Beau, we already ate while we were waiting—I’m sorry,” Angela confessed.

“That’s fine—I’m not hungry.” I shrugged.

“I think you should eat something.” Edward’s voice was low but insistent. He looked up at Jessica and spoke slightly louder, “Do you mind if I drive Beau home tonight? That way you won’t have to
“Wait while she eats.”

“Oh, wow, that’s.. so thoughtful.” She bit her lip, trying to figure out from my expression whether that was what I wanted. I winked at her and she fought off a grin. I knew I needed to be alone with Edward in order to ask him all the questions that were floating around in my head.

“Okay.” Angela smiled. “See you tomorrow, Beau… Edward.” She grabbed Jessica’s hand and pulled her toward the car, which I could see parked across the street. As they got in, Jess turned and waved; her face eager with curiosity. I waved back, and they drove off—I swear I heard them giggling. Once they were out of sight, I turned to face Edward.

“Honestly, I’m not hungry,” I insisted, looking up to scrutinize his face. His face was unreadable.

“Humor me.” He smirked.

He walked to the door of the restaurant and held it open with an obstinate expression. Obviously, there would be no further discussion and he did just save my life for the second time, so I suppose I could at least have dinner. I walked past him into the restaurant.

The restaurant wasn’t crowded—it was the off-season in Port Angeles. The host was female, and I understood the look in her eyes as she assessed Edward. She welcomed him a little more warmly than necessary. I was surprised that it bothered me. She was tall, and leggy, with unnaturally blonde hair.

“A table for two?” His voice was alluring, whether he was aiming for that or not. I saw her eyes flicker to me and then away, satisfied by the cautious, no-contact space Edward kept between us. She led us to a table big enough for four in the center of the most crowded area of the dining floor.

I was about to sit, but Edward shook his head at me.

“Perhaps something more private?” he insisted quietly to the host. I wasn’t sure but it looked like he smoothly handed her a tip. I’d never seen anyone refuse a table except in old movies.

“Sure.” She sounded surprised as I was. She turned and led us around a partition to a small ring of booths—all of them empty. “How’s this?”

“Perfect.” He flashed his gleaming smile, dazing her momentarily.

“Um”—she shook her head, blinking—“your server will be right out.” She walked away unsteadily.

“You really shouldn’t do that to people,” I teased. “It’s hardly fair.”

“What?”

“Dazzle them like that—she’s probably hyperventilating in the kitchen right now.”

He seemed confused.

“Oh, come on,” I said dubiously. “You have to know the effect you have on people.”

He tilted his head to one side, and his eyes were curious. “I dazzle people?”

“You know you do, so I don’t know why you’re acting surprised.”

He grinned, “Do I dazzle you?”
“Maybe.” I answered shortly.

And then our server arrived, his face expectant. The hostess had definitely dished behind the scenes, and the server didn’t look disappointed. He smoothed his black hair and smiled with unnecessary warmth.

“Hello. My name is Adam, and I’ll be your server tonight. What can I get you to drink?” I didn’t miss that he was speaking only to Edward.

Edward looked at me.

“I’ll have a Coke.” It sounded like a question.

“Two cokes,” Edward said.

“I’ll be right back with that,” the server assured him with another unnecessary smile.

Edward was watching me intently.

“What?” I asked when the server left.

His eyes stayed fixed on my face. “How are you feeling?”

“I’m fine,” I replied, surprised by his intensity.

“You don’t feel dizzy, sick, cold…?”

“Should I?”

He chuckled at my puzzled tone.

“Well, I’m actually waiting for you to go into shock. His face twisted up into the perfect crooked smile.

“I don’t think that will happen,” I said, slightly breathless. “I’ve always been pretty good at repressing things.”

“Just the same, I’ll feel better when you have some sugar and food in you.”

Right on cue, the server appeared with our drinks and a basket of breadsticks. He stood with his back to me as he placed them on the table.

“Are you ready to order?” He asked Edward.

“Beau?” Edward smiled. The server turned unwillingly toward me.

I picked the first thing I saw on the menu. “Um…I’ll have the mushroom ravioli.”

“And you?” He turned back to Edward with a smile.

“Nothing for me,” he said. Of course not.

“Let me know if you change your mind.” The coy smile was still on the server’s face, but Edward wasn’t looking at him, and he left dissatisfied.

“You should drink,” He gestured to my glass.
I sipped at my soda quietly, and then drank more deeply, surprised by how thirsty I was. I realized I had finished the whole thing when he pushed his glass toward me.

“No, I’m fine.” I told him.

“I’m not going to drink it,” he said, a smile on the corners of his lips.

“Right,” I said and, because I was still thirsty, I downed his, too.

“Thank you,” I said. The cold from the icy soda was radiating through my chest, and I shivered.

“Are you cold?”

“It’s just the Coke,” I explained, shivering again.

“Don’t you have a jacket?” His voice was concerned.

“Yes.” I looked at the empty bench next to me. “Oh—I left it in Jessica’s car,” I realized.

Edward was shrugging out of his jacket. I realized that I had never paid attention to the clothes he wore; I was always looking at his face, at his unreadable expression, and his ever-changing eyes. He was removing a light beige leather jacket now; underneath he wore an ivory sweater. It fit him snugly, emphasizing how muscular his chest was.

He handed me the jacket, interrupting my ogling.

“Thank you,” I said again, sliding my arms into his jacket. It was cold—the way my jacket felt when I first picked it up in the morning, hanging in the drafty hallway. I shivered again. It smelled amazing. I inhaled, trying to identify the delicious scent. It didn’t smell like cologne. The sleeves were much too long; I shoved them back so I could free my hands.

“That color blue looks wonderful with your skin,” he said, watching me. I was surprised; I looked down, flushing, of course.

He pushed the bread basket toward me.

“Really, I’m not going into shock,” I protested.

“Humor me?” he said, with that smile I liked so much.

I rolled my eyes and grabbed a breadstick.

“Good boy,” He laughed.

“Don’t push your luck.” I warned him, he smirked.

“I don’t know how you can be so blasé about this. You should be upset— anyone else would be.

You don’t even look shaken.” He seemed unsettled. He stared into my eyes, and I saw how light his eyes were, lighter than I’d ever seen them, golden butterscotch.

“I feel safe with you,” I confessed, even though I had that constant fear of Edward in the back of my mind, it was miles away tonight.

That displeased him; his alabaster brow furrowed. He shook his head, frowning.

“That is more complicated than I’d planned,” he murmured to himself. I finally nibbled on the end of
“Usually you’re in a better mood when your eyes are so light,” I commented, trying to distract him from whatever thought had left him frowning and somber.

He stared at me, stunned. “What?”

“You’re always crabbier when your eyes are black— I expect it then,” I went on. “I have a theory about that.”

His eyes narrowed. “More theories?”

“Mm-hm.” I chewed on a small bite of the bread, looking indifferent.

“I hope you were more creative this time… or are you still stealing from comic books?” His faint smile was mocking; his eyes were still tight.

“Well, no, I didn’t get it from a comic book, but I didn’t come up with it on my own, either,” I shrugged.

“And?” he prompted. But then the server strode around the partition with my food. I realized we’d been unconsciously leaning toward each other across the table, because we both straightened up as he approached. He set the dish in front of me— it looked pretty good— and turned quickly to Edward.

“Did you change your mind?” he asked. “Isn’t there anything I can get you?” I may have been imagining the double meaning in his words.

“No, thank you, but some more soda would be nice.” He gestured with a long white hand to the empty cups in front of me.

“Sure.” He removed the empty glasses and walked away.

“You were saying?” Edward asked.

“I’ll tell you about it in the car. If…” I paused.

“There are conditions?” He raised one eyebrow, his voice amused.

“I do have a few questions, of course.”

“Of course.”

The server was back with two more Cokes. He sat them down without a word this time, and left again.

I took a sip.

“Well, go ahead,” he pushed, his voice still hard.

I started with the most undemanding. Or so I thought. “Why are you in Port Angeles?”

He looked down, folding his large hands together slowly on the table. His eyes flickered up at me from under his lashes, the hint of a smirk on his face.

“Next.”
“But that’s the easiest one,” I objected.

“Next,” he repeated.

I rolled my eyes and unrolled my silverware, picked up my fork, and carefully speared a ravioli. I put it in my mouth slowly, looking down at my plate, chewing while I thought. The mushrooms were good. I swallowed and took another sip of Coke before I looked up.

“Okay, then.” I glared at him, and continued slowly. “Let’s say, hypothetically of course, that… someone… could know what people are thinking, read minds, you know—with a few exceptions.”

“Just one exception,” he corrected, “hypothetically.”

*Well, damn.*

“All right, with one exception, then.” I was thrilled that he was playing along, but I tried to seem casual. “How does that work? What are the limitations? How would… that someone… find someone else at exactly the right time? How would he know he was in trouble?” I wondered if my convoluted questions even made sense.

“Hypothetically?” he asked.

“Sure.”

“Well, if… that someone…”

“Let’s call him ‘Joe,’” I suggested. He smiled wryly.

“Joe, then. If your Joe had been paying attention, the timing wouldn’t have needed to be quite so exact.” He shook his head, rolling his eyes. “Only you could get into trouble in a town this small. You would have devastated their crime rate statistics for a decade, you know.”

“I don’t see how this is my fault.”

He stared at me, that familiar frustration in his eyes. “I don’t either. But I don’t know who to blame.”

“Don’t blame me then, I don’t appreciate it.” I said, pointedly.

“My apologies.”

“How did you know?” I asked, unable to curb my intensity. I realized I was leaning toward him again.

He seemed to be wavering, torn by some internal dilemma. His eyes locked with mine, and I guessed he was making the decision right then whether or not to simply tell me the truth.

“You can trust me, you know,” I said softly. I reached forward, without thinking, to touch his folded hands, but he slid them away minutely. I pulled my own hand back.

“I want to trust you.” His voice was almost a whisper. “But that doesn’t mean I should.”

“Please?” I asked.

An almost guilty looked danced across his face and he leaned toward me.

“I followed you to Port Angeles,” he admitted, speaking in a rush. “I’ve never tried to keep a specific
person alive before, and it’s much more troublesome than I would have believed. But that’s probably just because you are a magnet for trouble.” He paused.

“A runaway van and a group of drunk thugs hardly makes me a magnet for trouble.” I countered. He remained silent.

I wondered if it should bother me that he was following me; he had saved my life. If he hadn’t followed me who knows what would have happened, but that wasn’t necessarily an excuse. He stared, waiting for me to react.

I thought about what he’d said to me before. Do you think I could be scary?

“You put yourself into that category, then? Of trouble?” I asked, softly.

His face turned hard, expressionless. “Unequivocally.”

I stretched my hand across the table again— ignoring him when he pulled back slightly once more— to touch the back of his hand softly with my fingertips. His skin was cold and hard, like a stone.

“Thank you.” I said. “That’s twice now.”

His face softened. “Let’s not try for three, agreed?”

I narrowed my eyes, but I was smiling.

“Did you ever think that maybe my number was up the first time, with the van, and that you’ve been interfering with fate?” I speculated, teasing him.

He frowned, and I felt his hand tense beneath mine.

“Edward?”

He angled his face down, and looked away.

“That wasn’t the first time,” he said, and his voice was hard to hear. I stared at him intently, but he wouldn’t meet my gaze. “Your number was up the first time I met you.”

As clearly as if I were back in my first Biology class, I could see Edward’s murderous black glare. I remembered the tenseness in his body, the same tenseness I had seen back in his car when he had asked me to distract him.

“You remember?” he asked, his angel’s face grave. “You understand?”

“Yes.”

He waited for more, for another reaction. When I didn’t say anything, he furrowed his eyebrows.

“You can leave, you know,” he said softly. “You could take my car and drive home.”

I considered it for a moment. Considered everything I knew, everything I suspected, everything I’d seen and heard. It all swirled around in my mind and I would have left, I should have left. But there was sadness in his voice, sadness I could barely detect, but it was there. He didn’t want me to leave.

“I don’t want to leave.”

He sighed, frustration keen on his face. “How can you say that?”
I gently squeezed his hand, it was like marble under mine. I had decided to stay because there was something there in Edward Cullen. It didn’t matter to me what he was…something dangerous. It mattered to me who he was. Despite the smirks and the frustrated glances there was something in Edward that I wanted to be around. Behind the frustration in his eyes, I could see sadness. Sadness at the thought of me leaving.

“You didn’t finish answering my question,” I reminded him. “How did you find me?”

He pressed his lips together, staring at me through narrowed eyes, deciding again. His eyes flashed down to my full plate, and then back to me.

“You eat, I’ll talk,” he bargained.

I slowly removed my hand from his. I grabbed my fork and scooped up another ravioli and popped it in my mouth.

“It’s harder than it should be— keeping track of you. Usually I can find someone very easily, once I’ve heard their mind before.” He looked at me anxiously, and I realized I had frozen. I made myself swallow, then stabbed another ravioli and tossed it in.

“I was keeping tabs on Jessica, not carefully— I honestly didn’t think you’d find trouble in Port Angeles— and at first I didn’t notice when you took off on your own. Then, when I realized that you weren’t with her anymore, I went looking for you at the bookstore I saw in her head. I could tell that you hadn’t gone in, and that you’d gone south… and I knew you would have to turn around soon. So I was just waiting for you, randomly searching through the thoughts of people on the street— to see if anyone had noticed you so I would know where you were. I had no reason to be worried… but I was strangely anxious…. ” He was lost in thought, staring past me, seeing things I couldn’t imagine.

“I started to drive in circles, still… listening. The sun was finally setting, and I was about to get out and follow you on foot. And then—”

He stopped, clenching his teeth together in sudden fury. He made an effort to calm himself.

“Then what?” I whispered. He continued to stare over my head.

“I heard what they were thinking,” he growled, his upper lip curling slightly back over his teeth. “I saw your face in his mind.” He suddenly leaned forward, one elbow appearing on the table, his hand covering his eyes. The movement was so swift it startled me.

“It was very… hard— you can’t imagine how hard— for me to simply take you away, and leave them… alive.” His voice was muffled by his arm. “I could have let you go with Jessica and Angela, but I was afraid if you left me alone, I would go looking for them,” he admitted in a whisper.

I sat quietly, feeling dazed, my thoughts incoherent. My hands were folded in my lap, and I was leaning weakly against the back of the seat. He still had his face in his hand, and he was as still as if he’d been carved from the stone his skin resembled.

Finally he looked up, his eyes seeking mine, full of his own questions.

“Are you ready to go home?” he asked.

“I’m ready to leave,” I qualified, overly grateful that we had the hour-long ride home together. I wasn’t ready to say goodbye to him.
The server appeared as if he’d been called. Or watching.

“How are we doing?” he asked Edward.

“We’re ready for the check, thank you.” His voice was quiet, rougher, still reflecting the strain of our conversation. It seemed to muddle him. Edward looked up, waiting.

“S-sure,” the server stuttered. “Here you go.” He pulled a small leather folder from the front pocket of his black apron and handed it to him.

There was a bill in Edward’s hand already. He slipped it into the folder and handed it right back to the server.

“No change.” Edward smiled. Then he stood up, and I scrambled awkwardly to my feet.

The server smiled invitingly at him again. “You have a nice evening.”

Edward didn’t look away from me as he thanked him. I suppressed a smile.

He walked close beside me to the door, still careful not to touch me. I remembered what Jessica had said about her relationship with Mike, how they were almost to the first-kiss stage. I sighed. Edward seemed to hear me, and he looked down curiously. I looked at the sidewalk, grateful that he didn’t seem to be able to know what I was thinking.

He opened the passenger door, holding it for me as I stepped in, shutting it softly behind me. I watched him walk around the front of the car, fascinated by how graceful he was. I probably should have been used to that by now— but I wasn’t. I had a feeling Edward wasn’t the kind of person anyone got used to.

Once inside the car, he started the engine and turned the heater on high. It had gotten very cold, and I guessed the good weather was at an end. I was warm in his jacket, though, breathing in the scent of it.

Edward pulled out through the traffic, apparently without a glance, flipping around to head toward the freeway.

“Now,” he said significantly, “It’s your turn.”
“Can I ask just one more?” I asked as Edward accelerated much too quickly down the quiet street.

He sighed.

“One,” he agreed. His lips pressed together into a cautious line.

“Well… you said you knew I hadn’t gone into the bookstore, and that I had gone south. I was just wondering how you knew that.”

He looked away, deliberately.

“Really? I thought we were past all the evasiveness,” I said, scolding.

He almost smiled.

“Fine, then. I followed your scent.” He stared ahead at the road.

I didn’t have a response to that, but I filed it away for future study. I tried to refocus. I wasn’t ready to let him be finished, now that he was finally explaining things.

“And then you didn’t answer one of my first questions…” I stalled.

He looked at me with disapproval. “Which one?”

“How does it work—the mind-reading thing? Can you read anybody’s mind, anywhere? How do you do it? Can the rest of your family do the same thing?”

It was easier to talk about this in the dark car. The streetlights were behind us already, and in the low gleam from the dashboard, all the crazy stuff seemed just a little more possible.

It seemed like he felt the same sense of non-reality, like normality was suspended for as long as we were in this space together. His voice was casual as he answered.

“That’s more than one question,” he pointed out. I simply intertwined my fingers and gazed at him, waiting.

“No, it’s just me. And I can’t hear anyone, anywhere. They have to be fairly close. The more familiar someone’s… ‘voice’ is, the farther away I can hear them. But still, no more than a few miles.” He paused thoughtfully. “It’s a little like being in a huge hall filled with people, everyone talking at once. It’s just a hum—a buzzing of voices in the background. Until I focus on one voice, and then what they’re thinking is clear.”

“Most of the time,” he continued, “I tune it all out—it can be very distracting. And then it’s easier to seem normal”—He frowned as he said the word—“when I’m not accidentally answering someone’s thought rather than their words.”

“Why do you think you can’t hear me?” I asked curiously.

He looked at me, his eyes enigmatic, searching, and full of that frustration I knew so well by now. I realized now that each time he’d looked at me this way, he must have been trying to hear my thoughts, and failing. His expression relaxed as he gave up.
“I don’t know,” he murmured. “The only guess I have is that perhaps your mind doesn’t work the same way the rest of theirs do. Like your thoughts are on the AM frequency and I’m only getting FM.” He grinned at me, suddenly amused.

“Did you just suggest my mind doesn’t work right? Like I’m a freak?” I’d always felt like someone who marched to a different beat, as they say. But the thought of being so different bothered me for some reason.

“I hear voices in my mind and you’re worried that you’re the freak,” he laughed. “Don’t worry, it’s just a theory…” His face tightened. “Which brings us back to you.”

I sighed. I didn’t even know how to begin.

“Aren’t we past all evasions now?” he reminded me softly.

I looked away from his face for the first time, trying to find words. I happened to glance at the speedometer.

“Holy crow!” I shouted, “Slow down!”

“What’s wrong?” He was startled, but he didn’t slow down any.

“You’re pushing a hundred and ten miles an hour!” I was still shouting. I shot a panicky glance out the window, but it was too dark to see much. The road was only visible in the long patch of bluish brightness from the headlights. The forest along both sides of the road was like a black wall—as hard as a wall of steel if we veered off the road at this speed.

“Relax, Beau.” He rolled his eyes, still not slowing.

“Are you trying to kill us?” I demanded.

“We’re not going to crash.”

I tried to modulate my voice. “Why are you in such a hurry?”

“I always drive like this.” He turned to smile crookedly at me.

“Keep your eyes on the road, Edward!”

“I’ve never had an accident, Beau—I’ve never even gotten a ticket.” He grinned and tapped his forehead. “Built-in radar detector.”

“Very funny.” I glared. “Charlie’s a cop, remember? I was raised to abide by traffic laws. Besides, if you turn us into a Volvo pretzel around a tree trunk, you can probably just walk away.”

“Probably,” he agreed with a short, hard laugh. “But you can’t.” He sighed, and I watched with relief as the needle gradually drifted toward eighty. “Happy?”

“Good boy.” I smirked.

He glared at me through narrowed eyes for a moment, but I could tell he was trying not to smile.

After a moment, he let out a frustrated sigh. “I hate driving slow.”

“This is slow?”
“Enough commentary on my driving,” he snapped. I stifled a laugh.

“I’m still waiting for your latest theory.” He said, seriously.

I bit my lip. He looked down at me, his honey eyes unexpectedly gentle.

“I won’t laugh,” he promised.

“I’m not worried about that.”

“Then what?”

“I’m worried that you’ll be… upset.”

He sat, silently, for a moment, and then glanced sideways at me. He lifted his hand off the gearshift and held it out toward me—just a few centimeters. An offer. I glanced up quickly, confused. His eyes were soft.

“Don’t worry about me,” he said. “I can handle it.”

I tentatively took his hand, and he curled his fingers very lightly around mine for one short moment, then dropped his hand back to the gearshift. Carefully, I placed my hand over the top of his again. I ran my thumb along the outside of his large, strong hand, tracing from his wrist to the tip of his pinkie finger. The dissonance was disquieting. His hand was hard as stone or marble, but his skin was soft like the smoothest satin and cold as ice. It reminded me that, even though my theory was insane, Edward wasn’t human.

“The suspense is killing me, Beau,” he breathed out the words. I could see his eyes watching my hand.

“I don’t know how to start,” I admitted.

“Why don’t you start at the beginning… you said you didn’t come up with this on your own.”

“No.”


“No—it was Saturday, at the beach.” I glanced up at his face. He looked puzzled.

“I ran into an old family friend—Jacob Black,” I continued. “His dad and Charlie have been friends since I was a baby.”

He still looked confused.

“His dad is one of the Quileute elders.” I watched him carefully. His confused expression frozen in place. “We went for a walk on the beach together,” I noted a change in Edward’s expression but couldn’t identify it, “and he was telling me some old legends—trying to scare me, I guess. He told me one…” I hesitated.

“Go on,” he pushed.

“About vampires.” I realized I was whispering. I couldn’t look at his face now. But I saw his knuckles tighten convulsively on the wheel. I could feel his hand tense under mine on the gearshift and I thought about taking my hand away. But I left my hand and continued to gently trace the lines of his hand. His grip slowly softened on the steering wheel simultaneous to his hand relaxing beneath
“And… you immediately thought of me?” His voice was calm.

“No. He mentioned your family.”

He was silent, staring at the road.

I was worried suddenly, worried about protecting sweet Jacob.

“He just thought it was a silly folk-tale,” I said quickly. “He didn’t expect me to think anything of it.” I felt guilty, “It was my fault, I convinced him to tell me.”

“Why?”

“Logan said something about you—he was trying to provoke me. And an older boy from the tribe said your family didn’t come to the reservation, only it sounded like he meant something different. So, when Jacob and I went off alone I asked him.” I admitted quietly.

“You must have said something to convince him to tell you.” Edward said.

I was confused, “No… I just… asked him?”

He startled me by laughing. I stared up at him. He was laughing, but his eyes were fierce, staring ahead. His cold hand was tense again beneath mine.

“You obviously don’t understand your own charm.” He chuckled darkly. “And you accused me of dazzling people—poor Jacob Black.”

“Are you jealous?” was all I could think to say. He didn’t answer, but his jaw tensed.

“What did you do then?” he asked after a minute.

“I did some research on the Internet.”

“And did that convince you?” His voice sounded barely interested. But his free hand was clamped hard onto the steering wheel.

“No. Nothing fit. Most of it was kind of silly. And then…” I stopped. “I decided… It didn’t matter,” I whispered.

“It didn’t matter?” He pulled his hand out from under mine and I looked up—I had finally broken through his carefully composed mask. His face was incredulous, with just a hint of anger but I couldn’t help the anger wasn’t directed at me.

“No,” I said softly. “It doesn’t matter to me what you are.”

A hard, mocking edge entered his voice. “You don’t care if I’m a monster?” If I’m not human?”

I thought about it for a moment. “No.”

He was silent, staring straight ahead again. His face was bleak and cold.

“You’re upset,” I sighed. “I shouldn’t have said anything.”

“No,” he said, but his tone was as hard as his face. “I’d rather know what you’re thinking—even if
what you’re thinking is insane.”

He had rested his hand back on the gearshift. I moved my own hand back to gently stroke the back of his hand with my thumb. It seemed to soothe him.

“What are you thinking about now?” he asked. His voice was calmer.

“I’m just curious about a few things.”

“What are you curious about?” He asked, with a hint of resignation in his voice.

“How old are you?”

“Seventeen,” he answered promptly.

“And how long have you been seventeen?”

His lips twitched as he stared at the road. “A while,” he admitted at last.

“Okay.” I smiled, pleased that he was still being honest with me. He stared down at me with watchful eyes, much as he did before, when he was worried I would go into shock. I smiled wider in encouragement, and he frowned.

“Don’t laugh—but how can you come out during the daytime?”

He laughed anyway. “Myth.”

“Burned by the sun?”

“Myth.”

“Sleeping in coffins?”

“Myth.” He hesitated for a moment, and a peculiar tone entered his voice. “I can’t sleep.”

It took me a minute to understand the weight of that confession. “At all?”

“Never,” he said, his voice nearly inaudible. He turned to look at me with a wistful expression. The golden eyes held mine, and I lost my train of thought. I stared at him until he looked away.

“You haven’t asked me the most important question yet.” His voice was hard now, and when he looked at me again his eyes were cold.

I blinked, confused. “Which one is that?”

“You aren’t concerned about my diet?” he asked sarcastically.

“Oh,” I muttered, “that.”

“Yes, that.” His voice was bleak. “Don’t you want to know if I drink blood?”

I flinched. “Well, Jacob said something about that.”

“What did Jacob say?” He asked flatly.

“He said you didn’t…hunt people. He said your family wasn’t supposed to be dangerous because you only hunted animals.”
“He said we weren’t dangerous?” His voice was deeply skeptical.

“Not exactly. He said you weren’t supposed to be dangerous. But the Quileutes still didn’t want you on their land, just in case.”

He looked forward, but I couldn’t tell if he was watching the road or not.

“So was he right? About not hunting people?” I tried to keep my voice as even as possible.

“The Quileutes have a long memory,” he whispered. I took it as confirmation.

“Don’t let that make you complacent, though,” he warned me. “They’re right to keep their distance from us. We are still dangerous.”

“I don’t understand.”

“We try,” he explained slowly. “We’re usually very good at what we do. Sometimes we make mistakes. Me, for example, allowing myself to be alone with you.”

“This is a mistake?” I heard the sadness in my voice, and it surprised me.

“A very dangerous one,” He murmured.

We were both silent then. I watched the headlights twist with the curves of the road. They moved too fast; it didn’t look real, it looked like a video game. I was aware of the time slipping away so quickly, like the black road beneath us, and I was afraid I wouldn’t have another chance to be with him like this again—talking so openly, without the walls between us that I had grown to expect. I couldn’t waste a single minute I had with him.

“Tell me more,” I asked, trying not to sound desperate, and failing.

He looked at me quickly, started by the change in my tone. “What more do you want to know?”

“Tell me why you hunt animals instead of people,” I suggested, my voice still tinged with desperation.

“I don’t want to be a monster.” His voice was very low.

“But animals aren’t enough?”

He paused. “I can’t be sure, of course, but I’d compare it to living on tofu and soy milk; we call ourselves vegetarians, our little inside joke. It doesn’t completely satiate the hunger—or rather the thirst. But it keeps us strong enough to resist. Most of the time.” His tone turned ominous. “Sometimes it’s more difficult than others.”

“Is it very difficult for you now?” I asked.

He sighed, “Yes.”

“But you’re not hungry now,” I said confidently—stating, not asking.

“Why do you think that?”

“Your eyes. I told you I had a theory. I’ve noticed that people are crabbier when they’re hungry.”
He chuckled. “You are observant, aren’t you?”

I smirked, enjoying the sound of his laughter.

“Were you hunting this weekend, with Emmett?” I asked when it was quiet again.

“Yes.” He paused for a second, as if deciding whether or not to say something. “I didn’t want to leave, but it was necessary. It’s a bit easier to be around you when I’m not thirsty.”

“Why didn’t you want to leave?”

“It makes me…anxious…to be away from you.” His eyes were gentle but intense, I felt an electric feeling running through my body. “I wasn’t joking when I asked you to try not to fall in the ocean or get run over last Thursday. I was distracted all weekend, worrying about you. And after what happened tonight, I’m surprised that you did make it through a whole weekend unscathed.” He shook his head, and then seemed to remember something. “Well, not totally unscathed.”

“What?”

“Your hands,” he reminded me. I looked down at my palms, at the almost-healed scrapes across the heels of my hands. His eyes missed nothing.

“I fell. Once,” I sighed.

“That’s what I thought.” His lips curved up at the corners. “I suppose it could have been much worse—and that possibility tormented me the entire time I was away. It was a very long three days. I really got on Emmett’s nerves.” He smiled ruefully at me.

“Three days? Didn’t you just get back today?”

“No, we got back Sunday.”

“Then why weren’t any of you in school?” I was a little frustrated, almost annoyed as I thought of how disappointed I had been when he hadn’t shown up to school. When I had so much on my mind, so much to ask him.

“Well, you asked if the sun hurt me, and it doesn’t. But I can’t go out in the sunlight—at least, not where anyone can see.”

“Why?”

“I’ll show you sometime,” he promised.

“You could have called me,” I offered.

He was puzzled. “But I knew you were safe.”

“But I didn’t know where you were. I—“ I hesitated, averting my eyes.

“What?” His velvety voice was compelling.

“I just… I thought you might not come back. That somehow you knew that I knew and… I was afraid you would disappear.” I felt my face turning red as the words spilled out, too honest. What was Edward to me? What was I to him? Sure, I was sitting in his car, stroking his hand but did that mean anything? Was I just a fascination to him? The one thing he couldn’t figure out despite his supernatural talents. I realized that I was too invested in this; I was in too deep.
I noticed he was quiet. I glanced up, apprehensive, and saw that his expression was pained.

“Ah,” he groaned quietly. “This is wrong.”

I didn’t understand his response. “What did I say?”

“Don’t you see, Beau? It’s one thing for me to make myself miserable, but a wholly other thing for you to be so involved.” He turned his anguished eyes to the road, his words flowing almost too fast for me to understand. “I don’t want to hear you feel that way.” His voice was low but urgent. His words cut me. I was right; I was in too deep. I took my hand away from his and rested it in my lap. “It’s wrong. It’s not safe. I’m dangerous, Beau—please, grasp that.”

“No.” I tried very hard to think of a better response, but the words refused to come. I felt foolish for thinking… It didn’t matter what I thought.

“I’m serious,” he growled.

“So am I. I told you, it doesn’t matter to me what you are. It’s too late—"

His voice whipped out, low and harsh, cutting me off. “Never say that.”

I bit my lip and I was glad he couldn’t know how much that hurt. How stupid I felt, and how angry I was with myself. How foolish and reckless I had been. I didn’t know anything about love, or relationships. Beauregard Swan: the strange loner. Something different about that one. Here I was, sitting in this car with this boy, this boy who was also strange and also different. I thought maybe he liked me. After all, we had been so open with each other; told each other so much—too much. The emotions were brimming up; all my frustration, all my anger, and I felt it all catch in my throat. I stared out at the road. We must be close now. He was driving much too fast.

“What are you thinking?” he asked, his voice still raw. I just shook my head, not sure if I could speak. I could feel his gaze on my face, but I kept my eyes forward.

“Are you crying?” He sounded appalled. I hadn’t even realized it until I felt a tear fall down my cheek. I quickly rubbed it away with the back of my hand, but it was soon replaced by more.

“No,” I said, but my voice broke.

I saw him reach toward me hesitantly with his right hand, but then he stopped and slowly pulled it away. I closed my eyes and took a deep breath, my hands resting on my lap.

I suddenly felt his cold hand on top of mine, holding it gently. I opened my eyes to look at him.

“I’m sorry.” His voice ached with regret. I knew he wasn’t just apologizing for the words that had upset me. His thumb stroked the back of my hand, softly.

The darkness slipped by us in silence. The car started slowing, and even in the dark I recognized that we were passing into the boundaries of Forks. It had taken less than twenty minutes.

“Will I see you tomorrow?” I asked, wondering if he heard how much more was in that question than I was actually saying.

“Do you want to see me?” he said softly, with a tinge of sadness in his voice.

“I do.”

“Then I’ll be there,” he smiled, slightly. “I’ll save you a seat at lunch.”
It was silly, after everything that had happened tonight, how that little promise sent flutters through my stomach, and stole the words from me.

We were in front of Charlie’s house. The lights were on, my truck in its place, everything utterly normal. It was like waking from a dream. He stopped the car, but I didn’t move.

“You’ll really be there tomorrow?”

“I promise.” He squeezed my hand ever so gently, before taking it away. I pulled his jacket off, taking one last whiff.

“You can keep it—you don’t have a jacket for tomorrow,” he reminded me.

I handed it back to him. “I don’t want to have to explain to Charlie.”

“Oh, right.”

I slowly reached over to the door handle, reveling in the moment before it ended.

“Beau?” he asked in a different tone—serious, but hesitant.

“Yes?” I turned back to him.

“Will you promise me something?”

“Sure,” I said hesitantly, slightly nervous as to what his request might be.

“Don’t go into the woods alone.”

I stared at him in blank confusion. “Why?”

He frowned, and his eyes were tight as he stared past me out the window.

“I’m not always the most dangerous thing out there. Let’s leave it at that.”

I felt a sense of dread overtake me hearing the sudden bleakness in his voice, but this was an easy promise to honor. “Sure, Edward.”

“I’ll see you tomorrow, Beau.” His eyes looked sad again, like when he had told me I could leave.

“Tomorrow, then.” I opened the door slowly.

“Beau?” he caught my hand and I turned. He was leaning toward me, his pale, handsome face just inches from mine. I felt like my heart stopped.

“Beau, I…” he didn’t finished. He fell silent, his golden eyes staring into mine.

We stayed there, for a moment. He held my hand, not tightly but with determination. His eyes were still searching deep in mine, for what I wasn’t sure. He leaned even closer, if that was even possible, and his lips parted minutely. So close to him, I could smell that exquisite scent that clung to his jacket, but in a more concentrated form.

“Sleep well,” he finally said and he reluctantly leaned away, releasing my hand.

I was unable to move for a moment, my heart was beating rapidly. I stepped out of the car carefully, having to use the frame for support. I thought I heard him chuckle, but the sound was too quiet for
me to be certain.

He waited till I had reached the front door, and then I saw him look at me with those sad eyes for a moment before he slowly pulled away. I watched the silver car disappear around the corner. I realized it was very cold.

I reached for the key mechanically, unlocked the door, and stepped inside.

Charlie called me from the living room. “Beau?”

“Yeah, Dad, it’s me.” I walked in to see him. He was watching a baseball game.

“You’re home early.”

“Am I?” I was surprised.

“It’s not even eight yet,” He told me. “Did you have fun?”

“Yeah—it was lots of fun.” My head was spinning, my night out with Jess and Angela seemed like it had been so long ago. “They both found dresses.”

“Are you all right?”

“I’m just tired. I did a lot of walking.”

“Well, maybe you should go lie down.” He sounded concerned. I wondered what my face looked like.

“I’m just going to call Jessica first.”

“Were you just with her?” He asked, surprised.

“Er, yes—but I left my jacket in her car. I want to make sure she brings it tomorrow.”

“Well, give her a chance to get home first.”

“Right,” I agreed.

I went to the kitchen and fell, exhausted into a chair. I was starting to feel really dizzy now. I wondered if I was going into shock after all. Get a grip, I told myself.

The phone rang suddenly, startling me. I yanked it off the hook.

“Hello?” I asked breathlessly.

“Beau?”

“Hey, Jess, I was just going to call you.”

“You made it home?” Her voice was relieved.

“Yes. Hey, I left my jacket in your car—could you bring it to me tomorrow?”

“Sure. But tell me what happened!” She sounded eager.

“Um, tomorrow—in Trig, okay?”
She caught on quickly. “Oh, is your dad there?”

“Yeah, that’s right.”

“Okay, I’ll talk to you tomorrow, then. Bye!” I could hear the excitement in her voice.

“Bye, Jess.”

I walked up the stairs slowly, my mind in a stupor. I went through the motions of getting ready for bed without paying any attention to what I was doing. It wasn’t until I was in the shower—the water too hot, burning my skin—that I realized I was freezing. I shuddered violently for several minutes before the steaming spray could finally relax my tense muscles. Then I stood in the shower, too tired to move, until the hot water began to run out.

I stumbled out, wrapping myself securely in a towel, trying to hold the heat from the water in so the aching shivers wouldn’t return. I dressed for bed quickly and climbed under my quilt, hugging the warmth to my body. A few small shudders still trembled through me.

My mind still whirled, full of images I couldn’t understand. Tonight had been real, and it had all actually happened. I didn’t think I was reaching for something that wasn’t real anymore. The look in his eyes, the way he touched my hand, the way he had leaned in to almost… Nothing seemed clear at first, but as I fell gradually closer to unconsciousness, a few certainties became evident.

About three things I was absolutely positive. First, Edward was a vampire. Second, there was part of him—and I didn’t know how potent that part might be—that thirsted for my blood. And third, I was unconditionally and irrevocably in love with him.
Interrogations

It was very hard, in the morning, to argue with the part of me that was sure last night was a dream. Logic wasn’t on my side, or common sense. I clung to the parts I couldn’t have imagined—like his smell. I was sure I could never have dreamed that up on my own.

It was foggy and dark outside my window, absolutely perfect. He had no reason not to be in school today. I dressed in my heavy clothes, remembering I didn’t have a jacket. Further proof that my memory was real.

When I got downstairs, Charlie was gone again—I was running later than I’d realized. I swallowed a granola bar in three bites, chased it down with milk straight from the carton, and then hurried out the door. Hopefully the rain would hold off until I could find Jessica.

It was unusually foggy; the air was almost smoky with it. The mist was ice cold where it clung to the exposed skin on my face and neck. I couldn’t wait to get the heat going in my truck. It was such a thick fog that I was a few feet down the driveway before I realized there was a car in it: a silver car. My heart thudded, then began beating in double time.

I didn’t see where he came from, but suddenly he was there, pulling the passenger door open for me.

“Do you want to ride with me today?” he asked, amused by my expression as he caught me by surprise yet again. There was uncertainty in his voice. He was really giving me a choice—I was free to refuse, and I knew part of him hoped for that. It was a vain hope.

“Yes, thank you,” I said, trying to keep my voice calm. As I stepped into the warm car, I noticed his tan jacket was slung over the headrest of the passenger seat. The door closed behind me, and, sooner than should be possible, he was sitting next to me, starting the car.

“I brought the jacket for you. I didn’t want you to get sick or something.” His voice was guarded. I noticed that he wore no jacket himself, just a light gray Henley. He wore it unbuttoned at the top and the fabric clung to his perfectly muscled chest. It was a tribute to his beautiful face that it kept me from staring at his body.

“I’m not quite that delicate.” I said, but I pulled the jacket onto my lap, pushing my arms through the too-long sleeves, curious to see if the scent could possibly be as good as I remembered. It was better.

“Aren’t you?” he contradicted in a voice so low I wasn’t sure if he meant for me to hear.

We drove through the fog-shrouded streets, always too fast, feeling awkward. I was, at least. Last night all the walls were down… almost all. I didn’t know if we were still being as candid today. It left me tongue-tied. I waited for him to speak.

He turned to smirk at me. “What, no twenty questions today?”

“No, that’s not the problem. You take everything so coolly—it’s unnatural. It makes me wonder what you’re really thinking.”
“I always tell you what I’m really thinking.”

“You edit,” he accused.

“Not enough.”

“Enough to drive me insane.”

“You don’t want to hear it,” I mumbled, almost whispered. As soon as the words were out, I regretted them. The pain in my voice was very faint; I hoped he hadn’t noticed it.

He didn’t respond, and I wondered if I had ruined the mood. His face was unreadable as we drove into the school parking lot. Something occurred to me belatedly.

“Where’s the rest of your family?” I asked—more than glad to be alone with him, but remembering that his car was usually full.

“They took Royal’s car.” He shrugged as he parked next to a glossy red convertible with the top up. “Ostentatious, isn’t it?”

“Um, wow.” I gawked at the car. “If he has that, why does he ride with you?”

“Like I said, it’s ostentatious. We try to blend in.”

“You don’t succeed.” I laughed and shook my head as we got out of the car. I wasn’t late anymore; his lunatic driving had gotten me to school in plenty of time. “So why did Royal drive today if it’s more conspicuous?”

“Hadn’t you noticed? I’m breaking all the rules now.” He met me at the front of the car, staying very close to my side as we walked onto campus. I wanted to close that little distance, to reach out and touch him, but I was afraid he wouldn’t like me to.

“Why do you have cars like that at all?” I wondered aloud. “If you’re looking for privacy?”

“An indulgence,” he admitted with an impish smile. “We all like to drive fast.”

“Figures,” I rolled my eyes.

Under the shelter of the cafeteria roof’s overhang, Jessica was waiting, her eyes about to bug out of their sockets. Over her arm, bless her, was my jacket.

“Hey, Jess,” I said when we were a few feet away. “Thanks for remembering.” She handed me my jacket without speaking.

“Good morning, Jessica,” Edward said politely. It wasn’t really his fault that his voice was so irresistible. Or what his eyes were capable of.

“Er…hi.” She shifted her wide eyes to me, trying to gather her jumbled thoughts. “I guess I’ll see you in Trig.” She gave me a meaningful look, and I suppressed a sigh. What on earth was I going to tell her?

“Yeah, I’ll see you then.”

She walked away, pausing twice to peek back over her shoulder at us.

“What are you going to tell her?” Edward murmured.
“Hey, I thought you couldn’t read my mind!” I glared at him.

“I can’t,” he said, startled. Then understanding brightened his eyes. “However, I can read hers—she’ll be waiting to ambush you in class.”

I groaned as I pulled off his jacket and handed it to him, replacing it with my own. He folded it over his arm.

“So what are you going to tell her?”

“A little help?” I pleaded. “What does she want to know?”

He shook his head, grinning wickedly. “That’s not fair.”

“No, you not sharing what you know—now that’s not fair.”

He deliberated for a moment as we walked. We stopped outside the door to my first class.

“She wants to know if we’re secretly dating. And she wants to know how you feel about me,” he finally said.

“Great. What should I say?” I tried to keep my expression neutral. People were passing us on their way to class, probably staring, but I was barely aware of them.

“Hmmmm.” He paused to smooth a stray lock of hair back into place on my head, “I suppose you could say yes to the first… If you don’t mind, that is.”

“I… I don’t mind.” I said faintly, my heart was beating rapidly in my chest.

“And as for her other question… well, I’ll be listening to hear the answer to that one myself.” One side of his mouth pulled into my favorite uneven smile. My voice caught in my throat and I couldn’t respond.

“I’ll see you at lunch,” he said softly. Then he turned and walked away. Three people walking in the door stopped to stare at me.

I hurried into class, blushing fiercely. Now I was even more worried about what I was going to say to Jessica. This wasn’t entirely fair. I sat in my usual seat, slamming by bag down in frustration.

“Morning, Beau,” Mike said from the seat next to me. I looked up to see an odd, almost resigned look on his face. “How was Port Angeles?”

“It was…” There really was no honest way to sum it up. “Great,” I finished lamely. “Jessica got a really cute dress.”

“Did she say anything about Monday night?” he asked, his eyes brightening. I smiled at the turn the conversation had taken.

“She said she had a really good time,” I assured him.

“She did?” he said eagerly.

“Most definitely.”

Mr. Mason called the class to order then, asking us to turn in our papers. English and then Government passed in a blur. I worried about how to explain things to Jessica and agonized over
whether Edward would really be listening to what I said through the medium of Jess’s thoughts. How very inconvenient his little talent could be—when it wasn’t saving my life.

The fog had almost dissolved by the end of the second hour, but the day was still dark with low, oppressing clouds. I smiled up at the sky.

Edward was right, of course. When I walked into Trig, Jessica was sitting in the back row, nearly bouncing off her seat in excitement. I reluctantly went to sit by her, trying to convince myself it would better to get it over with as soon as possible.

“Tell me everything!” She begged.

“What do you want to know?” I hedged.

“What happened last night?” She was practically squealing.

“He bought me dinner, and then he drove me home.”

She glared at me, her expression stiff with skepticism. “How did you get home so fast?”

“He drives like a maniac. It was terrifying.” I hoped he heard that.

“Was it like a date—did you tell him to meet you there?”

I hadn’t thought of that. “No—I was very surprised to see him there.”

Her lips puckered in disappointment at the transparent honesty in my voice.

“But he picked you up for school today?” she probed. “Or…” A wicked grin spread across her face, “Did he stay the night?”

“Jess!” I hissed.

“Well?”

“Of course he didn’t.” I insisted, “Do you think I could sneak him past my dad?”

She shrugged, still grinning.

“He picked me up this morning. It was also a surprise.” I said adamantly.

“Well, are you going out again?”

“He offered to drive me to Seattle Saturday because he thinks my truck isn’t up to it—does that count?”

“Yes.” She nodded earnestly.

“Well, then, yes.”

“W-o-w.” She exaggerated the word into three syllables. “Edward Cullen.”

“I know,” I agreed. ‘Wow’ didn’t even cover it.

“Wait!” Her hands flew up, palms toward me like she was stopping traffic. “He didn’t stay the night, but has he kissed you?”
“No,” I mumbled. “But… I think he wanted to.”

She looked like she might explode with excitement.

“Do you think Saturday…?” She asked expectantly.

“I don’t know. I doubt it.” I could hear the disappointment in my own voice.

“So what did you talk about?” She pushed for more information in a whisper. Class had started but Mr. Varner wasn’t paying close attention and we weren’t the only ones still talking.

“I don’t know, Jess, lots of stuff,” I whispered back.

“Please, Beau,” she begged. “Give me some details.”

“Well… okay, I’ve got one. You should have seen the waiter flirting with him—it was over the top. But Edward didn’t pay any attention to him at all.” Let him make what he could of that.

“That’s a good sign,” she nodded. “Was he hot?”

“Yeah—and probably nineteen or twenty.”

“Even better. He must like you.”

“I think so, but it’s hard to tell. He’s always so cryptic,” I threw that in for his benefit, sighing.

“I don’t know how you’re brave enough to be alone with him,” she breathed.

“What? Why?” I was shocked, but she didn’t understand my reaction.

“He’s so… intimidating. I wouldn’t know what to say to him.” She made a face, probably remembering this morning or last night, when he’d turned the overwhelming force of his eyes on her.

“Honestly, I don’t always know what to say when I’m around him.” I admitted.

“Oh well. He is unbelievably gorgeous.” Jessica shrugged as if this excused any flaws.

“There’s a lot more to him than that.”

“Really? Like what?”

I wished I had let it go. Almost as much as I was hoping he’d been kidding about listening in.

“I can’t explain it right… but he’s more unbelievable behind the face.” The vampire who wanted to be good—who ran around saving people’s lives so he wouldn’t be a monster… I stared toward the front of the room.

“Is that possible?” She giggled.

I didn’t respond, I was falling into my own thoughts.

“So you like him, then?” She said, eagerly.

“Yes,” I answered.

“I mean, do you really like him?” she urged.
“Yes,” I said again, blushing. I hoped that detail wouldn’t register in her thoughts.

She’d had enough with the single syllable answers. “How much do you like him?”

“Too much,” I whispered back. “More than he likes me. But I don’t see how I can help that.” I sighed, one blush blending into the next.

Then, thankfully, Mr. Varner called on Jessica for an answer.

She didn’t get a chance to start on the subject again during class, and as soon as the bell rang, I took evasive action.

“In English, Mike asked me if you said anything about Monday night,” I told her.

“You’re kidding! What did you say?!” she gasped, completely sidetracked.

“I told him you said you had a lot of fun— he looked pleased.”

“Tell me exactly what he said, and your exact answer!”

We spent the rest of the walk dissecting sentence structures and most of Spanish on a minute description of Mike’s facial expressions. I wouldn’t have helped draw it out for as long as I did if I wasn’t worried about the subject returning to me.

And then the bell rang for lunch. As I jumped up out of my seat, shoving my books roughly in my bag, my uplifted expression must have tipped Jessica off.

“You’re not sitting with us today, are you?” she guessed with a sly grin.

“I don’t think so.” I couldn’t be sure that he wouldn’t disappear inconveniently again.

But outside the door to our Spanish class, leaning against the wall— looking more handsome than anyone had a right to— Edward was waiting for me. Jessica took one look and started giggling. She poked me in the side, and departed.

“See you later, Beau.” Her voice sounded thoroughly amused. I had a feeling I would be getting a phone call from her tonight.

“Hello.” His voice was amused and irritated at the same time. He had been listening, it was obvious.

“Hi.”

I couldn’t think of anything else to say, and he didn’t speak— biding his time, I presumed— so it was a quiet walk to the cafeteria. Walking with Edward through the crowded lunchtime rush was a lot like my first day here; everyone stared.

He led the way into the line, still not speaking, though his eyes returned to my face every few seconds, their expression speculative. It seemed to me that irritation was winning out over amusement as the dominant emotion in his face. I fidgeted nervously with the zipper on my jacket.

He stepped up to the counter and filled a tray with food.

“What are you doing?” I objected. “You’re not getting all that for me?”

He shook his head, stepping forward to buy the food.
“Half is for me, of course.”

I raised one eyebrow.

He led the way to the same place we’d sat that one time before. From the other end of the long table, a group of seniors gazed at us in amazement as we sat across from each other. Edward seemed oblivious.

“Take whatever you want,” he said, pushing the tray toward me.

“I’m curious,” I said as I picked up an apple, turning it around in my hands, “what would you do if someone dared you to eat food?”

“You’re always curious.” He grimaced, shaking his head. He glared at me, holding my eyes as he took the apple from my hand. He took a deliberate bite out of it, chewed a mouthful, and then swallowed. I watched; eyes wide.

“If someone dared you to eat dirt, you could, couldn’t you?” he asked.


He laughed. “I suppose I’m not surprised.” Something over my shoulder seemed to catch his attention.

“Jessica’s analyzing everything I do—she’ll break it down for you later.” He handed the apple back to me. The mention of Jessica brought a hint of his former irritation back to his features.

I took a bite of the apple, looking away, knowing he was about to start.

“So the waiter was attractive, was he?” he asked casually.

“He was hot. You really didn’t notice?”

“No. I wasn’t paying attention to him.”

“Poor guy.” I felt pleased.

“Something you said to Jessica… well, it bothers me.” He refused to be distracted. His voice was husky, and he glanced up from under his lashes with troubled eyes.

“I’m not surprised you heard something you didn’t like. You shouldn’t be eavesdropping,” I responded honestly.

“I warned you I would be listening.”

“And I warned you that you didn’t want to know everything I was thinking.”

“You did,” he agreed, but his voice was still rough. “You aren’t precisely right, though. I do want to know what you’re thinking—everything. I just wish… that you wouldn’t be thinking some things.”

I raised an eyebrow. “That’s quite a distinction.”

“But that’s not really the point at the moment.”

“Then what is?” We were leaning toward each other across the table now. He had his large white hands folded under his chin; I leaned forward, my right hand cupped around my neck. I had to
remind myself that we were in a crowded lunchroom, with probably many curious eyes on us. It was too easy to get wrapped up in our own private, tense little bubble.

“Do you truly believe that you care more for me than I do for you?” His voice was barely above a whisper, leaning closer to me as he spoke, his dark golden eyes piercing.

I felt that tingling sensation again, sending currents down my back and limbs. I looked away in an attempt to collect myself.

“You’re doing it again,” I muttered.

His eyes opened wide with surprise. “What?”

“Dazzling me,” I admitted, trying to concentrate as I looked back at him.

“Oh.” He frowned.

“It’s not your fault,” I sighed. “You can’t help it.”

“Are you going to answer the question?”

I looked down. “Yes.”

“Yes, you are going to answer, or yes you really think that?” The irritation was rising in his voice.

“Yes, I really think that.” I sighed. My eyes traced the pattern of the faux wood grains printed on the table laminate. The silence dragged on. I refused to be the one to always break these silences.

Finally he spoke, voice velvet soft. “You’re wrong, Beau.”

I glanced up to see that his eyes were gentle.

“You can’t know that,” I disagreed softly. I shook my head in doubt, thought my heart throbbed at his words and I wanted so badly to believe them.

“What makes you think so?” His golden eyes were penetrating—trying desperately to read my mind; to find the truth.

I stared back, struggling with my thoughts, to find some way to explain. As I searched for the words, I could see him getting impatient; frustrated by my silence, and frustrated that he couldn’t just read my mind and get his answer, he started to scowl. I lifted my hand from my neck, and held up one finger.

“Let me think,” I insisted.

His expression cleared, now that he was satisfied that I was planning to answer. I dropped my hand to the table, moving my left hand so that my palms were pressed together. I stared at my hands, twisting and untwisting my fingers, as I finally spoke.

“Well, aside from the obvious, sometimes…” I hesitated. “I don’t know how to read minds—but sometimes it seems like you’re trying to say goodbye when you’re saying something else.” That was the best way I could sum of the sensation of anguish I detected in his words and eyes at times.

“Perceptive,” he whispered. I felt a sense of disappointment as he confirmed my fears. “That’s exactly why you’re wrong, though,” he began to explain, but then his eyes narrowed. “What do you
mean, ‘the obvious’?

“Well, I mean…” I sighed, “I’m absolutely ordinary. There’s nothing particularly special about me. I’m not the only one in this school who finds you attractive, I’m not exceptionally talented at anything, I’m as interesting as the next guy, but I’m just ordinary—average. Aside from some unfortunate near-death experiences and a talent for tripping over my own feet, I’m not… special.”

His brow creased for a moment, deeply upset, then smoothed as his eyes took on a knowing look. “You don’t see yourself very clearly, you know. I’ll admit you are correct about the bad things,” he chuckled blackly, “but you don’t see how fascinating you really are.”

I blinked a few times, “I don’t believe that.” I mumbled.

“Well, I mean…,” I sighed, “I’m absolutely ordinary. There’s nothing particularly special about me. I’m not the only one in this school who finds you attractive, I’m not exceptionally talented at anything, I’m as interesting as the next guy, but I’m just ordinary—average. Aside from some unfortunate near-death experiences and a talent for tripping over my own feet, I’m not… special.”

His brow creased for a moment, deeply upset, then smoothed as his eyes took on a knowing look. “You don’t see yourself very clearly, you know. I’ll admit you are correct about the bad things,” he chuckled blackly, “but you don’t see how fascinating you really are.”

I blinked a few times, “I don’t believe that.” I mumbled.

“Trust me just this once—you are the opposite of ordinary.”

“Is that true? Or are you just fascinated with me because I’m the one person whose mind you can’t read?” This was something that had been bothering me. I wasn’t trying to be self-deprecating; I just genuinely felt that I was average. I was, for lack of a better word, normal. And Edward was decidedly not. So why, I had to wonder, would a beautiful vampire just randomly choose an average human? The most obvious reason was because Edward couldn’t read my mind.

Edward stared at me, his expression incredulous.

“I’ll admit it does frustrate me that I can’t read your mind,” he began slowly, “but believe me, Beau, you are so much more complicated than you give yourself credit for. You are intelligent and perceptive, you’re remarkably mature,” he started speaking quickly now, “You see those around you in a way most simply don’t. You see the world in a way most are unable.” He sighed, “When I realized I couldn’t read your mind I began searching everyone else’s minds to find out as much about you as I could. Everything I saw only made me sure that you are… one of a kind.” He said finally. “And all those words are not enough to describe why you are anything but ordinary.” He said finally, sounding almost frustrated.

My embarrassment was much stronger than my pleasure at the look that came into his eyes when he said all this. I sat for a moment, stunned. I could feel my heart beating wildly against my chest.

“But… why are you always trying to say goodbye? I’m not saying goodbye.” I pointed out amidst my embarrassment.

“Don’t you see? That’s what proves me right. Don’t you see how much it hurts me to say goodbye to you? Even if just for a night? I care the most, because if I can do it”—he shook his head, seeming to struggle with the thought—“if leaving is the right thing to do, then I’ll hurt myself to keep from hurting you, to keep you safe.”

I glared. “And you don’t think I would do the same?”

“You’d never have to make the choice.”

Abruptly, his unpredictable mood shifted again; a mischievous, devastating smile rearranged his features. “Of course, keeping you safe is beginning to feel like a full-time occupation that requires my constant presence.”

“No one has tried to do away with me today,” I reminded him, grateful for the lighter subject. I couldn’t handle hearing more reasons why he found me ‘the opposite of ordinary’—my heart was still pounding in my chest—and I didn’t want to talk about goodbyes anymore.
“Yet,” he added.

“Yes,” I agreed. “Though I think maybe you’re just looking for an excuse to be around me.” I half-joked.

“Maybe I am.” He smiled.

I turned bright red.

“I have another question for you.” His face was casual, and still smiling.

“Sure.”

“Do you really need to go to Seattle this Saturday, or was that just an excuse to get out of saying no to all your admirers?”

I made a face at the memory. “You know, I haven’t forgiven you for the Tyler thing yet,” I warned him. “It’s your fault that he’s deluded himself into thinking he’s taking me to prom.”

“Oh, he would have found a chance to ask you without me—I just really wanted to watch your face,” he chuckled. I would have been more annoyed if his laughter wasn’t so charming. “If I’d asked you, would you have turned me down?” He asked, still laughing to himself.

“I don’t think I’ll tell you.” I said, curtly. “That’s my revenge.”

He started laughing all over again.

“Oh, you are cruel, aren’t you?” his eyes were bright with amusement.

“Besides, as you like to point out; I have coordination issues. I’m a terrible dancer.” I admitted.

“That wouldn’t be a problem.” He was very confident. “It’s all in the leading.” He could see that I was about to protest, and he cut me off. “But you never told me—are you resolved on going to Seattle, or do you mind if we do something different.”

My mind raced with the many possibilities of ‘something different.’

“I’m open to alternatives,” I allowed. “But I do have a favor to ask.”

He looked wary, as he always did when I asked an open-ended question.

“What?”

“Can I drive?”

He frowned. “Why?”

“Well, mostly because when I told Charlie I was going to Seattle, he specifically asked if I was going alone and, at the time, I was. If he asked again, I probably wouldn’t lie, but I don’t think he will ask again, and leaving my truck at home would just bring up the subject unnecessarily. And also, if I’m being brutally honest here, your driving frightens me.”

He rolled his eyes. “Of all the things about me that could frighten you, you worry about my driving.” He shook his head in disbelief, but then his eyes were serious again. “Won’t you want to tell your father that you’re spending the day with me?” There was an undercurrent to his question that I didn’t understand.
“With Charlie, less is always more.” I said, trying to be vague. Charlie and I had never discussed my love life—I had never had one to discuss, really—but Charlie had thought that maybe I was taking Jess or Angela to the prom so clearly we had never talked about what my theoretical love life would even look like and I knew I couldn’t talk about Edward without betraying my true feelings about him to Charlie.

“Where are we going, anyway?” I asked, trying to change the subject.

“The weather will be nice, so I’ll be staying out of the public eye… and you can stay with me, if you’d like to.” Again, he was leaving the choice up to me.

“And you’ll show me what you meant, about the sun?” I asked, excited by the idea of unraveling another of the unknowns.

“Yes.” He smiled, and then paused. “But if you don’t want to be… alone with me, I’d still rather you didn’t go to Seattle by yourself. I shudder to think of the trouble you could find in a city that size.”

I was miffed. “Phoenix is three times bigger than Seattle—just in population. In physical size—“

“But apparently,” he interrupted me, “your number wasn’t up in Phoenix. So I’d rather you stayed near me.” His eyes did that unfair smoldering thing again.

“Again, I think you’re just trying to make excuses to be together.”

He smiled, guiltily.

“And as I happens,” I continued, “I don’t mind being alone with you.”

“I know,” He sighed, brooding now. “You should tell Charlie, though.”

“Why in the world would I do that?”

His eyes were suddenly fierce. “To give me some small incentive to bring you back.”

He exhaled angrily, and looked away.

“You really should learn to control your temper.” I glared at him.

His eyes snapped to me, he looked surprised.

“I beg your pardon?” He sounded genuinely surprised.

“You should learn to control your temper.” I said it again, with conviction.

He started to look angry again. I imagine it wasn’t often anyone called him out on his temper. Finally, he sighed and started to chuckle to himself.

“You really are remarkable, Beau.” He smiled fondly at me.

I blushed all over again, “Let’s talk about something else.” I stammered.

“What do you want to talk about?” He asked.

I glanced around us, making sure we were well out of anyone’s hearing. As I cast my eyes around the room, I caught the eyes of his sister, Alice, staring at me. The others were looking at Edward. I looked away swiftly, back to him, and I asked the first thing that came to mind.
“Why did you go to that Goat Rocks place last weekend…to hunt? Charlie said it wasn’t a good place to hike, because of bears.”

He stared at me as if I was missing something very obvious.

“Bears?” I gasped, and he smirked. “You know, bears are not in season.” I added sternly, to hide my shock.

“If you read carefully, the laws only cover hunting with weapons,” he informed me.

He watched my face with enjoyment as that slowly sank in.

“Bears?” I repeated with difficulty.

“Grizzly is Emmett’s favorite.” His voice was still off-hand, but his eyes were scrutinizing my reaction. I tried to pull myself together.

“Hmmmm,” I said, taking another bite of the apple as an excuse to look down. I chewed slowly, and then took a long drink of Coke without looking up.

“So,” I said after a moment, finally meeting his now-anxious gaze. “What’s your favorite?”

He raised an eyebrow and the corners of his mouth turned down in disapproval.

“Mountain lion.”

“Ah,” I said in a politely disinterested tone, looking for my soda again.

“Of course,” he said, and his tone mirrored mine, “we have to be careful not to impact the environment with injudicious hunting. We try to focus on areas with an overpopulation of predators —ranging as far away as we need. There’s always plenty of deer and elk here, and they’ll do, but here’s the fun in that?” He smiled teasingly.

“Where indeed,” I murmured around another bite of apple.

“Early spring is Emmett’s favorite bear season—they’re just coming out of hibernation, so they’re more irritable.” He smiled at some remembered joke.

“Nothing more fun than an irritated grizzly bear,” I agreed, nodding.

He snickered, shaking his head. “Tell me what you’re really thinking, please.”

“Honestly, I’m trying to picture it—but I can’t,” I admitted. “How do you hunt a bear without weapons?”

“Oh, we have weapons.” He flashed his bright teeth in a brief, threatening smile. I fought back a shiver before it could expose me. “Just not the kind they consider when writing hunting laws. If you’ve ever seen a bear attack on television, you should be able to visualize Emmett hunting.”

I couldn’t stop the next shiver that flashed down my spine. I peeked across the cafeteria toward Emmett, grateful that he wasn’t looking my way. The thick bands of muscle that wrapped his arms and torso were somehow even more menacing now.

Edward followed my gaze and chuckled. “Don’t let Royal catch you staring. He’s prone to jealousy.” He was probably just teasing me, but I couldn’t be sure.
My eyes snapped back to Edward, unnerved.

“Are you like a bear, too?” I asked in a low voice.

“More like the lion, or so they tell me,” he said lightly. “Perhaps our preferences are indicative.”

I tried to smile. “Perhaps,” I repeated. But my mind was filled with opposing images that I couldn’t merge together. “Is that something I might get to see?”

“Absolutely not!” His face turned even whiter than usual, and his eyes were suddenly furious. I leaned back, stunned and—though I’d never admit it to him—frightened by his reaction.

“Temper, Edward!” I snapped in response.

He leaned back against his chair, and folded his arms across his chest.

“So, what? Too scary for me?” I asked when I could control my voice again.

“If that were it, I would take you out tonight,” he said, his voice cutting. “You need a healthy dose of fear. Nothing could be more beneficial for you.”

“Then why?” I pressed, trying to ignore his poor attitude.

He glared at me for a long minute.

“Later,” he finally said with a sigh. He was on his feet in one lithe movement. “We’re going to be late.”

I glanced around, startled to see that he was right and the cafeteria was nearly vacant. When I was with him, the time and the place just seemed not to matter—like we were in our own world. I jumped up, grabbing my back from the back of my chair.

“Later, then,” I agreed. I wouldn’t forget.
Complications

Everyone watched us as we walked together to our lab table. I noticed that he no longer angled the chair to sit as far from me as the desk would allow. Instead, he sat quite close beside me, our arms almost touching.

Mrs. Banner backed into the room then—what superb timing the woman had—pulling a tall metal frame on wheels that held a heavy-looking, outdated TV and VCR. A movie day—the lift in the class atmosphere was almost tangible.

Mrs. Banner shoved the tape into the reluctant VCR and walked to the wall to turn off the lights.

And then, as the room went black, I was suddenly hyperaware that Edward was sitting less than an inch from me. I was stunned by sudden surge of electricity that flowed through me, amazed that it was possible to me more aware of him than I already was. A crazy impulse to reach over and touch him; to stroke his perfect face in the darkness—hell, to grab him and pull him to me—nearly overwhelmed me. I crossed my arms tightly across my chest, my hands balling into fists. I was losing my mind.

The opening credits began, lighting the room by a token amount. My eyes, of their own accord, flickered to him. I smiled sheepishly as I realized his posture was identical to mine, fists clenched under his arms, right down to the eyes, peering sideways at me. He grinned back, his eyes somehow managing to smolder, even in the dark. I looked away before my urges won over my common sense. It was absolutely ridiculous that I should feel like this in a classroom full of people just because it was dark.

The hour seemed very long. I couldn’t concentrate on the movie—I didn’t even know what subject it was on. I tried unsuccessfully to relax, but the electric current that seemed to be originating from somewhere between us, pulling our bodies together, never slackened. It was a deep ache to close the small space between us, an urge to touch him, to feel his body on mine. My throat ran dry and I took a deep breath, trying to calm myself down. Occasionally I would permit myself a quick glance in his direction, but he never seemed to relax, either. The overpowering craving to touch him refused to fade and I crushed my fists safely against my ribs until my fingers were aching with the effort.

I breathed a sigh of relief when Ms. Banner flicked the lights back on at the end of class, and stretched my arms out in front of me, flexing my stiff fingers. Edward chuckled beside me.

“Well, that was interesting,” he murmured. His voice and his eyes were cautious.

“Umm, yeah,” was all I was able to respond.

“Shall we?” he asked, rising fluidly.

I almost groaned. Time for Gym. I stood with care, deeply affected by the strange new intensity between us.

He walked me to my next class in silence and paused at the door; I turned to say goodbye. His face startled me—his expression was torn, almost pained, and so fiercely beautiful that the ache to touch him flared as strong before. My goodbye stuck in my throat.

He raised his hand, hesitant, conflict raging in his eyes, and then he gently brushed the length of my cheekbone with his fingertips. His skin was icy as ever, but the trail his fingers left on my skin was alarmingly warm—like I’d been burned, but I didn’t feel the pain of it yet.
He turned without a word and strode quickly away from me.

I walked into gym, feeling lightheaded and unsteady. I drifted to the locker room, changing in a trancelike state, only vaguely aware that there were other people surrounding me. My head started to clear only when someone handed me a racket. I could see a few of the other kids in class eyeing me furtively. Coach Clapp ordered us to pair into teams.

Mercifully, Mike was feeling kind; he came to stand beside me.

“Do you want to be a team?”

“Thanks, Mike—you don’t have to do this, you know.” I grimaced apologetically.

“Don’t worry, I’ll keep out of your way.” He grinned. Sometimes it was so easy to like Mike.

It didn’t go smoothly. I somehow managed to hit myself in the head with my racket and clip Mike’s shoulder on the same swing. I spent the rest of the hour in the back corner of the court, the racket held safely behind my back. Despite being handicapped by me, Mike was pretty good; he won three games out of four singlehandedly. He gave me an unearned high five when the coach finally blew the whistle ending class.

“So,” he said as we walked off the court.

“So what?”

“You and Cullen, huh?” he asked, his tone rebellious. My previous feelings of affection started to dissipate.

“Yeah, I guess.” I answered shortly. I assumed Jessica had told Mike everything she knew.

“I don’t like it,” he muttered.

“You don’t have to,” I shrugged.

“You don’t have to,” I shrugged.

“He looks at you like… like you’re something to eat,” he continued, ignoring me.

I choked back the hysteria that threatened to explode, but a small giggle managed to slip out despite my efforts. He glowered at me. I fled to the locker room.

I showered quickly, something stronger than butterflies battering recklessly against the walls of my stomach, my argument with Mike already a distant memory. I was thinking about that electric feeling; that urge. I made my shower a cold one.

As I dressed, I wondered if Edward would be waiting, or if I should meet him at his car. What if his family was there? I felt a wave of real terror. Did they know that I knew? Was I supposed to know that they knew that I knew, or not?

By the time I walked out of the gym, I had just about decided to walk straight home without even looking toward the parking lot. But my worries were unnecessary. Edward was waiting, leaning casually against the side of he gym, his breathtaking face untroubled now. As I walked to his side, I felt a peculiar sense of release.

“Hi,” I breathed, smiling hugely.

“Hello.” His answering smile was brilliant. “How was Gym?”

“Really?” He was unconvinced. His eyes shifted their focus slightly, looking over my shoulder and narrowing. I glanced behind me to see Mike’s back as he walked away.

“What?” I demanded.

His eyes slid back to mind, still tight. “Newton’s getting on my nerves.”

“Edward, were you listening again?” I asked, appalled—my good mood spoiled.

“How’s your head?” he asked innocently.

“You’re unbelievable.” Rolling my eyes, I turned and walked away in the direction of the parking lot, though I hadn’t ruled out walking at this point.

He kept up with me easily.

“You were the one who mentioned how I’d never seen you in Gym—it made me curious.” He didn’t sound sorry, so I kept walking.

We walked in silence to his car, I felt embarrassed and I didn’t want to talk. I had to stop a few feet away from his car, a crowd of people were surrounding it. Then I realized they weren’t surrounding the Volvo, they were actually circled around Royal’s red convertible, unmistakable lust in their eyes. None of them even looked up as Edward slid between them to open his door. I climbed quickly in the passenger side, also unnoticed.

“Ostentatious,” he muttered.

“What kind of car is that?” I asked.

“An M3.”

“Sorry, that doesn’t mean anything to me.” I shrugged.

“It’s a BMW.” He rolled his eyes, but he was smirking. He backed out carefully, trying not to run over the car enthusiasts.

I nodded—I’d heard of that one.

“Are you still angry with me?” he asked as he carefully maneuvered his way out.

“I’m not happy.”

He sighed. “Will you forgive me if I apologize?”

“Maybe… if you mean it. And if you promise not to do it again,” I insisted.

His eyes were suddenly shrewd. “How about if I mean it, and I agree to let you drive Saturday?” he countered my conditions.

I considered, and decided it wasn’t a bad offer. “Deal,” I agreed.

“Then I’m very sorry, Beau. I didn’t mean to upset you.” His eyes burned with sincerity, and I couldn’t help but smile a little. His eyes turned playful in response, “I’ll be on your doorstep bright and early Saturday morning.”
“Um, it doesn’t help with the Charlie situation if an unexplained Volvo is left in the driveway.”

His smile was bordering on condescending now. “I wasn’t intending to bring a car.”

“How—“

He cut me off. “Don’t worry about it. I’ll be there, no car.”

I let it go. I had a more pressing question.

“Is it later yet?” I asked significantly.

He frowned. “I suppose it is later.”

I kept my expression polite as I waited.

He stopped the car. I looked up, surprised—of course we were already at Charlie’s house, parked behind the truck. It was easier to ride with him if I only looked when it was over. When I looked back at him, he was staring at me, measuring me with his eyes.

“And you still want to know why you can’t see me hunt?” He seemed solemn, but I thought I saw a trace of humor deep in his eyes.

“Well,” I clarified, “I was mostly wondering about your reaction.”

“Did I frighten you?” Yes, there was definitely humor there.

“A bit.”

“I apologize for scaring you,” My honesty must have caught him off guard, because all evidence of teasing disappeared. “It was just the very thought of you being there… while we hunted.” His jaw tightened.

“That would be bad?”

He spoke from between clenched teeth. “Extremely.”

“What,”?"

He took a deep breath and stared through the windshield at the thick, rolling clouds that seemed to press down, almost within reach.

“When we hunt,” he spoke slowly, unwillingly, “we give ourselves over to our senses… govern less with our minds. Especially our sense of smell. If you were anywhere near me when I lost control that way…” He shook his head, still gazing morosely at the heavy clouds.

I kept my expression firmly under control, expecting the swift flash of his eyes to judge my reaction that soon followed. My face gave nothing away.

But our eyes held, and the silence deepened—and changed. Flickers of the electricity I’d felt this afternoon began to charge the atmosphere as he gazed unrelentingly into my eyes. My body was filled with the current, and I felt my breath catch in my throat as my pulse quickened. I took a deeper breath, and he closed his eyes.

“Beau, I think you should go inside now.” His low voice was rough, his eyes remained closed.
“Yeah, me too.” I breathed in response.

I opened the door, and the arctic draft that burst into the car helped clear my head. I stepped slowly out of the car and shut the door behind me without looking back. The whir of the automatic window unrolling made me turn.

“Oh, Beau?” he called after me, his voice more even. He leaned toward the open window with a faint smile on his lips.

“Yes?”

“Tomorrow it’s my turn.”

“Your turn to what?”

He smiled wider, flashing his gleaming teeth. “Ask the questions.”

And then he was gone, the car speeding down the street and disappearing around the corner before I could even collect my thoughts. I smiled as I walked into the house. It was clear he was planning to see me tomorrow, which pleased me.

That night Edward starred in my dreams, as usual. However, the climate of my unconsciousness had changed. It thrilled with the same electricity that had charged the afternoon, and I tossed and turned restlessly, waking often feeling hot and unsettled. It was only in the early hours of the morning that I finally sank into an exhausted, dreamless sleep.

When I woke I was still tired, but edgy as well. I pulled on my brown sweater and jeans, sighing as I daydreamed of tank tops and shorts. Breakfast was the usual, quiet event I expected. Charlie fried eggs for himself; I had my bowl of cereal. I wondered if he had forgotten about this Saturday. He answered my unspoken question as he stood up to take his plate to the sink.

“About this Saturday…,” he began, walking across the kitchen and turning on the faucet.

I cringed. “Yes, Dad?”

“Are you still set on going to Seattle?” he asked.

“That was the plan.” I grimaced, wishing he hadn’t brought it up. Today I was too tired to carefully construct half-truths. I couldn’t lie today.

He squeezed some dish soap into his plate and swirled it around with the brush. “And you’re sure you can’t make it back in time for the dance?”

“I’m not going to the dance, Dad.” I sighed.

“Didn’t you ask anyone?” he asked, trying to hide his concern by focusing on rinsing the plate.

This was a question I had been nervous for. I sidestepped. “Uh… It’s a girl’s choice.”

“Didn’t anyone ask you, then?” He countered.

“Well…” I felt uneasy, “I mean, technically… yeah.”

“So why’d you say no?” Charlie asked, trying desperately to seem casual. “Did you not like her?”

“Well,” I swallowed. I felt knots in my stomach. I felt the panic rise in my chest, but I stopped myself
with the simple thought that I’ve literally survived two near-death experiences. I could handle this next moment. “I don’t like girls.”

Charlie laughed, “You sound like you’re five again.”

“No, Dad,” I sighed, taking a deep breath, “I just don’t like…girls.” I placed as much emphasis as I could on the word. Charlie caught what I had meant this time. I waited, practically holding my breath.

He didn’t say anything at first, his hands were still holding onto his plate and the dish brush. Well, this was great. I knew dropping something like this on poor Charlie over breakfast wasn’t the best idea, but for some reason I felt like I needed to say it. It needed to be out in the open now. Even if I didn’t mention Edward, I needed Charlie to know.

“Dad?” I felt my throat go dry.

“Yeah?” He said, like I had interrupted him while he was deep in thought.

“Do you… understand what I mean?”

“Yeah, Beau. I do.” I heard him set down his plate.

“Okay.” Was all I could manage to say. I decided to go upstairs and finish getting ready. I stood slowly and turned to leave.

“Beau?” Charlie called.

I turned around and he was standing right in front of me. He pulled me into a tight hug and he held me there for a long moment. I felt relief wash over me as he held me tightly. We hadn’t hugged like this in years, and he didn’t have to say a word for me to know that everything was okay. He broke the embrace and put his hands on my shoulders. He looked me straight in the eyes, very seriously now.

“Did any boys ask you?”

“Um. Two?” I spluttered in response, confused.

“And you said no?”

“Right.”

“You didn’t say no because you were afraid how people would react did you?” He was very serious now.

“No,” I answered, “I didn’t want to go with who asked me. Also the dancing thing.”

“You listen to me, Beau; I never want you to feel like you can’t be yourself.” His voice was adamant, “If anyone gives you even a lick of trouble they’ll have me to deal with,” He squeezed my shoulders, “You understand?”

I couldn’t say anything, I just hugged Charlie again. He patted my back, and cleared his throat.

“Love you, son.”

“Love you too, Dad.”
Charlie left after a moment, with a goodbye wave, and I went upstairs to brush my teeth and gather my books. When I heard the cruiser pull away, I sighed. When I had told my mom she had been over the top in her understanding and excitement. Even going so far as to point out cute boys my age when we’d go out. I, of course, appreciated her support and loved her for it, but we decided to wait and tell Charlie. My mom felt he could handle it; she called Charlie a ‘very open-minded, free-wheeling man’ and said it was part of why she fell in love with him in the first place. I just wasn’t ready. I only saw Charlie for two weeks a year. I had always worried that Forks was too small a town, and he wouldn’t be able to handle it. I was wrong, not only did he handle it better than I thought, he supported me. My happiness was slightly marred by the fact that I doubted he would be as accepting if he knew the true nature of who我喜欢.

I glanced at the clock and realized the time, I peeked out my window. The silver car was there, waiting in Charlie’s spot on the driveway. I bounded down the stairs and out the front door, in high spirits.

He waited in the car, not appearing to watch as I shut the door behind me without bothering to lock the deadbolt. I walked to the car, opened the door, and stepped in. He was smiling, relaxed—and, as usual, perfectly beautiful.

“Good morning.” His voice was silky. “How are you today?” His eyes roamed over my face, as if his question was more than simple courtesy. “You seem to be very happy?”

“I am.” I smiled, widely. “It was a good morning.” I said simply.

His gaze lingered on the circles under my eyes. “But not a good night.”

“I couldn’t sleep,” I confessed with a shrug, even that wasn’t going to bring me down today.

“Neither could I,” he teased as he started the engine. I was becoming used to the quiet purr. I was sure the roar of my truck would scare me, whenever I got to drive it again.

I laughed. “I guess that’s right. I suppose I slept just a little bit more than you did.”

“I’d wager you did.”

“So what did you do last night?”

He chuckled. “Not a chance. It’s my day to ask questions.”

“Oh, that’s right.” I smiled, “You’re lucky I’m in such a good mood. Ask away.”

I couldn’t imagine what might be particularly interesting to him.

“What’s your favorite color?” he asked, his face grave.

I stared at him, confused for a moment. Then I laughed. “I don’t know, it changes from day to day.”

“What’s your favorite color today?” He was still solemn.

“Uh, probably brown.” I tended to dress according to my mood.

He snorted, dropping his serious expression. “Brown?” he asked skeptically.

“Sure. Brown is warm. I miss brown. Everything that’s supposed to be brown—tree trunks, rocks, dirt—is all covered up in green stuff here,” I explained.
He seemed fascinated by my explanation. He considered for a moment, staring into my eyes.

“You’re right,” he decided, serious again. “Brown is warm.” He reached over, swiftly, but somehow still hesitantly, to smooth back my hair. I couldn’t help but smile at how strange he made simple gestures like that.

We were at the school by now. He turned back to me as he pulled into a parking space.

“What music is in your CD player right now?” he asked, his face as somber as if he’d asked for a murder confession.

I realized I’d never removed the CD Phil had given me. When I said the name of the band, he smiled crookedly, a peculiar expression in his eyes. He flipped open a compartment under his car’s CD player, pulled out one of thirty or so CDs that were jammed into the small space, and handed it to me.

“Debussy to this?” He raised an eyebrow.

It was the same CD. I examined the familiar cover art, keeping my eyes down.

It continued like that for the rest of the day. While he walked me to English, when he met me after Spanish, all through the lunch hour, he questioned me relentlessly about every insignificant detail of my existence. Movies I’d liked and hated, the few places I’d been and the many places I wanted to go, and books—endlessly books.

I couldn’t remember the last time I’d talked so much. More often than not, I felt self-conscious, certain I must be boring him. But the absolute absorption of his face, and his never-ending stream of questions, compelled me to continue. Mostly his questions were easy, only a very few triggering my easy blushes. But when I did flush, it brought on a whole new round of questions.

Such as the time he asked my favorite gemstone, and I blurted out topaz before thinking. He’d been flinging questions at me with such speed that I felt like I was taking one of those psychiatric tests where you answer with the first word that comes to mind. I was sure he would have continued down whatever mental list he was following, except for the blush. My face reddened because, until very recently, my favorite gemstone was garnet. It was impossible, while staring back into his golden-hued eyes, not to remember the reason for the switch. And, naturally, he wouldn’t rest until I’d admitted why I was embarrassed.

“Tell me,” he finally pleaded after persuasion failed.

“It’s the color of your eyes today,” I sighed, surrendering, staring down at my hands as I fiddled with a piece of my hair. “I suppose if you asked me in two weeks I’d say onyx.” I’d given more information than necessary in my unwilling honesty. But it was too late now.

But his pause was very short.

“What kinds of flowers do you prefer?” he fired off.

I sighed in relief, and continued with the psychoanalysis.

Biology was a complication again. Edward had continued with his quizzing up until Ms. Banner entered the room, dragging the audiovisual frame again. As the teacher approached the light switch, I noticed Edward slide his chair slightly farther away from mine. It didn’t help. As soon as the room was dark, there was the same electric spark, the same restless craving to stretch my hand across the short space and touch his cold skin, as yesterday.
I leaned forward on the table, resting my chin on my folded arms, my hidden fingers gripping the table’s edge as I fought to ignore the irrational, burning longing that unsettled me. I didn’t look at him, afraid that if he was looking at me, it would only make self-control that much harder. I sincerely tried to watch the movie, but at the end of the hour I had no idea what I’d just seen. I sighed in relief again when Ms. Banner turned the lights on, finally glancing at Edward; he was looking at me, his eyes ambivalent.

He rose in silence, and then stood still, waiting for me. We walked toward the gym in silence, like yesterday. And, also like yesterday, he touched my face wordlessly—this time with the back of his cool hand, stroking once from my temple to my jaw—before he turned and walked away.

Gym passed quickly as I watched Mike’s one-man badminton show. He didn’t speak to me today, either in response to my vacant expression or because he was still angry about our squabble yesterday. Somewhere, in a corner of my mind, I felt bad about that. But I couldn’t concentrate on him.

I hurried to clean up and change afterward, ill at ease, knowing the faster I moved, the sooner I would see Edward. The pressure made me more clumsy than usual, but eventually I made it out the door, feeling the same release when I saw him standing there, a wide smile automatically spreading across my face. He smiled in reaction before launching into more cross-examination.

His questions were different now, though, not as easily answered. He wanted to know what I missed about home, insisting on descriptions of anything he wasn’t familiar with. We sat in front of Charlie’s house for hours, as the sky darkened and rain plummeted around us in a sudden deluge.

I tried to describe impossible things like the scent of creosote—bitter, slightly resinous, but still pleasant—the high, keening sound of the cicadas in July, the feathery barrenness of the trees, the very size of the sky, extending white-blue from horizon to horizon, barely interrupted by the low mountains covered with purple volcanic rock. The hardest thing to explain was why it was so beautiful to me—to justify a beauty that didn’t depend on sparse, spiny vegetation that often looked half dead, a beauty that had more to do with the exposed shape of the land, with the shallow bowls of valleys between the craggy hills, and the way they held on to the sun. I found myself using my hands as I tried to describe it to him.

His quiet, probing questions kept me talking freely, forgetting, in the dim light of the storm, to feel self-conscious for monopolizing the conversation. Finally, when I had finished detailing my cluttered room at home, he paused instead of responding with another question.

“Are you finished?” I asked in relief.

“Not even close—but your father will be home soon.”

“Charlie!” I suddenly remembered we were sitting in front of his house, and sighed. I looked out at the rain-darkened sky, but it gave nothing away. “How late is it?” I wondered out loud as I glanced at the clock. I was surprised by the time—Charlie would be driving home now.

“It’s twilight,” Edward murmured, looking at the western horizon, obscured as it was with clouds. His voice was thoughtful, as if his mind were somewhere far away. I stared at him as he gazed unseeingly out the windshield.

I was still staring when his eyes suddenly shifted back to mine.

“It’s the safest time of the day for us,” he said, answering the unspoken question in my eyes. “The easiest time. But also the saddest, in a way…the end of another day, the return of the night. Darkness
is so predictable, don’t you think?” He smiled wistfully.

“I like the night. Without the dark, we’d never see the stars.” I frowned. “Not that you see them here much.”

He laughed, and the mood abruptly lightened.

“Charlie will be here in a few minutes. So, unless you want to tell him that you’ll be with me Saturday…” He raised one eyebrow.

“I don’t think he’s ready for that.” I gathered my books, realizing I was stiff from sitting still so long. “So is it my turn tomorrow, then?”

“Certainly not!” His face was teasingly outraged. “I told you I wasn’t done, didn’t I?”

“What more is there?”

“You’ll find out tomorrow.” He reached across to open my door for me, and his sudden proximity sent my heart into a frenzy. He grew incredibly still, so close to me. He looked deeply into my eyes. He suddenly stiffened.

“Not good,” he muttered.

“What is it?” I was surprised to see that his jaw was clenched, his eyes disturbed.

He glanced me up and down, and sighed. “Another complication,” he said glumly.

He flung the door open in one swift movement, and then moved reluctantly away from me.

The flash of headlights through the rain caught my attention as a dark car pulled up to the curb just a few feet away, facing us.

“Charlie’s around the corner,” he warned, staring through the downpour at the other vehicle.

I hopped out at once, despite my confusion and curiosity. The rain was louder as it glanced off my jacket.

I tried to make out the shapes in front seat of the other car, but it was too dark. I could see Edward illuminated in the glare of the new car’s headlights; he was still staring ahead, his gaze locked on something or someone I couldn’t see. His expression was a strange mix of frustration and defiance.

Then he revved the engine, and the tires squealed against the wet pavement. The Volvo was out of sight in seconds.

“Hey, Beau,” called a familiar, husky voice from the driver’s side of the little black car.

“Jacob?” I asked, squinting through the rain. Just then, Charlie’s cruiser swung around the corner, his lights shining on the occupants of the car in front of me.

Jacob was already climbing out, his wide grin visible even through the darkness. In the passenger seat was a much older man, a sturdy-looking man with a memorable face—a face that overflowed, the cheeks resting against his shoulders, with creases running through the russet skin like an old leather jacket. And the surprisingly familiar eyes, black eyes that seemed at the same time both too young and too ancient for the broad face they were set in. Jacob’s father, Billy Black. I knew him immediately, though in the more than five years since I’d seen him last, I’d managed to forget his name when Charlie had spoken of him my first day here. He was staring at me, scrutinizing my face,
so I smiled tentatively at him. His eyes were wide, as if in shock or fear, his nostrils flared. My smile faded.

Another complication, Edward had said.

Billy still stared at me with intense, anxious eyes. I groaned internally. Had Billy recognized Edward so easily? Could he really believe the impossible legends his son had scoffed at?

The answer was clear in Billy’s eyes. Yes. Yes, he could.
“Billy!” Charlie called as soon as he got out of the car. I turned toward the house, beckoning to Jacob as I ducked under the porch. I heard Charlie greeting them loudly behind me.

“I’m going to pretend I didn’t see you behind the wheel, Jake,” he said disapprovingly.

“I just got my license, Charlie!” Jacob said while I unlocked the door and flicked on the porch light.

“Oh, did you?” Charlie laughed.

“About time. I had to get around somehow.” I recognized Billy’s resonant voice easily, despite the years. The sound of it made me feel suddenly younger, a child.

I went inside, leaving the door open behind me and turning on the lights before I hung up my jacket. Then I stood in the door, watching anxiously as Charlie and Jacob helped Billy out of the car and into wheelchair.

I backed out of the way as the three of them hurried in, shaking off the rain.

“This is a surprise,” Charlie was saying.

“It’s been too long,” Billy answered. “I hope it’s not a bad time.” His dark eyes flashed up to me again, their expression unreadable.

“No, it’s great. I hope you can stay for the game.”

Jacob grinned. “I think that’s the plan—our TV broke yesterday.”

Billy made a face at his son. “And, of course, Jacob was anxious to see Beau again,” he added. Jacob scowled and ducked his head while I fought back a smile. I couldn’t help but feel flattered by it.

“Are you hungry?” I asked, gesturing toward the kitchen. Despite wanting to see Jacob, I was eager to escape Billy’s searching gaze.

“Naw, we ate just before we came,” Jacob answered.

“How about you, Charlie?” I called over my shoulder as I turned and fled around the corner.

“Sure,” he replied, his voice moving in the direction of the front room and the TV. I could hear Billy’s chair follow.

The grilled cheese sandwiches were in the frying pan and I was about to slice up a tomato when I sensed someone behind me.

“So, how are things?” Jacob asked.

“Pretty good.” I smiled. His warmth and charm were hard to resist.

“It’s good to see you again, Beau.” He pulled me into a hug.

“It’s good to see you too, Jake.” I laughed, hugging him back. “So how are you? Did you finish your car?” I asked, looking up at his smiling face.
“No.” He frowned. “I still need parts. We borrowed that one.” He pointed his thumb in the direction of the front yard.

“Sorry. I haven’t seen any… what was it you were looking for?”

“Master cylinder.” He grinned. “Is something wrong with the truck?”

“No.” I said, turning back to the sandwiches.

“Oh. I just wondered because you weren’t driving it.”

I stared down at the pan, pulling up the edge of a sandwich to check the bottom side. “I got a ride with a friend.”

“Nice ride.” Jacob’s voice was admiring. “I didn’t recognize the driver, though. I thought I knew most of the kids around here.”

I nodded noncommittally, keeping my eyes down as I flipped sandwiches.

“My dad seemed to know him from somewhere.”

“Jake, could you hand me some plates? They’re in the cupboard over the sink.”

“Sure.”

He got the plates in silence. I hoped he would let it drop now.

“So who was it?” he asked, setting two plates on the counter next to me.

I sighed in defeat. “Edward Cullen.”

To my surprise, he laughed. I glanced up at him. He looked a little embarrassed.

“Guess that explains it, then,” he said. “I wondered why my dad was acting so strange.”

“That’s right.” I tried to look innocent. “He doesn’t like the Cullens.”

“Superstitious old man,” Jacob muttered under his breath.

“You don’t think he’d say anything to Charlie?” I couldn’t help asking, the words coming out in a low rush.

Jacob stared at me for a moment, and I couldn’t read the expression in his dark eyes. “I doubt it,” he finally answered. “I think Charlie chewed him out pretty good last time. They haven’t spoken much since—tonight is sort of reunion, I think. I don’t think he’d bring it up again.”

“Oh,” I said, feeling relieved.

We stood in silence for a moment as I plated the sandwiches.

“So,” Jacob finally said, “could I convince you to hang out and watch the game?” He kicked his feet. “If you want to, I mean. If you have stuff to do…”

I couldn’t help but smile. “I’d love to, Jake.”

He grinned back at me.
I carried the food out to Charlie, trying to keep up with the game, but mostly just chatting with Jacob. Every once in a while, I would eavesdrop, watching for any sign that Billy was about to rat me out, trying to think of ways to stop him if he began.

Despite enjoying Jacob’s company, it was a long night. I had a lot of homework that was going undone, but I was afraid to leave Billy alone with Charlie. Eventually, the game ended.

“Are you and your friends coming back to the beach soon?” Jacob asked as he pushed his father over the lip of the threshold.

“I’m not sure,” I shrugged, “but you know you can always come visit me here.” I smiled warmly.

Jacob grinned widely.

“That was fun, Charlie,” Billy said.

“Come up for the next game,” Charlie encouraged.

“Sure, sure,” Billy said. “We’ll be here. Have a good night.” His eyes shifted to mine, and his smile disappeared. “You take care, Beau,” he added seriously.

“Thanks,” I muttered, looking away. Billy’s gaze felt heavy.

I headed for the stairs while Charlie waved from the doorway.

“Wait, Beau,” he said.

I stiffened. Had Billy gotten something in while I wasn’t paying attention?

But Charlie was relaxed, still grinning from the unexpected visit.

“I didn’t get a chance to talk to you tonight. How was your day?”

“Oh, good.” I smiled, thinking of what details were safe to share. “My badminton team won all four games.”

“Wow, I didn’t know you could play badminton.”

“Well, actually I can’t, but my partner is really good,” I admitted.

“Who is it?” he asked with token interest.

“Mike Newton,” I answered.

“Oh yeah—you said you were friends with the Newton kid.” He perked up. “Nice family.” He mused for a minute. “Was he one of the boys who asked you?”

“Dad,” I sighed. “He’s kind of dating my friend Jessica. Besides, you know I can’t dance.”

“Oh yeah,” he muttered. Then he smiled at me apologetically. “Sorry, Beau.”

“Don’t be sorry, Dad.” I smiled a little, “I appreciate you asking, though.”

“Well,” Charlie always got awkward during sentimental moments, “I guess it’s good you’ll be gone Saturday… I’ve made plans to go fishing with the guys from the station. The weather’s supposed to be real warm. But if you wanted to put your trip off till someone could go with you, I’d stay home. I
know I leave you here alone too much.”

“Dad, you’re doing a great job.” I smiled. “I’ve never minded being alone—I’m too much like you.” I laughed, and he smiled his crinkly-eyed smile.

I slept better that night, too tired to dream again. When I woke to the pearl gray morning, my mood was blissful. I had enjoyed my evening with Jacob, and the tenseness Billy had brought with him seemed harmless now; I decided to forget it completely. I caught myself humming while I was mussing with my hair, and later again as I walked down the stairs. Charlie noticed.

“You’re cheerful this morning,” he commented over breakfast.

I shrugged. “It’s Friday.”

I hurried so I would be ready to go the second Charlie left. I had my bag ready, shoes on, teeth brushed, but even though I rushed to the door as soon as I was sure Charlie would be out of sight, Edward was faster. He was waiting in his shiny car, windows down, engine off.

I climbed in the passenger side quickly, eager to see his face. He grinned his crooked smile at me, making my heart beat faster. I couldn’t imagine anyone more handsome. There was nothing about him that could be improved upon.

“How did you sleep?” he asked. I wondered if he had any idea how appealing his voice was. I was sure he did.

“Fine, thanks. How was your night?”

“Pleasant.” His smile was amused; I felt like I was missing an inside joke.

“Can I ask what you did?” I asked.

“No.” He grinned. “Today is still mine.”

He wanted to know about people today: more about Renée, her hobbies, what we’d done in our free time together. And then the one grandfather I’d known, my few school friends—embarrassing me when he asked about boys I’d dated. I was relieved that I’d never really dated anyone, so that particular conversation couldn’t last long. He seemed as surprised as Jessica and Angela by my lack of romantic history.

“So you never met anyone you wanted?” he asked in a serious tone that made me wonder what he was thinking about.

“Well, that’s really a different question, isn’t it?” I joked. He didn’t look amused, so I sighed and decided to be honest. “Not in Phoenix.”

His lips pressed together into a hard line.

We were in the cafeteria at this point. The day had sped by in the blur that was rapidly becoming routine. I took advantage of his brief pause to take a bite of my bagel.

“I should have let you drive yourself today,” he announced, apropos of nothing, while I chewed.

“Why?”

“I’m leaving with Alice after lunch.” He said softly, looking guilty.
“Oh.” I blinked, a bit disappointed. “That’s okay, it’s not that far of a walk.”

He frowned at me impatiently. “I’m not going to make you walk home just because I was selfish today.”

“How were you selfish?” I questioned.

“I knew I was leaving after lunch, and I still wanted to spend as much time with you this morning. I should have let you drive yourself.” He mused, “But I’m a horrifically selfish creature and I enjoy your presence too much.” He grinned down at me.

I blushed, “It’s really okay, I don’t mind walking.”

“I already told you, I’m not going to make you walk. We’ll go get your truck and leave it here for you.”

“I don’t have my key with me,” I sighed.

He shook his head. “Your truck will be here, and the key will be in the ignition—unless you’re afraid someone might steal it.” He laughed at the thought.

“Hey, respect the truck.” I pursed me lips. I was pretty sure my key was in the picket of a pair of jeans I wore Wednesday, under a pile of clothes in the laundry room. Even if he broke into my house, or whatever he was planning, he’d never find it. He seemed to sense my doubt and took it as a challenge. He smirked, overconfident.

“So where are you going?” I asked casually.

“Hunting,” he answered grimly. “If I’m going to be alone with you tomorrow, I’m going to take whatever precautions I can.” His face grew morose…and pleading. “You can always cancel, you know.”

I looked down, afraid of the persuasive power of his eyes. I refused to be convinced to leave him alone. I was too stubborn to run away in the face of fear. The danger was real and I was always aware of it, but again, I chose to trust Edward. Not because of what he was, but despite it.

“Nope,” I said softly, glancing back his face. “I can’t.”

“Perhaps you’re right,” he murmured bleakly. His eyes seemed to darken in color as I watched.

I changed the subject to keep him from brooding. “What time will I see you tomorrow?” I asked, excitement evident in my voice.

“That depends… It’s a Saturday, don’t you want to sleep in?” he offered.

“No,” I answered too fast. I sighed. “Honestly, I’d like as much time with you outside of school as I can get.”

He restrained a smile. “The same time as usual, then,” he decided. “Will Charlie be there?”

“No, he’s fishing tomorrow.” I was pleased at how conveniently things had worked out.

His voice turned sharp. “And if you don’t come home, what will he think?”

“I have no idea,” I answered coolly. “He knows I’ve been meaning to do the laundry. Maybe he’ll think I fell in the washer.”
He scowled at me and I teased him by scowling back.

“What are you hunting tonight?” I asked when I grew tired of scowling.

“Whatever we find in the park. We aren’t going far.” He seemed bemused by my casual reference to his secret realities.

“Why are you going with Alice?” I wondered.

“Alice is the most… supportive.” He frowned as he spoke.

“And the others?” I asked nervously. “What are they?”

His brow puckered for a brief moment. “Incredulous, for the most part.”

I peeked quickly behind me at his family. They sat staring off in different directions, exactly the same as the first time I’d seen them. Only now they were four; their beautiful, bronze-haired brother sat across from me, his golden eyes troubled.

“They don’t like me,” I guessed.

“That’s not it,” he disagreed, but his eyes were too innocent. “They don’t understand why I can’t leave you alone.”

I sighed. “Neither do I, for that matter.”

Edward shook his head slowly, rolling his eyes toward the ceiling before he met my gaze again. “I told you—you don’t see yourself clearly at all. You’re not like anyone I’ve ever known. You fascinate me.”

I narrowed my eyes at him, wondering if he was teasing me.

He smiled as he deciphered my expression. “Having the advantages I do,” he murmured, touching his forehead discreetly, “I have a better than average grasp of human nature. People are predictable. But you… You never do what I expect. You always take me by surprise.”

I looked away, my eyes wandering back to his family, feeling embarrassed. I couldn’t help feel a little disappointed, too, but I wasn’t sure why.

“That part is easy enough to explain,” he continued. I felt his eyes on my face but I couldn’t look at him yet, afraid he might read the chagrin in my eyes. “But there’s more… and it’s not so easy to put into words—“

I was still staring at the Cullens while he spoke. Suddenly Royal, his blond and breathtaking brother, turned to look at me. No, not to look—to glare, with dark, cold eyes. I wanted to look away, but his gaze held me until Edward broke off mid-sentence and made an angry noise under his breath. It was almost a hiss.

Royal turned his head, and I was relieved to be free. I looked back at Edward—and I knew he could see the confusion and fear that widened my eyes.

His face was tight as he explained. “I’m sorry about that. He’s just worried. You see… it’s dangerous for more than just me if, after spending so much time with you so publicly…” he looked down.

“If?”
“If this ends... badly.” He dropped his head into his hands, as he had that night in Port Angeles. His anguish was plain; I wanted to comfort him, but I didn’t know how to begin. My hand reached toward him involuntarily; quickly, though, I dropped it to the table, fearing that my touch might only make things worse. I realized how conflicted I felt because his words frightened me, but I still felt an ache for his pain.

And I felt frustration—frustration that Royal had interrupted whatever he was about to say. I didn’t know how to bring it up again. He still had his head in his hands.

I tried to speak in a normal voice. “And you have to leave now?”

“Yes.” He raised his face; it was serious for a moment, and then his mood shifted and he smiled. “It’s probably for the best. We still have fifteen minutes of that wretched movie left to endure in Biology—I don’t think I could any more.”

Something about his tone made me wonder if he meant the movie, or that delightfully agonizing electricity that charged the room when the lights were off.

I started from my thoughts, suddenly. Alice—her short, inky hair in perfectly styled finger waves complimenting her delicate, elfin face—was suddenly behind his shoulder. Her slight frame was willowy, graceful even in absolute stillness.

He greeted her without looking away from me. “Alice.”

“Edward,” she answered, her high soprano voice was almost as beautiful as his.

“Alice, Beau—Beau, Alice,” he introduced us, gesturing casually with his hand, a wry smile on his face.

“Hello, Beau.” Her brilliant obsidian eyes were unreadable, but her smile was friendly. “It’s nice to finally meet you.”

Edward flashed a dark look at her.

“Hi, Alice,” I smiled shyly.

“Are you ready?” she asked him.

His voice was aloof. “Nearly. I’ll meet you at the car.”

She left without another word; her walk was so fluid, so sinuously beautiful.

“Should I say ‘have fun,’ or is that the wrong sentiment?” I asked, turning back to him.

“No, ‘have fun’ works as well as anything.” He grinned.

“Have fun, then.” I tried to sound wholehearted, but my disappointment in our shortened day was still evident.

“I’ll try.” He still grinned. “And you try to be safe, please.”

“Safe in Forks—what a challenge.”

“For you it is a challenge.” His jaw hardened. “Promise.”

“I promise to try to be safe,” I recited. His worry was a little much. “I’ll do the laundry tonight—that
ought to be fraught with peril.”

“Don’t fall in,” He mocked.

“I’ll do my best, but I make no guarantees.”

He stood then, and I rose, too.

“I’ll see you tomorrow,” I sighed.

“It seems like a long time to you, doesn’t it?” he mused.

I nodded glumly.

“I’ll be there in the morning,” he promised, smiling his crooked smile. He reached across the table to touch my face, lightly brushing along my cheekbone. Then he turned and walked away. I stared at him until he was gone.

I was sorely tempted to ditch the rest of the day, at the very least Gym, but a warning instinct stopped me. I knew that if I disappeared now, Mike and others would assume I was with Edward and I didn’t need them to be gossiping. Besides, Edward was concerned about the time we spent together publicly…if things went wrong. I tried not to put too much thought into that last thought, I concentrated instead on making things easier for him. Perhaps the rest of his family would warm up to me, I mused.

I intuitively knew—and sensed he did, too—that tomorrow would be pivotal. Our relationship couldn’t continue to balance, as it did, on the edge of a knife. We would fall off one edge or the other, depending upon my decision, or his instincts. My decision was mostly made; I chose Edward. I chose to embrace this danger and fear and not let it control me. I could leave anytime I wanted to, but I didn’t want to leave him.

I went to class, feeling dutiful. I couldn’t honestly say what happened in Biology; my mind was too preoccupied with thoughts of tomorrow. In Gym, Mike was speaking to me again; he wished me a good time in Seattle. I carefully explained that I’d canceled my trip, worried about my truck.

“Are you going to the dance with Cullen?” he asked, suddenly sulky.

“No, I’m not going to the dance at all.”

“What are you doing, then?” He asked, sounded a bit accusatory.

My knee-jerk reaction was to tell him butt out, but I didn’t want to be mean. I decided to just stick to my laundry story.

“Laundry, and then I have to study for the Trig test or I’m going to fail.”

“Is Cullen helping you study?”

“Edward,” I emphasized, “is not going to help me study. He’s gone away somewhere this weekend.” The lies came more naturally than they ought to, and I felt guilty.

“Oh.” He perked up. “You know, you could come to the dance with our group anyway—that would be cool. We’d all dance with you,” he promised.

“I’m not going to the dance, Mike.” I repeated, “Thank you, though.”
“Fine.” He sulked again. “I was just offering.”

When the school day had finally ended, I walked to the parking lot without enthusiasm. I didn’t really want to walk home, but I could see how would have retrieved my truck. Then again, I was starting to believe that nothing was impossible for him. The latter instinct proved correct—my truck sat in the same space he’d parked his Volvo in this morning. I shook my head, incredulous, as I opened the unlocked door and saw the key in the ignition.

There was a piece of white paper folded on my seat. I got in and closed the door before I unfolded it. Two words were written in his elegant script.

Be safe.

The sound of the truck roaring to life frightened me. I laughed at myself.

When I got home, the handle of the door was locked, the dead bolt unlocked, just as I’d left it this morning. Inside, I went straight to the laundry room. It looked just the same as I’d left it, too. I dug for my jeans and, after finding them, checked the pockets. Empty. Maybe I’d hung my key up after all, I thought, shaking my head.

Following the same instinct that had prompted me to lie to Mike, I called Jessica to wish her luck at the dance. When she offered the same wish for my day with Edward, I told her about the cancellation. She was more disappointed than really necessary—no doubt dismayed that she wouldn’t get to hear all about it Sunday morning. We chatted a bit about the dance before I said goodbye.

Charlie was absentminded at dinner, worried over something at work, I guessed, or maybe a basketball game, or maybe he was just really enjoying the lasagna—it was hard to tell with Charlie.

“You know, Dad…,” I began, breaking into his reverie.

“What’s that, Beau?”

“I think you’re right about Seattle. I think I’ll wait until Jessica or someone else can go with me.”

“Oh,” he said, surprised. “Oh, okay. So, do you want me to stay home?”

“No, Dad, don’t change your plans. I’ve got a million things to do… homework, laundry… I need to go to the library and maybe the grocery store. I’ll probably be in and out all day… you go and have fun.”

“Are you sure?”

“Absolutely, Dad. Besides, the freezer is getting dangerously low on fish—we’re down to a two, maybe three years’ supply.”

“You’re sure easy to live with, Beau.” He smiled.

“I could say the same thing about you,” I said, laughing. The sound of my laughter was off, but he didn’t seem to notice. I felt so guilty for lying to him that I almost took Edward’s advice and told him where I would be. Almost.
After dinner, I folded clothes and moved another load through the dryer. Unfortunately it was the kind of job that only keeps hands busy. My mind definitely had too much free time, and it was getting out of control. I fluctuated between anticipation so intense that it was very nearly painful, and that deep-rooted fear that picked at my resolve. I had to keep reminding myself that I’d already made a choice, and I wasn’t going back on it. I pulled his note out of my pocket much more often than necessary to absorb the two small words he’d written. He wants me to be safe, I told myself again and again. I would just hold on to the faith that, in the end, that desire would win out over the others. Besides, what was my other choice—to cut him out of my life? I cared so much about him that the very thought seemed intolerable. The choices were made, and I wanted to see this through.

But a tiny voice in the back of my mind worried, wondering if it would hurt very much… if it ended badly. It probably would—and I wouldn’t be the only one to get hurt.

I was relieved when it was late enough to be acceptable for bedtime. I knew I was far too anxious to sleep and tomorrow would be complicated enough without me being loopy from sleep deprivation on top of everything else. I decided to take some cold medicine—the kind that knocked me out for a good eight hours. While I waited for the drugs to kick in I fussed over what I would wear tomorrow. With everything ready for the morning, I finally lay in bed. I felt hyper; I couldn’t stop twitching. I got up and rifled through my shoebox of CDs until I found a collection of Chopin’s nocturnes. I put that on very quietly and then lay down again, concentrating on relaxing individual parts of my body. Somewhere in the middle of that exercise, the cold pills took effect, and I gladly sank into unconsciousness.

I woke early, having slept soundly and dreamlessly thanks to the drugs. Though I was well rested I slipped right back into the same hectic frenzy from the night before. I dressed in a rush, smoothing my collar against my neck, fidgeting with the tan sweater till it hung right over my jeans. I sneaked a swift look out the window to see that Charlie was already gone. A thin, cottony later of clouds veiled the sky. They didn’t look very lasting.

I ate breakfast without tasting the food, hurrying to clean up when I was done. I peeked out the window again, but nothing had changed. I had just finished brushing my teeth and was heading back downstairs when a quiet knock sent my heart thudding against my rib cage.

I practically flew to the door; I had a little trouble with the simple deadbolt, but I yanked the door open at last, and there he was. All the anxiety dissolved as soon as I looked at his face, calm taking its place. I breathed a sigh of relief—yesterday’s fears seemed very foolish with him here.

He wasn’t smiling at first—his face was somber. But then his expression lightened as he looked me over, and he laughed.

“Good morning,” he chuckled.

“What’s wrong?” I glanced down to make sure I hadn’t forgotten anything important, like shoes, or pants.

“We match.” He laughed again. I realized he had a long, light tan sweater on, with a white collar showing underneath, and jeans. I laughed with him, hiding a secret twinge of regret—why did he have to look like a runway model when I couldn’t?

I locked the door behind me while he walked to the truck. He waited by the passenger door with a martyred expression that was easy to understand.

“We made a deal,” I reminded him smugly, climbing into the driver’s seat, and reaching over to
unlock his door.

“Where to?” I asked.

“Put your seat belt on—I’m nervous already.”

I gave him a dirty look as I complied.

“Where to?” I repeated with a sigh.

“Take the one-oh-one north,” he said.

It was surprisingly difficult to concentrate on the road while feeling his gaze on my face. I compensated by driving more carefully than usual through the still-sleeping town.

“Were you planning to make it out of Forks before nightfall?”

“This truck is old enough to be your car’s grandfather—have some respect,” I retorted.

We were soon out of the town limits, despite his negativity. Thick underbrush and green-swathed trunks replaced the lawns and houses.

“Turn right on the one-ten,” he instructed just as I was about to ask. I obeyed silently.

“Now we drive until the pavement ends.”

I could hear a smile in his voice, but I was too afraid of driving off the road and proving him right to look over and be sure.

“And what’s there, at the pavement’s end?” I wondered.

“A trail.”

“We’re hiking?” Thank goodness I’d worn tennis shoes.

“Is that a problem?” He sounded as if he’d expected as much.

“No.” I tried to sound as confident as possible. But if he thought my truck was slow…

“Don’t worry, it’s only five miles or so, and we’re in no hurry.”

“Oh, only five miles.” I barely managed to keep my voice cracking in panic. Five miles of treacherous roots and loose stones, trying to twist my ankles or otherwise incapacitate me. I had been doing so well at making sure I didn’t give Edward anything to tease me. This was going to be humiliating.

We drove in silence for a while as I contemplated the coming horror.

“What are you thinking?” he asked impatiently after a few moments.

I lied, “just wondering where we’re going.”

“It’s a place I like to go when the weather is nice.” We both glanced out the windows at the thinning clouds after he spoke.

“Charlie said it would be warm today.”
“And did you tell Charlie what you were up to?” he asked.

“Nope.”

“But Jessica thinks we’re going to Seattle together?” He seemed cheered by the idea.

“No, I told her you canceled on me—which is true.”

“No one knows you’re with me?” Angrily, now.

“That depends… I assume you told Alice?”

“That’s very helpful, Beau,” he snapped.

“I’ll pretend I didn’t hear that.” I said, severely.

“Are you so depressed by Forks that it’s made you suicidal?” he demanded.

“You said it might cause trouble for you… us being together publicly.” I reminded him.

“So you’re worried about the trouble it might cause me—if you don’t come home?” His voice was still angry, and bitingly sarcastic.

“I’m worried about your family, too. If this ends badly it hurts everyone. Your family, my family, my friends.”

He muttered something under his breath, speaking so quickly that I couldn’t understand.

“But I’m choosing to trust you, Edward.” I said finally.

We were silent for the rest of the drive. I could feel the waves of infuriated disapproval rolling off of him, and I didn’t feel like dealing with it.

And then the road ended, constricting to a thin foot trail with a small wooden marker. I parked on the narrow shoulder and stepped out, I was annoyed by his angry mood marring what was supposed to be a big day for us, so I didn’t look at him. It was warm now, warmer than it had been in Forks since the day I’d arrived, almost muggy under the clouds. I pulled off my sweater and knotted it around my waist, glad I had worn the light, button-up shirt—especially if I had five miles of hiking ahead of me.

I heard his door slam, and looked over to see that he’d removed his sweater, too. He was facing away from me, into the unbroken forest behind my truck.

“This way,” he said, glancing over his shoulder at me, eyes still annoyed. He started into the dark forest.

“The trail?” Panic was clear in my voice as I hurried around the truck to catch up to him.

“I said there was a trail at the end of the road, not that we were taking it.”

“No trail?” I asked desperately.

“I won’t let you get lost.” He turned then, with an amused smile, and I felt my breath catch in my chest. The sleeves of his white shirt were short, and rolled all the way up to his shoulders, and he wore it completely unbuttoned, so that the smooth white skin of his throat flowed uninterrupted over the marble contours of his chest and down to his stomach, his perfect musculature no longer merely hinted at behind concealing clothes. He was too perfect, and I felt butterflies in my stomach as I
gaped at him. There was no way this godlike creature could be here with me.

He stared at me, bewildered by my expression.

“Do you want to go home?” he said quietly, with pain saturating his voice.

“No.” I walked forward till I was close beside him, anxious not to waste another second of whatever time I had with him today.

“What’s wrong?” he asked, his voice gentle.

“I’m not a good hiker,” I answered dully. “You’ll have to be very patient.”

“I can be patient—if I make a great effort.” He smiled, holding my glance, trying to lift the mood.

“I’m sorry for my behavior in the truck.” He said softly.

I smiled back, but my smile was wrought with anxiety. He scrutinized my face.

“I’ll take you home,” he promised. I couldn’t tell if the promise was unconditional, or restricted to an immediate departure. I knew he thought it was just fear that upset me, and I was grateful again that I was the only person whose mind he couldn’t hear. The sight of his bare torso was driving him crazy, filling me with butterflies and anxiety. I didn’t want him to think I was objectifying him, but I had never seen someone who looked like that in person—just in magazines.

“If you want me to hack five miles through the jungle before sundown, you’d better start leading the way,” I sighed, hoping the hike would distract me. He frowned at me, struggling to understand my tone and expression.

He gave up after a moment and led the way into the forest.

It wasn’t as hard as I had feared. The way was mostly flat, and he held the damp ferns and webs of moss aside for me. When his straight path took us over fallen trees or boulders, he would help me, lifting me by the elbow, and then releasing me instantly when I was clear. His cold touch on my skin never failed to make my pulse quicken, especially with his open shirt, I was a mess. I caught a look on his face that made me sure he could somehow hear my heart.

I tried to keep my eyes away from his perfection as much as possible, but I slipped often. Each time, his beauty sent my heart pounding and the butterflies stirring.

For the most part, we walked in silence. Occasionally he would ask a random question that he hadn’t gotten to in the past two days of interrogation. He asked about my birthdays, my grade school teachers, my childhood pets—and I had to admit that after killing three fish in a row, I’d given up on the whole idea. He laughed at that, louder than I was used to—bell-like echoes bouncing back to us from the empty woods.

The hike took me most of the morning, but he never showed any sign of impatience. The forest spread out around us in a boundless labyrinth of ancient trees, and I began to feel like we would never find our way out again. He was perfectly at ease, comfortable in the green maze, never seeming to feel any doubt about our direction.

After several hours, the light that filtered through the canopy transformed, the murky olive tone shifting to a brighter jade. The day had turned sunny, just as he’d foretold. For the first time since we’d entered the woods, I felt a thrill of excitement—which quickly turned to impatience.

“Are we there yet?” I teased, pretending to scowl.
“Nearly.” He smiled at the change in my mood. “Do you see the brightness ahead?”

I peered into the thick forest. “Um, should I?”

He smirked. “Maybe it’s a bit soon for your eyes.”

“Time to visit the optometrist,” I muttered. His smirk grew more pronounced.

But then, after another hundred yards, I could definitely see a light in the trees ahead, a glow that was yellow instead of green. I picked up the pace, my eagerness growing with every step. He let me lead now, following noiselessly.

I reached the edge of the pool of light and stepped through the last fringe of ferns into the loveliest place I had ever seen. The meadow was small, perfectly round, and filled with wildflowers—violet, yellow, and soft white. Somewhere nearby, I could hear the bubbling music of a stream. The sun was directly overhead, filling the circle with a haze of buttery sunshine. I walked slowly, awestruck, through the soft grass, swaying flowers, and warm, gilded air. I halfway turned, wanting to share this with him, but he wasn’t behind me where I thought he’d be. I spun around, searching for him with sudden alarm.

Finally I spotted him, still under the dense shade of the canopy at the edge of the hollow, watching me with cautious eyes. Only then did I remember what the beauty of the meadow had driven from my mind—the enigma of Edward and the sun, which he’d promised to illustrate for me today.

I took a step back toward him, my eyes alight with curiosity. His eyes were wary, reluctant. I smiled encouragingly and beckoned to him with my hand, taking another step back to him. He held up a hand in warning, and I hesitated, rocking back onto my heels.

Edward slowly removed his shirt and let it drop to the forest floor. He seemed to take a deep breath, and then he stepped out into the bright glow of the midday sun.
Eyes closed, Edward stepped blindly into the light.

My heart jumped into my throat and I started sprinting toward him.

“Edward!”

It was only when his eyes flashed open and I got close enough to begin to understand what I was seeing that I realized he hadn’t caught on fire. He threw up his hand again, palm forward, and I stumbled to a stop.

The light blazed off his skin, danced in prism-like rainbows across his face and neck, down his arms, his torso. He was so bright that I had to squint, like I was trying to stare at the sun.

After the initial combustion of light, my eyes began adjusting. It still took a while to see past his incandescence to the expression on his face. He was watching me with wide eyes—it almost looked like he was afraid of something. I took a step toward him, and he cringed just slightly.

“Does that hurt you?” I whispered.

“No,” he whispered back.

I took another step toward him, and he let his warning hand drop to his side. As he moved, the fire shimmered down his arm. Slowly I circled him, keeping my distance, just needing to absorb this, to see him from every angle. The sun played off his skin, refracting and magnifying with every color light could hold. My eyes continued adjusting, and they opened wide with wonder.

I finished my circle, then closed the last few feet between us. I couldn’t stop staring, even to blink.

“Edward,” I breathed.

“Are you scared now?” he whispered.

“No.”

He stared searchingly into my eyes, trying to hear what I was thinking.

I reached toward him, deliberately unhurried, watching his face for permission.

His eyes opened wider, and he froze. Carefully, slowly, I let my fingertips graze the glistening skin on his shoulder. I was surprised to find it was just as cold as ever. While my fingers were touching him, the reflections of the fire flickered against my skin.

“What are you thinking?” he whispered.

I struggled to find words. “I am… I didn’t know…” I took a deep breath, and the words finally came. “I’ve never seen anything more beautiful—it’s like diamonds.”

His eyes were still wary. Like he thought I was saying what I thought he wanted to hear. But it was only the truth.

He started to lift his hand, then dropped it. The shimmer flared.
“It’s very strange, though.” He murmured.

“Amazing,” I breathed.

“Aren’t you repulsed by my flagrant lack of humanity?”

I shook my head. “Not repulsed.”

His eyes narrowed. “You should be.”

I admired his beauty for what seemed like hours, but in reality was probably only about thirty minutes. Eventually, he slowly sat down on the grass, and then reclined back with one hand behind his head.

I slowly sat down next to him, admiring.

Edward in the sunlight was truly shocking, though not in the way he had probably hoped it would shock me. I couldn’t get used to it. His white skin, slightly flushed from yesterday’s hunting trip, continued to sparkle, like thousands of tiny diamonds were embedded in the surface. He lay perfectly still in the grass, as the light shone over his sculpted, incandescent chest, his scintillating arms, and bare stomach. His glistening, pale lavender lids were shut, though of course he didn’t sleep. A perfect statue, carved in some unknown stone, smooth like marble, glittering like crystal.

Now and then, his lips would move, so fast it looked like they were trembling. But, when I asked, he told me he was singing to himself; it was too low for me to hear.

“It calms me.” He said, simply.

I enjoyed the sunlight, though the air wasn’t quite dry enough for my taste. I would have liked to lie back, as he had, and let the sun warm my face. But I stayed sitting, my chin resting on my knees, unwillingly to take my eyes off him. The wind was gentle; flowing through my air and ruffling the grass that swayed around his motionless form.

The meadow, so spectacular to me at first, paled next to his magnificence.

Hesitantly, always worried, even now, that he would disappear like a mirage, too beautiful to be real… hesitantly, I reached out one finger and stroked the back of his shimmering hand, where it lay within my reach. I marveled again at the perfect texture, satin smooth, cool as stone. When I looked up again, his eyes were open, watching me. Butterscotch today, lighter, warmer after hunting. His quick smile turned up at the corners of his flawless lips.

“Are you sure I don’t scare you?” he asked playfully, but I could hear the real curiosity in his soft voice.

“No more than usual.”

He smiled wider; his teeth flashed in the sun.

I inched closer, stretched out my whole hand now to trace the contours of his forearm with my fingertips. I saw that my fingers trembled slightly, and I knew it wouldn’t escape his notice.

“Do you mind?” I asked, for he had closed his eyes again.

“No,” he said without opening his eyes. “You can’t imagine how that feels.” He sighed, contentedly.

I lightly trailed my hand over the perfect muscles of his arm, followed the faint pattern of bluish veins
inside the crease of his elbow. With my other hand, I reached to turn his hand over. Realizing what I wished, he flipped his palm up in one of those blindingly fast, disconcerting movements of his. It startled me; my fingers froze on his arm for a brief second.

“Sorry,” he murmured. I looked up in time to see his golden eyes close again. “It’s too easy to be myself with you.”

I lifted his hand, turning it this way and that as I watched the sun glitter on his skin. I held it closer to my face, trying to see the hidden facets in his skin. My eyes had fully adjusted, and the light no longer looked like fire on his skin but a softer glistening—it fascinated me.

“Tell me what you’re thinking,” he whispered. I looked to see his eyes watching me, suddenly intent. “It’s still so strange for me, not knowing.”

“You know, the rest of us feel that way all the time.”

“It’s a hard life.” Did I imagine the hint of regret in his tone? “But you didn’t tell me.”

“I was wishing that I could believe that you were real. And I was wishing I wasn’t afraid.”

“I don’t want you to be afraid.” His voice was just a soft murmur. I heard what couldn’t truthfully say, that I didn’t need to be afraid, that there was nothing to fear.

“Well, that’s not exactly the fear I meant, though it’s always in the back of my mind.”

So quickly that I missed his movement, he was half sitting, propped up on his right arm, his left palm still in my hands. His angel’s face was only a few inches from mine. I might have—should have—flinched away from his unexpected closeness, but I was unable to move. His golden eyes seemed to lock me in place.

“What are you afraid of, then?” he whispered intently.

But I couldn’t answer. As I sat there, so close to him, I could smell his sweet, delicious scent. His lack of shirt was short-circuiting something in my brain—my better judgement. Instinctively, unthinkingly, I leaned closer, my lips parting.

And he was gone, his hand ripped from mine. In the time it took my eyes to focus, he was twenty feet away, standing at the edge of the small meadow, in the shade of a huge fir tree. He stared at me, his eyes wide and dark in the shadows, his expression unreadable.

I could feel the shock on my face and my empty hands stung.

“I’m… sorry, Edward.” I whispered. I knew he could hear.

“Give me a moment,” he called, just loud enough for my less sensitive ears. I sat very still.

After ten incredibly long seconds, he walked back, slowly for him. He stopped, still several feet away, and sank gracefully to the ground, crossing his legs. His eyes never left mine. He took two deep breaths, and then smiled in apology.

“I am so very sorry.” He hesitated. “Would you understand what I meant if I said I was only human?”

I nodded once, not quite able to smile at his joke. Adrenaline pulsed through my veins as the realization of danger slowly sank in. He could smell that from where he sat. His smile turned
mocking.

“I’m the world’s best predator, aren’t I? Everything about me invites you in—my voice, my face, even my smell. As if I need any of that!” Unexpectedly, he was on his feet, bounding away, instantly out of sight, only to appear beneath the same tree as before, having circled the meadow in half a second.

“As if you could outrun me,” he laughed bitterly.

He reached up with one hand and, with a deafening crack, effortlessly ripped a two-foot-thick branch from the trunk of the spruce. He balanced it in that hand for a moment, and then threw it with blinding speed, shattering it against another huge tree, which shook and trembled at the blow.

And he was in front of me again, standing two feet away, still as a stone.

“As if you could fight me off,” he said gently.

I sat without moving, more frightened of him than I had ever been. I’d never seen him so completely freed of that carefully cultivated façade. He’d never been less human… or more beautiful. Face ashen, eyes wide, I sat like a bird locked in the eyes of a snake.

His lovely eyes seemed to glow with rash excitement. Then as, the seconds passed, they dimmed. His expression slowly folded into a mask of ancient sadness.

“Don’t be afraid,” He murmured, his velvet voice unintentionally seductive. “I promise…” He hesitated. “I swear not to hurt you.” He seemed more concerned with convincing himself than me.

“Please, don’t be afraid of me,” he whispered again as he stepped closer, with exaggerated slowness. He sat sinuously, with deliberately unhurried movements, till our faces were on the same level, just a foot apart.

“Please forgive me,” he said formally. “I can control myself. You caught me off guard. But I’m on my best behavior now.”

He waited, but I still couldn’t speak.

“I’m not thirsty today, honestly.” He winked.

At that I had to laugh, though the sound was shaky and breathless.

“Are you all right?” he asked tenderly, reaching out slowly, carefully, to place his marble hand back in mine.

I looked at his smooth, cold hand, and then at his eyes. They were soft, repentant. I looked back at his hand, and then deliberately returned to tracing the lines in his hand with my fingertip. I looked up and smiled.

His answering smile was dazzling.

“So where were we, before I behaved so rudely?” he asked in the gentle cadences of an earlier century.

“I honestly can’t remember.”

He smiled, but his face was ashamed. “I think we were talking about why you were afraid, besides the obvious reason.”
“Oh, right.”

“Well?”

I looked down at his hand and ran my finger aimlessly across his smooth, iridescent palm. The seconds ticked by.

“How easily frustrated I am,” he sighed. I looked into his eyes, abruptly grasping that this was every bit as new to him as it was to me. As many years of unfathomable experience as he had, this was hard for him, too. I took courage from that thought.

“I was afraid… because of all the ways you could hurt me.”

“Yes,” he agreed slowly. “That is something to be afraid of, indeed.”

“Not just physically.” I said softly, “Though that is a pretty big deal. You could hurt me in ways I can’t even begin to think about by breaking my heart. By leaving.”

“I should have left a long go,” he sighed. “I should leave now. But I don’t know if can.”

“I don’t want you to leave,” I said earnestly, gazing into his eyes.

“Which is exactly why I should. But don’t worry. I’m essentially a selfish creature. I crave your company too much to do what I should.”

“I’m glad.”

“Don’t be!” He withdrew his hand, more gently this time; his voice was harsher than usual. Harsh for him, still more beautiful than any human voice. It was hard to keep up—his sudden mood changes left me always a step behind, dazed.

“It’s not only your company I crave! Never forget that. Never forget I am more dangerous to you than I am to anyone else.” He stopped and gazed unseeingly into the forest.

I thought for a moment.

“I never forget, but I don’t think I understand exactly what you mean—by that last part anyway,” I said.

He looked back at me and smiled, his mood shifting yet again.

“How do I explain?” he mused. “And without frightening you again… hmmm.” Without seeming
to think about it, he placed his hand back in mind; I held it tightly in both mine. He looked at our hands.

“That’s amazingly pleasant, the warmth.” He sighed.

A moment passed as he assembled his thoughts.

“You know how everyone enjoys different flavors?” he began. “Some people love chocolate ice cream, others prefer strawberry?”

I nodded.

“Sorry about the food analogy—I couldn’t think of another way to explain.”
I smiled. He smiled ruefully back.

“You see, every person smells different, has a different essence. If you locked an alcoholic in a room full of stale beer, he’d gladly drink it. But he could resist, if he wished to, if he were a recovering alcoholic. Now let’s say you placed in that room a glass of hundred-year-old brandy, the rarest, finest cognac—and filled the room with its warm aroma—how do you think he would fare then?”

We sat silently, looking into each other’s eyes—trying to read each other’s thoughts.

He broke the silence first.

“Maybe that’s not the right comparison. Maybe it would be too easy to turn down the brandy. Perhaps I should have made our alcoholic a heroin addict instead.”

“So what you’re saying is, I’m your brand of heroin?” I teased, trying to lighten the mood.

He smiled swiftly, seeming to appreciate my effort. “Yes, you are exactly my brand of heroin.”

“Does that happen often?” I asked.

He looked across the treetops, thinking through his response.

“I spoke to my brothers about it.” He still stared into the distance.

“Royal didn’t feel like participating,” He chuckled. “To Jasper, every one of you is much the same. He’s the most recent to join our family. It’s a struggle for him to abstain at all. He hasn’t had time to grow sensitive to the differences in smell, in flavor.” He glanced swiftly at me, his expression apologetic.

“Sorry,” he said.

“I don’t mind. Please don’t worry about offending me, or frightening me, or whichever. That’s the way you think. I can understand, or I can try to at least. Just explain however you can.”

He took a deep breath and gazed at the sky again.

“So Jasper wasn’t sure if he’d ever come across someone who was as—” he hesitated, looking for the right word—“appealing as you are to me. Which makes me think not. Emmett has been on the wagon longer, so to speak, and he understood what I meant. He says twice, for him, once stronger than the other.”

“And for you?”

“Never.”

The word hung there for a moment in the warm breeze.

“What did Emmett do?” I asked to break the silence.

It was the wrong question to ask. His face grew dark, his hand clenched into a fist inside mine. He looked away. I waited, but he wasn’t going to answer.

“I guess I know,” I finally said.

He lifted his eyes his expression was wistful, pleading.
“Even the strongest of us fall off the wagon, don’t we?”

“What are you asking? My permission?” My voice was sharper than I’d intended. I tried to make my tone kinder—I could guess what his honesty must cost him. “I mean, is there no hope then?” I felt knots in my stomach from trying to calmly discuss my own death.

“No, no!” He was instantly contrite. “Of course there’s hope! I mean, of course I won’t…” He left the sentence hanging. His eyes burned into mine. “It’s different for us. Emmett… these were strangers he happened across. It was a long time ago, and he wasn’t as… practiced, as careful, as he is now.”

He fell silent and watched me intently as I thought it through.

“So if we’d met… oh, in a dark alley or something…” I trailed off.

“It took everything I had not to jump up in the middle of that class full of people and—” He stopped abruptly, looking away. “When you walked past me, I could have ruined everything Carlisle has built for us, right then and there. If I hadn’t been denying my thirst for the last, well, too many years, I wouldn’t have been able to stop myself.” He paused, scowling at the trees.

He glanced at me grimly, both of us remembering. “You must have thought I was possessed.”

“I thought you were a jerk. I couldn’t understand why. How you could hate me so quickly…”

“To me, if was like you were some kind of demon, summoned straight from my own personal hell to ruin me. The fragrance coming off your skin… I thought it would make me deranged that first day. In that one hour, I thought of a hundred different ways to lure you from the room with me, to get you alone. And I fought them each back, thinking of my family, what I could do to them. I had to run out, to get away before I could speak the words that would make you follow….”

He looked up then at my staggered expression as I tried to absorb his bitter memories. His golden eyes scorched from under his lashes, hypnotic and deadly.

“You would have come,” his voice was pained.

I tried to speak calmly. “Maybe.”

He frowned down at my hands, releasing me from the force of his stare. “And then, as I tried to rearrange my schedule in a pointless attempt to avoid you, you were there—in that close, warm little room, the scent was maddening. I so very nearly took you then. There was only one other fail human there—so easily dealt with.

I shivered in the warm sun, seeing my memories anew through his eyes, only now grasping the danger. Poor Ms. Cope; I shivered again at how close she’d come to death.

“But I resisted. I don’t know how. I forced myself not to wait for you, not to follow you from the school. It was easier outside, when I couldn’t smell you anymore, to think clearly, to make the right decision. I left the others near home—I was too ashamed to tell them how weak I was, they only knew something was very wrong—and then I went straight to Carlisle, at the hospital, to tell him I was leaving.”

I stared in surprise.

“I traded cars with him—he had a full tank of gas and I didn’t want to stop. I didn’t dare to go home, to face Esme. She wouldn’t let me go without a scene. She would have tried to convince me that it
wasn’t necessary…”

“By the next morning I was in Alaska.” He sounded ashamed, as if admitting a great cowardice. “I spent two days there, with some old acquaintances… but I was homesick. I hated knowing I’d upset Esme, and the rest of them, my adopted family. In the pure air of the mountains it was hard to believe you were so irresistible. I convinced myself it was weak to run away. I’d dealt with temptation before, not of this magnitude, not even close, but I was strong. Who were you, an insignificant little human”—he grinned suddenly—“to chase me from the place I wanted to be? So I came back….” He stared off into space.

I remained silent.

“I took precautions, hunting, feeding more than usual before seeing you again. I was sure that I was strong enough to treat you like any other human. I was arrogant about it.

“It was unquestionably a complication that I couldn’t simply read your thoughts to know what your reaction was to me. I wasn’t used to having to go to such circuitous measures, listening to your words in Jessica’s mind… her mind isn’t very original, and it was annoying to have to stoop to that. And then I couldn’t know if you really meant what you said. It was all extremely irritating.” He frowned at the memory, and I couldn’t help but smirk, slightly.

He continued, “I wanted you to forget my behavior that first day, if possible, so I tried to talk with you like I would with any person. I was eager, actually, hoping to decipher some of your thoughts. But you were too interesting, I found myself caught up in your expression… and every now and then you would stir the air with your hand or your hair, and the scent would stun me again….

“Of course, then you were nearly crushed to death in front of my eyes, Later I thought of a perfectly good excuse for why I acted at that moment—because if I hadn’t saved you, if your blood had been spilled there in front of me, I don’t think I could have stopped myself from exposing us for what we are. But I only thought of that excuse later. At the time, all I could think was, ‘Not him.’”

He closed his eyes, lost in agonized confession. I listened, more eager than rational. Common sense told me I should be terrified. Instead, I was relieved to finally understand. I was filled with compassion for his suffering, while warily listening to his craving to take my life.

I finally spoke, and my voice quiet. “In the hospital?”

His eyes flashed up to mine. “I was appalled. I couldn’t believe I had put us in danger after all, put myself in your power—you of all people. As if I needed another motive to kill you.” We both flinched as that word slipped out. “But it had the opposite effect,” he continued quickly. “I fought with Royal, Emmett, and Jasper when they suggested that now was the time… the worst fight we’ve ever had. Carlisle sided with me, and Alice.” He grimaced when he said her name. I couldn’t imagine why. “Esme told me to do whatever I had to in order to stay.” He shook his head indulgently.

“All that next day I eavesdropped on the minds of everyone you spoke to, shocked that you kept your word. I didn’t understand you at all. But I knew that I couldn’t become more involved with you. I did my very best to stay as far away from you as possible. And every day the perfume of your skin, your breath, your hair… It hit me as hard as the very first day.”

He met my eyes again, and they were surprisingly tender.

“And for all that,” he continued, “I’d have fared better if I had exposed us all at that first moment, than if now, here—with no witnesses and nothing to stop me—I were to hurt you.”
I was human enough to have to ask. “Why?”

“Beauregard.” He pronounced my full name carefully, then playfully ruffled my hair with his free hand. A shock ran through my body at his casual touch. “Beau, I couldn’t live with myself if I ever hurt you. You don’t know how it’s tortured me.” He looked down, ashamed again. “The thought of you still, white, cold… to never see you blush scarlet again, to never see that flash of intuition in your eyes when you see through my pretenses, to never hear you scold me again for my temper… It would be unendurable.” He lifted his glorious, agonized eyes to mine. “You are the most important thing to me now. The most important thing to me ever.”

My head was spinning at the rapid change in direction our conversation had taken. From the cheerful topic of my impending demise, we were suddenly declaring ourselves. He waited, and even though I looked down to study our hands between us, I knew his golden eyes were on me.

“You already know how I feel,” I finally said. “I’m here… which, basically means I would risk a whole lot just to be with you.” I frowned. “I’m an idiot.”

“You are an idiot,” he agreed with a laugh. Our eyes met, and I laughed, too. We laughed together at the idiocy and sheer impossibility of the moment.

“And so the lion fell in love with the lamb…,” he murmured. I blushed as I heard the word.

“What a stupid lamb,” I sighed.

“What a sick, masochistic lion.” He stared into the shadowy forest for a long moment, and I wondered where his thoughts had taken him.

“Why…?” I began, and then paused, not sure how to continue.

He looked at me and smiled; sunlight glinted off his face, his teeth.

“Yes?”

“Tell me why you ran from me before.”

His smile faded. “You know why.”

“No, I mean exactly what did I do wrong? I’ll have to be on my guard, you know? So, I better start learning what I shouldn’t do. This, for example”—I stroked the back of his hand—“seems to be all right.”

He smiled again. “You didn’t do anything wrong, Beau. It was my fault.”

“But I want to help, if I can, to not make this harder for you.”

“Well…” He contemplated for a moment. “It was just how close you were. Most humans instinctively shy away from us, are repelled by our alien-ness… I wasn’t expecting you to come so close. And the smell of your throat.” He stopped short, looking to see if he’d upset me.

“Oh, then,” I said flippantly, trying to alleviate the suddenly tense atmosphere. I tucked my chin. “No throat exposure. Turtlenecks and scarves from now on.”

It worked; he laughed. “No, really, it was more the surprise than anything else.”

He raised his free hand and placed it gently on the side of my neck. I sat very still, the chill of his touch a natural warning—a warning telling me to be terrified. But there was no feeling of fear in me.
There were, however, *other* feelings…

“You see,” he said. “Perfectly fine.”

My blood was racing, and I wished I could slow it, sensing that this must make everything so much more difficult—the thudding of my pulse in my veins. Surely he could hear it.

“The blush on your cheeks is lovely,” he murmured. He gently freed his other hand. My hands fell to my lap. Softly he brushed my cheek, then held my face between his marble hands.

“Be very still,” he whispered, as if I wasn’t already frozen.

Slowly, never moving his eyes from mine, he leaned toward me. Then abruptly, but very gently, he rested his cold cheek against the hollow at the base of my throat. I was quite unable to move, even if I’d wanted to. I listened to the sound of his even breathing, watching the sun and wind play in his bronze hair, more human than any other part of him.

With deliberate slowness, his hands slid down the sides of my neck. I shivered, and I heard him catch his breath. But his hands didn’t pause as they softly moved to my shoulders, then down to my waist, and then stopped.

His face drifted to the side, his nose skimming across my collarbone. His arms wrapped slowly around me, pulling me to him. He came to rest with the side of his face pressed tenderly against my chest.

Listening to my heart.

“Ah,” he sighed.

I don’t know how long we sat without moving. It could have been hours. Eventually the throb of my pulse quieted, but he didn’t move or speak again as he held me. I knew at any moment it could be too much, and my life could end—so quickly that I might not even notice. And I couldn’t make myself be afraid. I couldn’t think of anything, except that he was sitting here, holding me against his bare torso, touching me.

And then, too soon, he released me.

His eyes were peaceful.

“It won’t be so hard again,” he said with satisfaction.

“Was that very hard for you?”

“Not nearly as bad as I imagined it would be. And you?”

“No, it wasn’t bad… for me.”

He smiled at my inflection. “You know what I mean.”

I smiled.

“Here.” He took my hand and placed it against his cheek. “Do you feel how warm it is?”

And it was almost warm, his usually icy skin. But I barely noticed; I was touching his face, something I’d been dying to do for so long now.
“Don’t move,” I whispered.

No one could be still like Edward. He closed his eyes and became as immobile as stone, a carving under my hand.

I moved even more slowly than he had, careful not to make one unexpected move. I caressed his cheek, delicately stroke his eyelid, the purple shadow in the hollow under his eye. I traced the shape of his perfect nose, and then, so carefully, his flawless lips. His lips parted under my hand, and I could feel his cool breath on my fingertips. I wanted to lean in, to inhale the scent of him. So I dropped my hand and leaned away, not wanting to push him too far.

He opened his eyes, and they were hungry. Not in a way to make me fear, but rather to tighten the muscles in the pit of my stomach and send an electric shiver through all my limbs. I felt my pulse quicken.

“‘I wish,’” he whispered, “‘I wish you could feel the… complexity… the confusion… I feel. That you could understand.’”

He raised his hand and carefully brushed it across my face.

“‘Tell me,’” I breathed, my hands dropping to his bare shoulders.

“I don’t think I can. I’ve told you, on the one hand, the hunger—the thirst—that, deplorable creature that I am, I feel for you. And I think you can understand that, to an extent. Though”—he half-smiled—“as you are not addicted to any illegal substances, you probably can’t empathize completely.

“But…” His fingers touched my lips lightly, quickening my pulse again. “There are other hungers. Hungers I don’t even understand, that are foreign to me.”

“I may understand that better than you think.”

“I’m not used to feeling so human. Is it always like this?”

“For me?” I paused. “No, never. Never before this.”

He took my hands from his shoulders and held them between his. They felt so feeble in his iron strength.

“I don’t know how to be close to you,” he admitted. “I don’t know if I can.”

I leaned forward very slowly, cautioning him with my eyes. I placed my cheek against his bare chest. I could hear his breath, and nothing else.

“Right now… this is enough,” I sighed, closing my eyes.

In a very human gesture, he put his arms around me and pressed his face against my hair.

“You’re better at this than you give yourself credit for,” I noted.

“I have human instincts—they may be buried deep, but they’re there.”

We sat like that for another immeasurable moment; I wondered if he could be as unwilling to move as I was. But I could see the light was fading, the shadows of the forest beginning to touch us, and I sighed.

“You have to go.”
“I thought you couldn’t read my mind.”

“It’s getting clearer.” I could hear a smile in his voice.

He took my shoulders and I looked into his face.

“Can I show you something?” he asked, sudden excitement flaring in his eyes.

“Show me what?”

“I’ll show you how I travel in the forest.” He saw my expression. “Don’t worry, you’ll be very safe, and we’ll get to your truck much faster. His mouth twitched up into that crooked smile I loved so much.

“Will you turn into a bat?” I asked warily.

He laughed, louder than I’d ever heard. Faster than my eyes could see, he had retrieved his shirt from the forest floor and slid it on, leaving it open.

“Come on, climb on my back.”

I waited to see if he was kidding, but, apparently, he meant it. He smiled as he read my hesitation, and reached for me. My heart reacted; even though he couldn’t hear my thoughts, my pulse always gave me away. He then proceeded to gently sling me onto his back, with very little effort on my part, besides, when in place, clamping my legs and arms so tightly around him that it would choke a normal person. It was like clinging to a stone.

“I’m a bit heavier than your average backpack,” I warned.

“Hah!” He snorted. I could almost hear his eyes rolling. I’d never seen him in such high spirits before.

He startled me, suddenly grabbing my hand, pressing my palm to his face, and inhaling deeply.

“Easier all the time,” he mused.

And then he was running.

If I’d ever feared death before in his presence, it was nothing compared to how I felt now.

He streaked through the dark, thick underbrush of the forest like a bullet, like a ghost. There was no sound, no evidence that his feet touched the earth. His breathing never changed, never indicated any effort. But the trees flew by at deadly speeds, always missing us by inches.

I was too terrified to close my eyes, though the cool forest air whipped against my face and burned them. I felt as if I were stupidly sticking my head out the window of an airplane in flight. And, for the first time in my life, I felt the dizzy faintness of motion sickness.

Then it was over. We’d hiked for hours this morning to reach Edward’s meadow, and now, in a matter of minutes, we were back to the truck.

“Exhilarating, isn’t it?” His voice was high, excited.

He stood motionless, waiting for me to climb down. I tried, but my muscles wouldn’t respond. My arms and legs stayed locked around him while my head spun uncomfortably.
“Beau?” he asked, anxious now.

“I think I need to lie down,” I gasped.

“Oh, sorry.” He waited for me, but I still couldn’t move.

“I think I need help,” I admitted.

He laughed quietly, and gently unloosened my stranglehold on his neck. There was no resisting the iron strength of his hands. Then he pulled me around to face him, holding my in his arms. He held me for a moment, then carefully placed me on the springy ferns.

“How do you feel?” he asked, his voice concerned.

I couldn’t be sure how I felt when my head was spinning so crazily. “Dizzy, I think.”

“Can I help?” His eyes were worried.

“Just, give me a minute.” I breathed in and out slowly, keeping my head very still. “And hold on to me, please.”

“I guess that wasn’t my best idea,” he sounded apologetic.

I tried to be positive, but my voice wavered. “No, it was very interesting.”

“Hah! You’re as white as a ghost—no, you’re as white as me!”

“I probably should have closed my eyes.”

“Remember that next time.”

“Next time!” I laughed darkly.

He laughed, his mood still radiant.

“I suppose it was better than hiking.” I closed my eyes, continuing to breath.

“Open your eyes, Beau,” he said quietly.

And he was right there, his face so close to mine. His inhuman beauty was something I’d never get used to.

“I was thinking, while I was running…” He paused.

“About not hitting the trees, I hope.”

“No,” he chuckled. “Running is second nature to me, it’s not something I have to think about.”

“Lucky you,” I muttered.

“No,” he continued, “I was thinking there was something I wanted to try.” And he took my face in his hands again.

I couldn’t breathe.

He hesitated—not in the normal way, the human way.
Not the way a person might hesitate before kissing someone, to gauge their reaction, to see how it would be received. Perhaps the hesitation would be to prolong the moment, that ideal moment of anticipation, sometimes better than the kiss itself.

Edward hesitated to test himself, to see if this was safe, to make sure he was still in control of his need.

And then his cold, marble lips pressed very softly against mine.

My head instantly cleared, the yearning, the electricity that had been steadily building for so long burst free. My blood boiled, my breath caught in my chest. My arms instantly wrapped around his neck, my fingers knotted in his hair, clutching him to me.

His hands dropped from my face, to my waist. Then his arms were wrapped around me and crushed me to him. A soft whimper escaped from my lips, I heard him moan softly.

Suddenly I felt him turn to unresponsive stone beneath my lips, his hands gently, but with irresistible force, pushed me back. I took a deep breath and pulled myself from him. I opened my eyes and saw his wide-eyed expression.


“That’s an understatement.”

His eyes were wild, his jaw clenched in acute restraint, yet he didn’t lapse from his perfect articulation. He held me very steadily. Our faces still just inches from each other.

“Should I…?” I tried to take a step back, to give me some room.

His hands refused to let me move so much as an inch.

“No, it’s tolerable. Wait for a moment, please.” His voice was soft, controlled.

I kept my eyes on his, watched as the excitement in them became more controlled and gentle.

Then he smiled a surprisingly impish grin.

“There,” he said, obviously pleased with himself.

“Tolerable?” I asked.

He laughed aloud. “I’m stronger than I thought. It’s nice to know.”

“I wish I could say the same. I’m sorry.”

“No, no. What you did was… You were…” He closed his eyes for a moment, “You did nothing wrong.” He smiled, blissfully.

He took a step back and released my waist, I wobbled slightly. My balance still off.

“Are you still faint from the run? Or was it my kissing expertise?” How lighthearted, how human he seemed as he laughed now, his seraphic face untroubled. He was a different Edward than the one I had known up to now. And I felt all the more enamored by him.

“Don’t get a big head,” I glared. “It was a good kiss though.”
He smiled widely, utterly pleased.

“Maybe you should let me drive.”

“Excuse me?” I protested.

“I can drive better than you on your best day,” he teased. “You have much slower reflexes.”

“I’m sure that’s true, but I don’t think my nerves, or my truck, could take it.”

“Some trust, please, Beau.”

My hand was in my pocket, curled tightly around the key. I pursed my lips, deliberated, then shook my head with a tight grin.

“Nope. Not a chance.”

He raised his eyebrows in disbelief.

I started to step around him, heading for the driver’s side. He might have let me pass if I hadn’t wobbled slightly. He caught me around the waist from behind, and pulled me back into him. Holding me in his arms, and resting his face in my hair.

“Beau, I’ve already expended a great deal of personal effort at this point to keep you alive. I’m not about let you behind the wheel of a vehicle when you can’t even walk straight. Besides, friends don’t friends drive drunk,” he quoted with a chuckle. I spun around in his arms, I could smell that deliciously sweet fragrance coming off his chest.

“Drunk?” I objected.

“You’re intoxicated by my very presence.” He was grinning with that playful smirk again.

I rolled my eyes, “I warned you not to get too full of yourself.” I sighed. It probably would be safer if he drove. I held the key high and dropped it, watching his hand flash like lightening to catch it soundlessly. “Take it easy—my truck is a senior citizen.”

“Thank you,” he smiled.

“So are you not affected at all?” I asked, irked. “By my presence?”

His expression became soft, warm. He didn’t answer at first; he simply bent his face to mine, and brushed his lips slowly along my jaw, from my ear to my chin, back and forth. I trembled.

“You have no idea.” He growled the words playfully, I felt his hands on my waist and my whole body quivered. I felt his lips curl into a smile on my jaw.

“Regardless,” he purred, “I have better reflexes.”
Mind Over Matter

He could drive well, when he kept the speed reasonable, I had to admit. Like so many things, it seemed to be effortless to him. He barely looked at the road, yet the tires never deviated so much as a centimeter from the center of the lane. He drove one-handed, his free hand resting on my thigh. My arm entwined around his. Sometimes he gazed into the setting sun, sometimes he glanced at me—my face, my hair blown in the wind, my arm around his.

He had turned the radio to an oldies station, and he sang along with a song I’d never heard. He knew every line.

“You like fifties music?” I asked.

“Music in the fifties was good. Much better than the sixties, or the seventies, ugh!” He shuddered. “The eighties were bearable.”

“Are you ever going to tell me how old you are?” I asked, tentative, not wanting to upset his buoyant humor.

“Does it matter much?” His smile, to my relief, remained unclouded.

“No, but I still wonder…” I shrugged. “There’s nothing like an unsolved mystery to keep you up at night.”

“I wonder if it will upset you,” he reflected to himself. He gazed into the sun—the light of the setting orb glittered off his skin in ruby-tinged sparkles—and spoke.

“I was born in Chicago in 1901.” He paused and glanced at me from the corner of his eyes. My face was carefully unsurprised, patient for the rest. He smiled a tiny smile and continued. “Carlisle found me in a hospital dying of the Spanish influenza. I was just seventeen, nearly eighteen.”

He heard my intake of breath, though it was barely audible to my own ears. He looked down into my eyes again.

“I don’t remember it well—it was a very long time ago, and human memories fade.” He was lost in his thoughts for a short time before he went on. “I do remember how it felt, when Carlisle saved me. It’s not an easy thing, not something you could forget.”

“Your parents?”

“They had already died from the disease. I was alone. That was why he chose me. In all the chaos of the epidemic, no one would ever realize I was gone.”

“How did he… save you?”

A few seconds passed before he answered. He seemed to choose his words carefully.

“It was difficult. Not many of us have the restraint necessary to accomplish it. But Carlisle has always been the most humane, the most compassionate of us… I don’t think you could find his equal
throughout all of history.” He paused. “For me, it was merely very, very painful.”

I could tell from the set of his lips, he would say no more on this subject. I suppressed my curiosity, though it was far from idle. There were many things I needed to think through on this particular issue, things that were only beginning to occur to me. No doubt his quick mind had already comprehended every aspect that eluded me.

His soft voice interrupted my thoughts. “He acted from loneliness. That’s usually the reason behind the choice. I was the first in Carlisle’s family, though he found Esme soon after. She fell from a cliff. They brought her straight to the hospital morgue, though, somehow, her heart was still beating.”

“So you must be dying, then, to become…” We never said the word, and I couldn’t frame it now.

“No, that’s just Carlisle. He would never do that to someone who had another choice.” The respect in his voice was profound whenever he spoke of his father figure. “It is easier he says, though,” he continued, “if the blood is weak.” He looked at the now-dark road, and I could feel the subject closing again.

“And Emmett and Royal?”

“Carlisle brought Royal to our family next. I didn’t realize till much later that he was hoping he would be to me what Esme was to him—he was careful with his thoughts around me.” He rolled his eyes. “But he was never more than a brother. It was only two years later that Royal found Emmett. He was hunting—we were in Appalachia at the time—and found a bear about to finish him off. He carried him back to Carlisle, more than a hundred miles, afraid he wouldn’t be able to do it himself. I’m only beginning to guess how difficult that journey was for him.” He threw a pointed glance in my direction, and raised his hand to brush my cheek.

“But he made it,” I encouraged, looking away from the unbearable beauty of his eyes.

“Yes,” he murmured. “He saw something in Emmett’s face that made him strong enough. And they’ve been together ever since. Sometimes they live separately from us, as a married couple. But the younger we pretend to be, the longer we can stay in any given place. Forks seemed perfect, so we all enrolled in high school.” He laughed. “I suppose we’ll have to go to their wedding in a few years, again.”

“Alice and Jasper?”

“Alice and Jasper are two very rare creatures. They both developed a conscience, as we refer to it, with no outside guidance. Jasper belonged to another… family, a very different kind of family. He became depressed, and he wandered on his own. Alice found him. Like me, she has certain gifts above and beyond the norm for our kind.”

“Really?” I interrupted, fascinated. “But you said you were the only one who could hear people’s thoughts.”

“That’s true. She knows other things. She sees things—things that might happen, things that are coming. But it’s very subjective. The future isn’t set in stone. Things change.”

His jaw set when he said that, and his eyes darted to my face and away so quickly that I wasn’t sure if I only imagined it.

“What kinds of things does she see?”

“She saw Jasper and knew that he was looking for her before he knew it himself. She saw Carlisle
and our family, and they came together to find us. She’s most sensitive to non-humans. She always
sees, for example when another group of our kind is coming near. And any threat they may pose.”

“Are there a lot of… your kind?” I was surprised. How many of them could walk among us
undetected?

“No, not many. But most won’t settle in any one place. Only those like us, who’ve given up hunting
you people”—a sly glance in my direction—“can live together with humans for any length of time.
We’ve only found one other family like ours, in a small village in Alaska. We lived together for a
time, but there were so many of us that we became too noticeable. Those of us who live… differently
tend to band together.”

“And the others?”

“Nomads, for the most part. We’ve all lived that way at times. It gets tedious, like anything else. But
we run across the others now and then, because most of us prefer the North.”

“Why is that?”

We were parked in front of my house now, and he’d turned off the truck. It was very quiet and dark;
there was no moon. The porch light was off so I knew my father wasn’t home yet.

“Did you have your eyes open this afternoon?” he teased. “Do you think I could walk down the
street in the sunlight without causing traffic accidents? There’s a reason why we chose the Olympic
Peninsula, one of the most sunless places in the world. It’s nice to be able to go outside in the day.
You wouldn’t believe how tired you can get of nighttime over the years.”

“So that’s where the legends came from?”

“Probably.”

“And Alice is from another family, like Jasper?”

“No, and that is a mystery. Alice doesn’t remember her human life at all. And she doesn’t know who
created her. She awoke alone. Whoever made her walked away, and none of us understand why, or
how, he could. If she hadn’t had that other sense, if she hadn’t seen Jasper and Carlisle and known
that she would someday become one of us, she probably would have turned into a total savage.”

There was so much to think through, so much I still wanted to ask. But, to my great embarrassment,
my stomach growled. I’d been so intrigued, I hadn’t even noticed I was hungry. I realized now that I
was starving.

“I’m sorry, I’m keeping you from dinner.”

“I’m fine, really.

“I’ve never spent much time around anyone who eats food. I forget.”

“I want to stay with you.” It was easier to say in the darkness, knowing my face was bright red.

“Can’t I come in?” he asked.

“Would you like to?” I couldn’t picture it, this beautiful creature sitting in my father’s shabby kitchen
chair.

“Yes, if it’s all right.” I heard the door close quietly, and almost simultaneously he was outside my
door, opening it for me.


“It’s definitely resurfacing.”

He walked beside me in the night, so quietly I had to peek at him constantly to be sure he was still there. In the darkness he looked much more normal. Still pale, still dreamlike in his beauty, but no longer the fantastic sparkling creature of our sunlit afternoon.

He reached the door ahead of me and opened it for me. I paused halfway through the frame.

“Did I forget to lock the door this morning?”

“No, I used the key from under the eave.”

I stepped inside, flicked on the porch light, and turned to look at him with my eyebrows raised. I was sure I’d never used that key in front of him.

“I was curious about you.”

“You spied on me?” My voice was incredulous.

A guilty look crept upon his face. “What else is there to do at night?”

I let it go for now and went down the hall to the kitchen. He was there before me, needing no guide. He sat in the very chair I’d tried to picture him in. His beauty lit up the kitchen. It was a moment before I could look away.

I concentrated on getting my dinner, taking last night’s lasagna from the fridge, placing a square on a plate heating it in the microwave. It revolved, filling the kitchen with the smell of tomatoes and oregano. I didn’t take my eyes from the plate of food as I spoke.

“How often?” I asked, keeping my voice even.

“Hmmm?” He sounded as if I had pulled him from some other train of thought.

I still didn’t turn around. “How often did you come here?”

“I come here almost every night.”

I whirled around, stunned. “Edward! Why?”

“You’re interesting when you sleep.” That guilty look was back on his face. “You talk.” He said sheepishly.

“No!” I gasped, heat flooding my face all the way to my hairline. I gripped the kitchen counter for support. I knew I talked in my sleep, of course; my mother teased me about it. I hadn’t thought it was something I needed to worry about here, though.

His expression grew more chagrined and his voice dropped very low. “Are you very angry with me?”

“Oh, I’m angry. But how angry I am depends.” I felt and sounded like I’d had the breath knocked out of me.
He waited.

“On?” he urged.

“What you heard!” I wailed.

Instantly, silently, he was at my side, taking my hands carefully in his.

“Please don’t be upset!” He pleaded. He dropped his face to the level of my eyes, holding my gaze. He was clearly repentant. I tried to look away though.

“You miss your mother,” he whispered. “You worry about her. And when it rains, the sound makes you restless. You used to talk about home a lot, but it’s less often now. Once you said, ‘it’s too green.’” He laughed softly, hoping, I could see, not to offend me further.

“Anything else?” I demanded.

He hung his head. “You did say my name,” he admitted.

I sighed in defeat. “A lot?”

“How much do you mean by ‘a lot,’ exactly?”

“Oh, god!” I felt my face flush anew.

He pulled me against his chest, softly, naturally.

“I’m so sorry, I know I shouldn’t have. Please, don’t be self-conscious,” he whispered in my ear. “If I could dream at all, it would be of you. And I’m not ashamed of it.”

Then we both heard the sound of tires on the brick driveway, saw the headlights flash through the front windows, down the hall to us. I stiffened in his arms.

“Should your father know I’m here?” he asked.

“I’m not sure…” I looked down at his open shirt, “probably not like this…”

“Another time then…”

And I was alone.

“Edward!” I hissed.

I heard a ghostly chuckle, then nothing else.

My father’s key turned in the door.

“Beau?” he called. It had bothered me before; who else would it be? Suddenly he didn’t seem so far off base.

“In here.” I hoped he couldn’t hear the panicked edge to my voice. I grabbed my dinner from the microwave and sat at the table as he walked in. His footsteps sounded so noisy after my day with Edward.

“Can you get me some of that? I’m bushed.” He stepped on the heels of his boots to take them off, holding the back of Edward’s chair for support.
I took my food with me, scarfing it down as I got his dinner. I filled two glasses with water while his lasagna was heating, and gulped mine down quickly. As I set the glass down, I noticed the water trembling and realized my hand was shaking. Charlie sat in the chair, and the contrast between him and its former occupant was comical.

“Thanks,” he said as I placed his food on the table.

“How was your day?” I asked. The words were rushed; I was eager to go up to my room.

“Good. The fish were biting… how about you? Did you get everything done that you wanted to?”

“Not really—it was too nice out to stay indoors.” I took another big bite.

“It was a nice day,” he agreed. What an understatement, I thought to myself.

Finished with the last bite of lasagna, I lifted my glass and chugged the remains of my water.

Charlie surprised me by being observant. “In a hurry?”

“Yeah, I’m tired. I’m going to bed early.”

“You look kind of keyed up,” he noted. Why, oh why, did this have to be his night to pay attention?

“Do I?” was all I could manage in response. I quickly scrubbed my dishes clean in the sink, and placed them upside down on a dish towel to dry.

“It’s Saturday,” he mused.

“It is.”

“No plans tonight?” he asked suddenly.

“No, Dad, I just want to get some sleep.”

“So… none of the boys in town your type, eh?” I had to smile a little at Charlie’s effort.

“No, none of the boys in town have caught my eye yet.” I was careful not to over-emphasize the word boys in my quest to be truthful with Charlie.

“I thought maybe that Mike Newton… you said he was friendly.”

“He’s just a friend, Dad.” I couldn’t help but roll my eyes, “and dating my other friend.”

“Well, you’re too good for them all, anyway. Wait till you get to college to start looking.” He tried to sound jovial.

“Sounds like a good idea to me,” I agreed as I headed up the stairs.

“Night, son,” he called after me. No doubt he would be listening carefully all evening, waiting for me to try and sneak out.

“See you in the morning, Dad.”

I worked to make my tread sound slow and tired as I walked up the stairs to my room. I shut the door loud enough for him to hear, and then sprinted on my tiptoes to the window. I threw it open and leaned out into the night. My eyes scanned darkness, the impenetrable shadows of the trees.
“Edward?” I whispered, feeling completely idiotic.

The quiet, laughing response came from behind me. “Yes?”

I whirled, one hand flying to my heart in surprise.

He lay, smiling hugely, across my bed, his hands behind his head, his shirt still open, his feet dangling off the end, the picture of ease.

“You scared me!” I scolded him.

“I’m sorry.” He pressed his lips together, trying to hide his amusement.

“Just give me a minute to restart my heart.”

He sat up slowly, so as not to startle me again. Then he leaned forward and reached out with his long arms to grab mine. He pulled me to him, sitting me on the bed beside him.

“Why don’t you sit with me,” he suggested, putting a cold hand on my chest. “How’s the heart?”

“You tell me—I’m sure you hear it better than I do.”

I felt his quiet laughter shake the bed.

We sat there for a moment in silence, both listening to my heartbeat slow. I thought about having Edward in my room, in my bed, his shirt open, and my father was right downstairs.

“Can I have a minute to be human?” I asked.

“Certainly.” He gestured with one hand that I should proceed.

“Stay,” I said, trying to look severe.

“Yes, sir.” And he made a show of becoming a statue on the edge of my bed.

I hopped up, hastily grabbing a clean shirt to sleep in, and a new pair of boxers. I left the light off and slipped out, closing the door.

I could hear the sound from the TV rising up the stairs. I banged the bathroom door loudly, so Charlie wouldn’t come up to check on me.

I meant to hurry. I brushed my teeth fiercely, trying to be thorough and speedy, removing all traces of lasagna. But the hot water of the shower couldn’t be rushed. It unknotted the muscles in my back, calmed my pulse. The familiar smell of my shampoo made me feel like I might be the same person I had been this morning. I tried not to think of Edward, sitting in my room, his shirt open, in my bed, waiting, because then I had to start all over with the calming process. Finally, I couldn’t delay anymore. I shut off the water, toweling quickly, rushing again. I pulled on the shirt and boxers. Too late to regret not grabbing a pair of sweatpants.

I rubbed the towel through my hair again, then threw the towel in the hamper. I dashed down the stairs so Charlie could see that I was ready for bed, with wet hair.

“Night, Dad.”

“Night, Beau.” He did look surprised by my appearance. Maybe that would keep him from checking on me tonight.
I took the stairs two at a time, trying to be quiet, and flew into my room, closing the door tightly behind me.

Edward hadn’t moved a fraction of an inch, a carving of Adonis perched on my faded quilt. I smiled, and his lips twitched, the statue coming to life.

His eyes appraised me, taking in the damp hair, the shirt. His glanced down to my lack of pants and he raised his eyebrows.

“Sorry, I can put on a pair of sweatpants.” I blushed.

“Is this what you usually wear?” His voice was low.

“You tell me.” I narrowed my eyes at him.

He smiled sheepishly, “You’re always wrapped in a blanket.” He grinned, mischievously, “But this looks quite good.”

“Thanks,” I whispered. I went back to his side, sitting cross-legged beside him. I looked at the lines in the wooden floor, trying not to stare at his face or bare torso.

“What was all that for?”

“Charlie thinks I’m sneaking out.”

“Oh.” He contemplated that. “Why?” As if he couldn’t know Charlie’s mind much more clearly than I could guess.

“Apparently, I look a little overexcited.”

He lifted my chin, examining my face.

“Are you?”

“Maybe.”

“You look very warm, actually.”

He bent his face slowly to mine, laying his cool cheek against my skin. I held perfectly still.

“Mmmmmm…,” he breathed.

In was very difficult, while he was touching me, especially in this setting, to frame a coherent question. It took me a minute to regain my concentration.

“It seems to be… much easier for you, now, to be close to me.”

“Does it seem that way to you?” he murmured, his nose gliding to the corner of my jaw. I felt his hand gently wrap around my waist, sliding me closer to him. His lips rested on the hollow beneath my ear.

“Much, much easier,” I said, trying to exhale.

“Hmm.”

“So I was wondering…,” I began again, but his fingers were slowly tracing my collarbone, and I lost
my train of thought.

“Yes?” he breathed.

“Why is that,” my voice shook, embarrassing me, “do you think?”

I felt the tremor of his breath on my neck as he laughed. “Mind over matter.”

I pulled back; as I moved, he froze—and I could no longer hear the sound of his breathing.

We stared cautiously at each other for a moment, and then, as his clenched jaw gradually relaxed, his expression became puzzled.

“Did I do something wrong?”

“No—the opposite. You’re driving me crazy,” I explained.

He considered that briefly, and when he spoke, he sounded pleased. “Really?” A triumphant smile slowly lit his face.

“Would you like a round of applause?” I asked sarcastically.

He grinned.

“I’m just pleasantly surprised,” he clarified. “in the last hundred years or so,” his voice was teasing, “I never imagined anything like this. I didn’t believe I would ever find someone I wanted to be with… in another way than my brothers and sister. And then to find, even though it’s all new to me, that I’m good at it… at being with you…”

“You’re very good at it,” I pointed out.

He shrugged, with a wide grin. We both laughed in whispers

“But how can it be so easy now?” I pressed. “This afternoon…”

“It’s not easy,” he sighed. “But this afternoon, I was still… undecided. I am sorry about that, it was unforgivable for me to behave so.”

“Not unforgivable,” I disagreed.

“Thank you.” He smiled. “You see,” he continued, looking down now, “I wasn’t sure if I was strong enough…” He picked up one of my hands and pressed it lightly to his face. “And while there was still that possibility that I might be… overcome”—he breathed in the scent at my wrist—“I was… susceptible. Until I made up my mind that I was strong enough, that there was no possibility at all that I would… that I ever could…”

I’d never seen him struggle so hard for words. It was so… human.

“So there’s no possibility now?”

“Mind over matter,” he repeated, smiling, his teeth bright even in the darkness.

“Well, that was easy,” I said.

He threw back his head and laughed, quietly as a whisper, but still exuberantly.
“Easy for you!” he amended, running a finger along my jaw.

And then his face was abruptly serious.

“I’m trying,” he whispered, his voice pained. “If it gets to be… too much, I’m fairly sure I’ll be able to leave.”

“Fairly sure is… good.”

“And it will be harder tomorrow,” he continued. “I’ve had the scent of you in my head all day, and I’ve grown amazingly desensitized. If I’m away from you for any length of time, I’ll have to start over again. Not quite from scratch, though, I think.”

“Don’t go away, then,” I responded, unable to hide the longing in my voice.

He looked surprised for a moment, “That suits me,” he replied, his face relaxing into a gentle smile. “Bring on the shackles—I’m your prisoner.” He held out his wrists to me and I wrapped my hands around them, forming manacles. I fought the nearly overpowering urge to climb on top of him. He laughed his quiet, musical laugh. He’d laughed more tonight that I’d ever heard in all the time I’d spent with him.

“You seem more… optimistic than usual,” I observed, trying to distract myself. “I haven’t seen you like this before.”

“Isn’t it supposed to be like this?” He smiled. “The glory of first love, and all that. It’s incredible, isn’t it, the difference between reading about something, seeing it in the pictures, and experiencing it?”

“Very different,” I agreed. “More forceful than I’d imagined.”

“For example”—his words flowed swiftly now, I had to concentrate to catch it all—“the emotion of jealousy. I’ve read about it a hundred thousand times, seen actors portray it in a thousand different plays and movies. I believed I understood that one pretty clearly. But it shocked me…” He grimaced. “Do you remember the day that Mike asked you to the dance?”

I nodded, though I remembered that day for a different reason. “The day you started talking to me again.”

“I was surprised by the flare of resentment, almost fury, that I felt—I didn’t recognize what it was at first. I was even more aggravated than usual that I couldn’t know what you were thinking, why you refused him. Was it simply for your friend’s sake? Was there someone else? I knew I had no right to care either way. I tried not to care.

“And then,” he chuckled. I rolled my eyes in the darkness.

“I waited, unreasonably anxious to hear what you would say to them, to watch your expressions. I couldn’t deny the relief I felt, watching the annoyance on your face. But I couldn’t be sure.

“That was the first night I came here. I wrestled all night, while watching you sleep, with the chasm between what I knew was right, moral, ethical, and what I wanted. I knew that if I continued to ignore you as I should, or if I left for a few years, till you were gone, that someday you might say yes to Mike, or someone like him. It made me angry.”

“And then,” he whispered, “as you were sleeping, you said my name. You spoke so clearly, at first I thought you’d woken. But you rolled over restlessly and mumbled my name once more, and sighed.
The feeling that coursed through me was unnerving, staggering. And I knew I couldn’t ignore you any longer.” He was silent for a moment, probably listening to the beating of my heart.

“But jealousy… it’s a strange thing. So much more powerful than I would have thought. And irrational! Just now, when Charlie asked you about that vile Mike Newton…” he shook his head angrily.

“I should have known you’d be listening.”

“I’m sorry.”

“That made you feel jealous, though, really?”

“I’m new at this; you’re resurrecting the human in me, and everything feels stronger because it’s fresh.”

“But honestly.” I teased, “for that to bother you, after I have to hear that Royal—Royal, the incarnation of pure masculine beauty, Royal—was meant for you. Emmett or no Emmett, how can I compete with that?”

“There’s no competition.” His teeth gleamed. He took my hands and drew them around his back, holding me to his chest. I kept as still as I could, even breathing with caution.

“I know there’s no competition,” I mumbled into his cold skin. “That’s the problem.”

“Of course Royal is beautiful in his way, but even if he wasn’t like a brother to me, even if Emmett didn’t hold his heart, he could never have one tenth, no, one hundredth of the attraction you hold for me.” He was serious now, thoughtful. “For all these years I’ve walked among my kind, and yours… all the time thinking I was complete in myself, not realizing what I was seeking. And not finding anything, because you weren’t alive yet.”

“It hardly seems fair,” I whispered, my face still resting on his bare chest, listening to his breath come and go. “I haven’t had to wait at all. Why should I get off so easily?”

“You’re right,” he agreed with amusement. “I should make this harder for you, definitely.” He took both my hands and held them above my head in one of his hands, his other hand traced down my arm to my neck, he gently turned my head to the side and ran his lips along my jaw, whispering softly. “You only have to risk your life every second you spend with me, that’s surely not much. You only have to turn your back on nature, on humanity… what’s that worth?”

“I don’t feel that deprived, to be honest.” I breathed.

“Not yet.” And his voice was abruptly full of ancient grief.

I tried to pull back, to look at his face, but his hand locked my wrists in an unbreakable hold. He chuckled softly, continuing to gently rub his lips along my jaw, then down my neck.

“If it’s any consolation,” my breath shuddered, “You’re definitely making things a lot h—“

His body suddenly became alert. I froze, but he suddenly released my hands, and disappeared. I bolted upright in surprise.

“Lie down!” He hissed. I couldn’t tell where he spoke from in the darkness.

I rolled under my quilt, balling up on my side, the way I usually slept. I heard the door crack open, as
Charlie peeked in to make sure I was where I was supposed to be. I breathed evenly, exaggerating the movement.

A long minute passed. I listened, not sure if I’d heard the door close. Then Edward’s cool arm was around me, under the covers, his lips at my ear.

“You are a terrible actor—I’d say that career path is out for you.”

“Oh damn,” I muttered. My heart was still beating wildly.

He hummed a melody I didn’t recognize; it sounded like a lullaby.

He paused. “Should I sing you to sleep?”

“Right,” I laughed. “Like I could sleep with you here!”

“You do it all the time,” he reminded me.

“But I didn’t know you were here,” I replied icily.

“So if you don’t want to sleep…,” he suggested, ignoring my tone. My breath caught.

“If I don’t want to sleep…?”

He chuckled. “What do you want to do then?”

I couldn’t answer at first.

“I’m not sure,” I finally said.

“Tell me when you decide.”

I could feel his cool breath on my neck, feel his nose sliding along my jaw, inhaling.

“I thought you were desensitized.”

“Just because I’m resisting the wine, doesn’t mean I can’t appreciate the bouquet,” He whispered.

“You have a very beautiful smell, like lavender… or freesia with hints of… vanilla, and orange flower,” he noted. “It’s mouthwatering.”

“Yeah, it’s an off day when I don’t get somebody telling me how edible I smell.”

He chuckled, and then sighed.

“I’ve decided what I want to do,” I told him. “I want to hear more about you.”

“Ask me anything.”

I sifted through my questions for the most vital. “Why do you do it?” I asked. “I still don’t understand how you can work so hard to resist what you… are. Please don’t misunderstand, of course I’m glad that you do. I just don’t see why you would bother in the first place.”

He hesitated before answering. “That’s a good question, and you are not the first one to ask it. The others—the majority of our kind who are quite content with our lot—they, too, wonder at how we live. But you see, just because we’ve been… dealt a certain hand… it doesn’t mean we can’t choose to rise above—to conquer the boundaries of a destiny that none of us wanted. To try to retain
whatever essential humanity we can..”

I lay unmoving, locked in awed silence.

“Did you fall asleep?” he whispered after a few minutes.

“No.”

“Is that all you were curious about?”

I rolled my eyes. “Not quite.”

“What else do you want to know?”

“Why can you read minds—why only you? And Alice, seeing the future… why does that happen?”

I felt him shrug in the darkness. “We don’t really know. Carlisle has a theory… he believes that we bring something of our strongest human traits with us into the next life, where they are intensified—like our minds, and our senses. He thinks that I must have already been very sensitive to the thoughts of those around me. And that Alice had some precognition, wherever she was.”

“What did he bring into the next life, and the others?”

“Carlisle brought his compassion. Esme brought her ability to love passionately. Emmett brought his strength, Royal his… tenacity. Or you could call it pigheadedness,” he chuckled. “Jasper is very interesting. He was quite charismatic in his first life, able to influence those around him to see things his way. Now he is able to manipulate the emotions of those around him—calm down a room of angry people, for example, or excite a lethargic crowd, conversely. It’s a very subtle gift.”

I considered the impossibilities he described, trying to take it in. He waited patiently while I thought.

“So where did it all start? I mean, Carlisle changed you, and then someone must have changed him, and so on….”

“Well, where did you come from? Evolution? Creation? Couldn’t we have evolved in the same way as other species, predator and prey? Didn’t the world produce the delicate angelfish and the shark, the baby seal and the killer whale? Couldn’t it create both our kinds together?”

“Let me get this straight—I’m the baby seal, right?”

“Right.” He laughed, and something touched my hair—his lips?

I wanted to turn toward him, to see if it was really his lips against my hair. But I had to be good; I didn’t want to make this any harder for him than it already was.

“Beau?” His voice was gentle, seductive.

I turned my head and he moved his body slightly on top of mine, one hand on my cheek, the other at my waist. He slowly, gently pressed his lips to mine. My pulse quickened, and I tried to wrap my arms around his neck as slowly as my hormones would allow me. My hands ran through his hair, and I heard a low growl in his throat. I felt myself giving in completely to my urges, and I knew doing so would push Edward’s strength of will too far. I gently pulled myself away, panting softly. I gazed at his face, his eyes were wild and hungry again.

“Did I do something wrong?” even in the dark, I could tell he looked confused, his voice was rough.
“Not at all,” I breathed, “I need a minute this time.”

He smiled, “Are you ready to sleep?” his voice was more gentle now. “Or do you have any more questions?”

“Only a million or two.”

“We have tomorrow, and the next day, and the next…,” he reminded me. I smiled, euphoric at the thought.

“Are you sure you won’t disappear?”

“I won’t leave you.” His voice had the seal of a promise in it.

“One more, then, tonight…” and I blushed. The darkness was no help—I’m sure he could feel the sudden warmth under my skin.

“What is it?”

“No, forget it. I changed my mind.”

“Beau, you can ask me anything.”

I didn’t answer, and he groaned.

“I keep thinking it will get less frustrating, not hearing your thoughts. But it just gets worse and worse.”

“I’m glad you can’t read my thoughts. It’s bad enough that you eavesdropped on my sleep-talking.”

“Please?” His voice was so persuasive, so impossible to resist.

I shook my head.

“If you don’t tell me, I’ll just assume it’s something much worse than it is,” he warned darkly.

“Please?” Again, that pleading voice.

“Well,” I began, glad that he couldn’t see my face.

“Yes?”

“Okay… Umm…” I fidgeted, nervously. “Wow, this isn’t easy.” I took a deep breath. “Okay, so, you said that Royal and Emmett have been a couple for a long time… right?”

“Yes…” he said slowly.

“They’ve… gotten married?”

“Yes.” He repeated, his voice confused.

“They’ve… had wedding nights?” I finally got the words out, in the most roundabout way.

He laughed in earnest now, understanding. “Is that what you’re getting at?”

“Well, I didn’t want to just ask in a gross way.” I fidgeted.

“Yes, I suppose it’s much the same,” he said. “I told you, most of those human desires are there, just
hidden behind more powerful desires.”

“So, you never… before you became…” I trailed off.

“No, I didn’t. There was never anyone before you.” He said, his voice tender and low.

“Oh,” I said softly, “good to know.”

“Was there a purpose behind your curiosity?”

“Well, I guess I did wonder… about you and me… someday…”

He was instantly serious, I could tell by the sudden stillness of his body. I froze, too, reacting automatically.

“I don’t think that… that… would be possible for us.”

“Because it would be too… difficult for you, if I were that…. Close?”

“That’s certainly a problem. But that’s not what I was thinking of. It’s just that you’re so soft, so fragile. I have to mind my actions every moment that we’re together so that I don’t hurt you. I could kill you quite easily, Beau, simply by accident.” His voice had become just a soft murmur. He moved his icy palm to rest it against my cheek. “If I was too hasty… if for one second I wasn’t paying enough attention, I could reach out, meaning to touch your face, and crush your skull by mistake. You don’t realize how incredibly breakable you are. I can never, never afford to lose any kind of control when I’m with you.”

He waited for me to respond, growing anxious when I didn’t. “Are you scared?”

I waited for a minute to answer, so the words would be true. “No, I’m fine.”

He seemed to deliberate for a moment. “I’m curious now, though.” He said, his voice light again. “Have you ever…?” He trailed off suggestively.

“No I haven’t.” I flushed. “I told you I’ve never felt like this about anyone before, not even close.”

“I know. It’s just that I know other people’s thoughts. I know love and lust don’t always keep the same company.”

“They do for me. Now, anyway, that they exist for me at all,” I sighed.

“That’s nice. We have that in common.” He sounded satisfied.

“Your human instincts…,” I began. He waited. “Well, do you find me attractive, in that way, at all.”

He laughed and lightly rumpled my nearly dry hair.

“I may not be a human, but I am a man,” he assured me.

“Oh?”

I could see him grin mischievously in the dark, repining my arms above me, he leaned in and brushed his lips against my ear.

“Believe me.” He growled the words seductively. It sent a shiver down my body.
“I do.” I practically choked the words out, my heart was beating so fast.

“I’m not sure you do,” he purred into my ear. “Shall I tell you all the things I find attractive about you?”

“No, you don’t have to.” I breathed.

“It was your eyes first. You have beautiful eyes, Beau, like silver and diamonds. Utterly captivating.”

“Er, thank you…”

He chuckled softly. “I’m not alone. Nearly everyone noticed your eyes first.”

“I think you’re making that up.”

“Hardly,” his lips brushed my ears. “Next was your nose,” he raised his hand and touched a cold finger to my nose, “and your chin.” His fingers caught my chin gently. “I could go on and on if you let me.”

“You don’t have to keep going on.” I blushed.

“Mmm…” he breathed into my ear again. “I must tell you, it took me quite by surprise to realize that not only did I find you delicious, but also intelligent, fascinating, and beautiful.”

My face was burning. I didn’t know if I entirely believed him, but in the moment, he was pretty convincing.

“Oh, and I didn’t even mention your hair.” His nose brushed through my hair.

“Now you’re just being over the top.”

“I’m truly not. Did you know your hair is precisely the same shade as a mahogany inlaid ceiling in a monastery I once stayed at in… I think it would be Cambodia now?”

“Um, no, I did not.” I yawned involuntarily.

He grinned, “I’ve answered your questions, now you should sleep,” he insisted.

“I’m not sure if I can.”

“Do you want me to leave?” He released my hands and slowly began to move away.

“No!” I said too loudly, reaching out and hooking my arms around his neck, pulling him back to me.

He laughed, and settled himself next to me, wrapping me in his arms. He began to hum that same, unfamiliar lullaby; the voice of an angel, soft in my ear.

More tired than I realized, exhausted from the long day of mental and emotional stress like I’d never felt before, I drifted to sleep in his cold arms.
The muted light of yet another cloudy day eventually woke me. I lay with my arm across my eyes, groggy and dazed. Something, a dream trying to be remembered, struggled to break into my consciousness. I moaned and rolled on my side, hoping more sleep would come. And then the previous day flooded back into my memory.

“Oh!” I sat up so fast it made my head spin.

“Your hair looks like a haystack… but I like it.” His unruffled voice came from the rocking chair in the corner.

I ran my hands through my hair in a feeble attempt to tame the curls.

“You stayed.” It was like I hadn’t woken up after all.

“Of course. That’s what you wanted, correct?”

I nodded.

He smiled, widely. “It’s what I wanted too.”

I staggered out of bed towards him; he grinned as he took hold of my hands and pulled me into his lap. I laid my head cautiously against his shoulder, breathing in the smell of his skin.

“I was almost sure it was a dream.”

“You’re not that creative,” he scoffed.

“Charlie!” I remembered, jumping up and heading to the door.

“He left an hour ago, with an amazing amount of gear.”

I deliberated where I stood, wanting to return to him badly, but afraid I might have morning breath.

“You’re not usually this confused in the morning,” He noted.

I glared at him, “I’m still not sure I’m okay with the fact that you know that.”

He smiled that guilty smile of his, and held his arms open for me to return; a vision of repentance.

“I need another human minute,” I admitted.

“I’ll wait.”

I rushed to the bathroom, my emotions all over the place. I felt like I didn’t know myself, inside or out. The face in the mirror was practically a stranger—eyes too bright, hectic spots of red across my cheekbones. After I brushed my teeth I worked to tame the chaos that was my hair. I splashed my face with cold water, and tried to take a few deep breaths. I hurried back to my room.

It still seemed like a dream that he was there, his arms still waiting for me. He reached out to me, and my heartbeat quickened.

“Welcome back,” he purred, taking me into his arms.
He held me there for a while in silence, until I noticed that his clothes were changed, and his hair
smooth.

“You left?” I touched the collar of his fresh shirt.

“I could hardly leave in the clothes I came in—what would the neighbors think?”

“I didn’t even notice you go.”

“You were very deeply asleep; I didn’t miss anything.” His eyes gleamed. “The talking came
earlier.”

I groaned. I had invited him to stay this time, so this was my own fault. “What did you hear?”

His gold eyes grew very soft, his face looked very vulnerable. “You said you loved me.”

I blushed. “Maybe I do.” I ducked my head. “Besides, you knew that already.”

“It was nice to hear, just the same.”

I looked him in the eyes and ran my hands through his bronze hair.

“I love you,” I whispered.

“You are my life now,” he answered simply.

He leaned forward and rested his forehead carefully against mine and we sat there, saying nothing, as
the morning light slowly filled the room.

“Breakfast time,” he said eventually, slowly leaning back.

I threw my hand over my jugular, my eyes wild.

He flinched; then his eyes narrowed and he scowled at me.

I laughed. “Come on, you know that was funny.”

He was still frowning. “I disagree. Shall I rephrase? Breakfast time for the human.”

“Okay. I need one more human minute first, if you don’t mind.”

“Of course.”

“Stay.”

“Oh, yes, sir.” He smiled.

I brushed my teeth again, and then rushed through my shower. I ripped through my wet hair with a
brush, trying to make it look presentable. It ignored me pretty thoroughly. And then I hit a wall. I’d
forgotten to bring clothes with me.

I hesitated for a minute, but I was too impatient to panic long. There was no help for it. I tucked the
towel securely around my waist and then marched into the hall with my face bright red. I stood
hesitantly in the doorway.

“Um...”
He was still in the rocking chair. He raised his eyebrows at my state of undress.

“I… Er…” He looked conflicted, “Shall we meet in the kitchen, then?”

“If you don’t mind.”

I was sure he muttered something that sounded like “The death of me…” before he rose to his feet. He passed me in a rush of cool air, down the stairs before a second had passed. I was barely able to follow the motion—he was just a streak of pale color, then nothing.

“Thanks,” I called after him, then hurried to my dresser.

I decided to wear my nice fitted jeans and the blue shirt Edward had complimented before. I also grabbed a sweater, so he wouldn’t worry about me getting cold.

I raked my fingers through my hair to calm it again, then ran down the stairs.

He was leaning against the counter, looking very at home.

“What’s for breakfast?” I asked.

That threw him for a minute. His brows furrowed. “I’m not sure… What would you like?”

I laughed. “That’s all right, I fend for myself pretty well. You’re allowed to watch me hunt.”

I got a bowl and a box of cereal. He returned to the chair he’d sat in last night, watching as I poured the milk and grabbed a spoon. I set my food on the table, then paused. The empty space in front of him on the table made me feel rude.

“Um, can I… get you anything?”

He rolled his eyes. “Just eat, Beau.”

I sat at the table, watching him as I took a bite. He was gazing at me, studying my every movement. It made me self-conscious. I swallowed so I could speak, wanting to distract him.

“Anything on the agenda today?”

“Perhaps,” he said. “That depends on whether or not you like my idea.”

“I’m sure I’ll like it,” I offered as I took a second bite.

He pursed his lips. “Are you open to meeting my family?”

I choked on my cereal.

He jumped up, one hand stretched toward me helplessly, probably thinking about how he could accidentally crush my lungs if he tried to give me the Heimlich. I shook my head and motioned for him to sit while I coughed the milk out of my windpipe.

“I’m fine, I’m fine,” I said when I could speak.

“Please don’t do that to me again, Beau.”

“Work on your timing.” I countered.

“Perhaps we should have this conversation after your meal.”
“Okay.” I needed a minute anyway.

He was apparently serious. And I guess I’d already met Alice and it hadn’t been that bad. And Dr. Cullen, too. But that had been back before I’d known Dr. Cullen was a vampire, which changed things. And while I had known with Alice, I didn’t know if she knew that I knew, and that felt kind of an important distinction to me. Also, Alice was the most supportive, according to Edward.

There were others who were obviously not as generous.

“I’ve finally done it,” he murmured when I swallowed the last bite and pushed the bowl away.

“What did you do?”

“I scared you.”

I shrugged, “I suppose you did.”

“I wouldn’t let anyone hurt you,” he assured me.

But that just made me worry more that someone—Royal—would want to, and Edward would get in between to rescue me.

“No one would try, Beau, that was a joke.”

“I just don’t want to cause any problems. Do they even know that I know?”

He rolled his eyes. “Oh, they’re quite up to date. It’s not really possible keep secrets in my family, what with our various parlor tricks. Alice had already seen that your dropping by was a possibility.”

I could feel a variety of expressions rippling across my face before I could control it. What all did Alice see? Yesterday… last night… My face got hot.

I saw his eyes narrow the way they did when he was trying to read my mind.

“Just thinking about what Alice might have seen,” I explained before he could ask.

He nodded. “It can feel invasive. But she doesn’t do it on purpose. And she sees so many different possibilities… She doesn’t know which will happen. For example, she saw over a hundred different ways that yesterday could have gone, and you only survived about seventy-five percent of the scenarios.” His voice got very hard at the last part, his posture tense. “They’d taken bets, you know, as to whether or not I would kill you.”

“Oh.”

His expression was still rigid. “Do you want to know who sided for and against?”

“Um, maybe not. Tell me after I meet them. I don’t want to go into this prejudiced.”

Surprised erased the anger from his face. “Oh, you’ll go then?”

“Oh, why not.” I threw up my hands. “It’s traditional, isn’t it?”

He laughed, a long, bell-like peal. I couldn’t help but smile.

“If we’re being traditional,” He asked eagerly, “does that mean I get to meet Charlie, too?”
“He already knows you,” I reminded him.

“As your boyfriend, I mean.”

“Is that what you are?” I smiled.

“Of course.” He seemed confused. “Is it a question?”

“I suppose we’ve never said the words.”

He laughed, “I’m your boyfriend,” he said and I could almost hear an edge of excitement in his voice, “And I would like to meet your father.”

“Well, okay.” I said finally. “You’ll have to cut me some slack though, I’ve never introduced a boy to my dad and we just sort of opened up the conversation about boys. So I want to ease him into him.”

“It’s a loose interpretation of the word ‘boy,’ I’ll admit.” He reached across the table and ran a finger down my jaw, “but we’ll spare him all the gory details.” He smiled at me, lifting my chin with his finger. “He will need some explanation for why I’m around here so much. I don’t want Chief Swan getting a restraining order put on me.”

“Will you be here that much?” I asked, eagerly.

“As much as you want me,” he assured me.

“I want you a lot.” I said softly.

He grinned and rose swiftly, “Are you ready to go?”

“Sure, do I look decent?” I asked, standing and moving towards the door.

He grabbed me by my waist and pulled me close to him.

“Decent?” he murmured in my ear. “You are utterly indecent—no one should look so tempting, it’s not fair.”

“Tempting?” I asked, “I can change…”

“I wouldn’t dream of it.” He purred. He pressed his cool lips to my forehead, his sweet-smelling breath causing my head to spin. “Shall I explain how you are tempting me?”

His fingers traced slowly down my spine, his breath coming more quickly against my skin. My hands were limp on his chest, and I felt lightheaded and giddy. He tilted his head slowly and touched his cool lips to mine, very carefully, parting them slightly. I couldn’t stop myself from grabbing handfuls of his shirt, his grip on my waist tightened and I felt us stepping backwards until my back was against a wall. Edward growled seductively and his lips moved from my lips, along my jaw, and down my neck. My breath quickened and I felt an electric shiver run through my body.

“Okay, okay,” I gasped. “We need to stop.”

“Why?” He groaned into my neck, his voice disappointed.

“Because if you keep doing that I’m not going to be able to stop myself from jumping you.”

He reluctantly pulled away, grinning widely. “Perhaps that wouldn’t be the worst thing…”
“Don’t tempt me.” I groaned.

He smiled at me, looking me over. “I’m very partial to that color with your skin,” he offered unexpectedly. I flushed even redder than I already was.

“We need to get going, or we’re never going to leave.” I said, breathlessly.

“You’re starting to look worried.” He noted, softly.

“I am.”

“Not because you’re headed to meet a houseful of vampires, but because you think those vampires won’t approve of you, correct?”

“That’s right.” I answered immediately, hiding my surprise at his casual use of the word.

He shook his head. “You’re incredible.”

I realized, as he drove my truck out of the main part of town, that I had no idea where he lived. We passed over the bridge at the Calawah River, the road winding northward, the houses flashing past us growing farther apart, getting bigger. And then we were past the other houses altogether, driving through misty forest. I was trying to decide whether to ask or be patient, when he turned abruptly onto an unpaved road. It was unmarked, barely visible among the ferns. The forest encroached on both sides, leaving the road ahead only discernible for a few meters as it twisted, serpent like, around the ancient trees.

And then, after a few miles, there was some thinning of the woods, and we were suddenly in a small meadow, or was it actually a lawn? The gloom of the forest didn’t relent, though, for there were six primordial cedars that shaded an entire acre with their vast sweep of branches. The trees held their protecting shadow right up to the walls of the house that rose among them, making obsolete the deep porch that wrapped around the first story.

I don’t know what I had expected, but it definitely wasn’t this. The house was timeless, graceful, and probably a hundred years old. It was painted a soft, faded white, three stories tall, rectangular and well proportioned. The windows and doors were either part of the original structure or a perfect restoration. My truck was the only car in sight. I could hear the river close by, hidden in the obscurity of the forest.

“Wow.”

“You like it?” he smiled.

“It… has a certain charm.”

He leaned over and gently kissed my neck. Suddenly, he was out of the car and opening my door before I had even blushed.

“Ready?” He asked, smiling.

“Not even a little bit—let’s go.” I laughed nervously as my nerves started to get the best of me.

“You look fantastic.” He took my hand easily, without thinking about it.

We walked through the deep shade up to the porch. I knew he could feel my mounting tension; his
thumb rubbed soothing circles into the back of my hand.

He opened the door for me.

The inside was even more surprising, less predictable, than the exterior. It was very bright, very open, and very large. This must have originally been several rooms, but the walls had been removed from most of the first floor to create one wide space. The back, south-facing wall had been entirely replaced with glass, and, beyond the shade of the cedars, the lawn stretched bare to the wide river. A massive curving staircase dominated the west side of the room. The walls, the high beamed ceiling, the wooden floors, and the thick carpets were all varying shades of white.

Waiting to greet us, standing just to the left of the door, on a raised portion of the floor by a spectacular grand piano, were Edward’s parents.

I’d seen Dr. Cullen before, of course, yet I couldn’t help but be struck again by his youth, his outrageous perfection. At his side was Esme, I assumed, the only one of the family I’d never seen before. She had the same pale, beautiful features as the rest of them. Something about her heart-shaped face, her billows of soft, caramel-colored hair, reminded me of the ingénues of the silent-movie era. She was small, slender, yet less angular, more rounded than the others. They were both dressed casually, in light colors that matched the inside of the house. Their smile were welcoming, but they made no move to approach us. Trying not to frighten me, I guessed.

“Carlisle, Esme,” Edward’s voice broke the short silence, “this is Beau.”

“You’re very welcome, Beau.” Carlisle’s step was measured, careful as he approached me. He raised his hand tentatively, and I stepped forward to shake hands with him.

“It’s nice to see you again, Dr. Cullen.”

“Please, call me Carlisle.”

“Carlisle.” I grinned at him, my sudden confidence surprising me. I could feel Edward’s relief at my side.

Esme smiled and stepped forward as well, reaching for my hand. Her cold, stone grasp was just as I expected.

“It’s very nice to know you,” she said sincerely.

“Thank you. I’m glad to meet you, too.” And I was. It was like meeting a fairy tale—Snow White, in the flesh.

“Where are Alice and Jasper?” Edward asked, but no one answered, as they had just appeared at the top of the wide staircase.

“Hey, Edward!” Alice called enthusiastically. She ran down the stairs, a streak of black hair and white skin, coming to a sudden and graceful stop in front of me. Carlisle and Esme shot warning glances at her, but I liked it. It was natural—for her, anyway.

“Hi, Beau!” Alice said, and she bounced forward to kiss my cheek. If Carlisle and Esme had looked cautious before, they now looked staggered. There was surprise in my eyes, too, but I was also very pleased that she seemed to approve of me so entirely. I was startled to feel Edward stiffen at my side. I glanced at his face, but his expression was unreadable.

“You do smell nice, I never noticed before,” she commented, to my embarrassment.
No one else seemed to know quite what to say, and then Jasper was there—tall and leonine. A feeling of ease spread through me, and I was suddenly comfortable despite where I was. Edward stared at Jasper, raising one eyebrow, and I remembered what Jasper could do.

“Hello, Beau.” Jasper said. He kept his distance, not offering to shake my hand. But it was impossible to feel awkward near him.

“Hello, Jasper.” I smiled at him shyly, and then at the others. “It’s nice to meet you all—you have a very beautiful home,” I added conventionally.

“Thank you,” Esme said. “We’re so glad that you came.” She spoke with feeling, and I realized that she thought I was brave.

I also realized that Royal and Emmett were nowhere to be seen, and I remembered Edward’s too-innocent denial when I’d asked him if the others didn’t like me.

Carlisle’s expression distracted me from this train of thought; he was gazing meaningfully at Edward with an intense expression. Out of the corner of my eye, I saw Edward nod once.

I looked away, trying to be polite. My eyes wandered again to the beautiful instrument on the platform by the door. I suddenly remembered my childhood fantasy that, should I ever win a lottery, I would buy a grand piano for my mother. She wasn’t really good—she only played for herself on our secondhand upright—but I loved to watch her play. She was happy, absorbed—she seemed like a new, mysterious being to me then, someone outside the “mom” persona I took for granted. She put me through lessons, of course, but I didn’t remember much.

Esme noticed my preoccupation.

“Do you play?” she asked, inclining her head toward the piano.

I shook my head. “Not at all. But it’s so beautiful. Is it yours?”

“No,” she laughed. “Edward didn’t tell you he was musical?”

“No.” I glared at his suddenly innocent expression with narrowed eyes. “I should have known, I guess.”

Esme raised her delicate eyebrows in confusion.

“Is there anything he’s not good at?” I asked rhetorically.

Jasper snickered, Alice rolled her eyes, and Esme gave Edward a reproving look.

“I hope you haven’t been showing off—it’s rude,” she scolded.

“Just a bit,” he laughed freely. Her face softened at the sound, and they shared a brief look that I didn’t understand, though Esme’s face seemed almost smug.

“He’s been too modest, actually.” I corrected.

“Well, play for him,” Esme encouraged.

“You just said showing off was rude,” he objected.

“There are exceptions to every rule,” she replied. She smiled at me. “I’m being selfish. He doesn’t play enough, and I love to hear him.”
“I’d like to hear you play,” I told Edward.

“It’s settled then.” Esme pushed him toward the piano. He pulled me along, sitting me on the bench beside him.

He gave me a long, exasperated look before he turned to the keys.

And then his fingers flowed swiftly across the ivory, and the room was filled with a composition so complex, so luxuriant, it was impossible to believe only one set of hands played it. I felt my chin drop, my mouth open in astonishment, and heard low chuckles behind me at my reaction.

Edward looked at me casually, the music still surging around us without a break, and winked. “Do you like it?”

“Did you write this?” I asked, understanding.

He nodded. “It’s Esme’s favorite.”

“It’s beautiful.” I murmured softly, entranced by the sound.

Edward smiled. The music slowed, transforming into something softer, and to my surprise I detected the melody of his lullaby weaving through the profusion of notes.

“You inspired this one,” he said softly. “This is your song.” The music grew unbearably sweet.

I couldn’t speak.

“They like you, you know,” he said conversationally. “Esme, especially.”

I glanced behind me, but the huge room was empty now.

“Where did they go?”

“Very subtly giving us some privacy, I suppose.”

I sighed. “They like me. But Royal and Emmett…” I trailed off, not sure how to express my doubts.

He frowned. “Don’t worry about Royal,” he said, his eyes wide and persuasive. “He’ll come around.”

I pursed my lips skeptically. “Emmett?”

“Well, he thinks I’m a lunatic, it’s true, but he doesn’t have a problem with you. He’s trying to reason with Royal.”

“What is it that upset Royal?” I wasn’t sure I wanted to know the answer.

He sighed deeply. “Royal struggles the most with… with what we are. It’s hard for him to have someone on the outside know the truth. And he’s a little jealous.”

“Royal is jealous of me?” I asked, utterly perplexed.

“You’re human.” He shrugged. “He wishes that he were, too.”

“Oh,” I muttered, a little stunned. “Even Jasper, though…”

“That’s really my fault,” he said. “I told you he was the most recent to our way of life. I warned him
to keep his distance.”

I thought about the reason for that, and shuddered.

“Esme and Carlisle…?” I continued quickly, to keep him from noticing.

“Are happy to see me happy. Actually, Esme wouldn’t care if you had a third eye and webbed feet. All this time she’s been worried about me, afraid that there was something missing from my essential makeup, that I was too young when Carlisle changed me…. She’s ecstatic. Every time I touch you, she just about chokes with satisfaction.”

“Alice seems very… enthusiastic.”

“Alice has her own way of looking at things,” he said through tight lips.

“And you’re not going to explain that, are you?”

A moment of wordless communication passed between us. He realized that I knew he was keeping something from me. I realized that he wasn’t going to give anything away. Not now.

“So what was Carlisle telling you before?”

His eyebrows furrowed. “You noticed that, did you?”

I shrugged. “Give me some credit.”

He looked at me thoughtfully for a few seconds before answering.

“He wanted to tell me some news—he didn’t know if it was something I would share with you.”

“Will you?”

“I have to, because I’m going to be a little… overbearingly protective over the next few days—or weeks—and I wouldn’t want you to think I’m naturally a tyrant.”

“What’s wrong?”

“Nothing’s wrong, exactly. Alice just seems some visitors coming soon. They know we’re here, and they’re curious.”

“Visitors?”

“Yes… well, they aren’t like us, of course—in their hunting habits, I mean. They probably won’t come into town at all, but I’m certainly not going to let you out of my sight till they’re gone.”

I shivered.

“Finally, a rational response!” he murmured. “I was beginning to think you had no sense of self-preservation at all.”

I let that one pass, looking away, my eyes wandering again around the spacious room.

He followed my gaze. “Not what you expected, is it?” he asked, his voice smug.

“No,” I admitted.

“No coffins, no piled skulls in the corners; I don’t even think we have cobwebs… what a
disappointment this must be for you,” he continued slyly.

I ignored his teasing. “It’s so light… so open.”

He was more serious when he answered. “It’s the one place we never have to hide.”

The song he was still playing, my song, drifted to an end, the final chords shifting to a more melancholy key. The last note hovered poignantly in the silence.

“Thank you,” I murmured. I realized there were tears in my eyes. I wiped my eyes with the back of my hand, embarrassed.

He held my face in his hands and gently brushed the tears from the corner of my eyes with his thumbs.

“So human.” He said, softly.

I gazed at him questioningly, and he gazed back for a long moment before he finally smiled.

“Do you want to see the rest of the house?”

“Only if there’s coffins.”

He laughed, loudly, taking my hand, and leading me away from the piano.

“I’ll see what I can do.” He assured me.

We walked up the massive staircase, my hand trailing along the satin-smooth rail. The long hall at the top of the stairs was paneled with a honey-colored wood, the same as the floorboards.

“Royal and Emmett’s room… Carlisle’s office… Alice and Jasper’s room…” He gestured as he led me past the doors.

He would have continued, but I stopped dead at the end of the hall, staring incredulously at the ornament hanging on the wall above my head. Edward chuckled at my bewildered expression.

“You can laugh,” he said. “it is sort of ironic.”

I didn’t laugh, though. My hand raised automatically, one finger extended as if to touch the large wooden cross, its dark patina contrasting with the lighter tone of the wall. I didn’t touch it, though I was curious if the aged wood would feel as silky as it looked.

“It must be very old,” I guessed.

He shrugged. “Early sixteen-thirties, more or less.”

I looked away from the cross to stare at him.

“Why do you keep this here?” I wondered.

“Nostalgia. It belonged to Carlisle’s father.”

“He collected antiques?” I suggested doubtfully.

“No. He carved this himself. It hung on the wall above the pulpit in the vicarage where he preached.”
I wasn’t sure if my face betrayed my shock, but I returned to gazing at the simple, ancient cross, just in case. I quickly did the math in my head; the cross was over three hundred and seventy years old. The silence stretched on as I struggled to wrap my mind around the concept of so many years.

“Are you all right?” He sounded worried.

“How old is Carlisle?” I asked quietly, ignoring his question, still staring up.

“He just celebrated his three hundred and sixty-second birthday,” Edward said. I looked back at him, a million questions in my eyes.

He watched me carefully as he spoke.

“Carlisle was born in London, in the sixteen-forties, he believes. Time wasn’t marked as accurately then, for the common people anyway. It was just before Cromwell’s rule, though.”

I kept my face composed, aware of his scrutiny as I listened.

“He was the only son of an Anglican pastor. His mother died giving birth to him. His father was an intolerant man. As the Protestants came into power, he was enthusiastic in his persecution of Roman Catholics and other religions. He also believed very strongly in the reality of evil. He led hunts for witches, werewolves… and vampires.” I grew very still at the word. I’m sure he noticed, but he went on without pausing.

“They burned a lot of innocent people—of course the real creatures that he sought were not so easy to catch.

“When the pastor grew old, he placed his obedient son in charge of the raids. At first Carlisle was a disappointment; he was not quick to accuse, to see demons where they did not exist. But he was persistent, and more clever than his father. He actually discovered a coven of true vampires that lived hidden in the sewers of the city, only coming out at night to hunt. In those days, when monsters were not just myths and legends, that was the way many lived.

“The people gathered their pitchforks and torches, of course”—his brief laugh was darker now—“and waited where Carlisle had seen the monsters exit into the street. Eventually one emerged.”

His voice was very quiet; I strained to catch the words.

“He must have been ancient, and weak with hunger. Carlisle heard him call out in Latin to the others when he caught the scent of the mob. He ran through the streets, and Carlisle—he was twenty-three and very fast—was in the lead of the pursuit. The creature could have easily outrun them, but Carlisle thinks he was too hungry, so he turned and attacked. He fell on Carlisle first, but the others were close behind, and he turned to defend himself. He killed two men, and made off with a third, leaving Carlisle bleeding in the street.”

He paused. I could sense he was editing something, keeping something from me.

“Carlisle knew what his father would do. The bodies would be burned—anything infected by the monster must be destroyed. Carlisle acted instinctively to save his own life. He crawled away from the alley while the mob followed the fiend and his victim. He hid in a cellar, buried himself in some rotting potatoes for three days. It’s a miracle he was able to keep silent, to stay undiscovered.

“It was then, and he realized what he had become.”

I’m not sure what my face was revealing, but he suddenly broke off.
“How are you feeling?” he asked.

“I’m fine.” I assured him. And, thought I bit my lip in hesitation, he must have seen the curiosity burning in my eyes.

He smiled. “I expect you have a few more questions for me.”

“Just a few.”

His smiled widened over his brilliant teeth. He started back down the hall, pulling me along by the hand. “Come on, then,” he encouraged. “I’ll show you.”
Carlisle

He led me back to the room that he’d pointed out as Carlisle’s office. He paused outside the door for a brief moment.

“Come in,” Carlisle’s voice invited.

Edward opened the door to a high-ceilinged room with tall, west-facing windows. The walls were paneled again, in a darker wood—where they were visible. Most of the wall space was taken up by towering bookshelves that reached high above my head and held more books than I’d ever seen outside a library.

Carlisle sat behind a huge mahogany desk in a leather chair. He was just placing a bookmark in the pages of the thick volume he held. The room was how I’d always imagined a college dean’s would look—only Carlisle looked too young to fit the part.

“What can I do for you?” he asked us pleasantly, rising from his seat.

“I wanted to show Beau some of our history,” Edward said. “Well, your history, actually.”

“We didn’t mean to disturb you,” I apologized.

“Not at all. Where are you going to start?”

“The Waggoner,” Edward replied, placing one hand lightly on my shoulder and spinning me around to look back toward the door we’d just come through. My heart fluttered a bit; I had grown to appreciate the casual touches more than anything, no longer strained or hesitant.

The wall we faced now was different from the others. Instead of bookshelves, this was crowded with framed pictures of all sizes, some in vibrant colors, others dull monochromes. I searched for some logic, some binding motif the collection had in common, but I found nothing in my hasty examination.

Edward led me toward the far left side, standing me in front of a small square oil painting in a plain wooden frame. This one did not stand out among the bigger and brighter pieces; painted in varying tones of sepia, it depicted a miniature city full of steeply slanted roofs, with thin spires atop a few scattered towers. A wide river filled the foreground, crossed by a bridge covered with structures that looked like tiny cathedrals.

“London in the sixteen-fifties,” Edward said.


“Will you tell the story?” Edward asked. I twisted a little to see Carlisle’s reaction.

He met my glance and smiled. “I would,” he replied. “But I’m actually running a bit late. The hospital called this morning—Dr. Snow is taking a sick day. Besides, you know the stories as well as I do,” he added, grinning at Edward now.

It was a surreal combination—the everyday concerns of the town doctor stuck in the middle of a discussion of his early days in seventeenth-century London.
It was also unsettling to know that he spoke aloud only for my benefit.

After another warm smile for me, Carlisle left the room.

I stared at the little picture of Carlisle’s hometown for a long moment.

“What happened then?” I finally asked, staring up at Edward, who was watching me. “When he realized what had happened to him?”

He looked back to the paintings, and I looked to see which image caught his interest now. It was a larger landscape in dull fall colors—an empty, shadowed meadow in a forest, with a craggy peak in the distance.

“When he knew what he had become,” Edward said quietly, “he rebelled against it. He tried to destroy himself. But that’s not easily done.”

“How?” I didn’t mean to say it aloud, but the word broke through my shock.

“He jumped from great heights,” Edward told me, his voice impassive “He tried to drown himself in the ocean…but he was young to the new life, and very strong. It is amazing that he was able to resist… feeding… while he was still so new. The instinct is more powerful then, it takes over everything. But he was so repelled by himself that he had the strength to try and kill himself with starvation.”

“Is that possible?” My voice was faint.

“No, there are very few ways we can be killed.”

I opened my mouth to ask, but he spoke before I could.

“So he grew very hungry, and eventually weak. He strayed as far as he could from the human populace, recognizing that his willpower was weakening, too. For months he wandered by night, seeking the loneliest places, loathing himself.

“One night, a herd of deer passed his hiding place. He was so wild with thirst that he attacked without a thought. His strength returned and he realized there was an alternative to being the vile monster he feared. Had he not eaten venison in his former life? Over the next months his new philosophy was born. He could exist without being a demon. He found himself again.

“He began to make better use of his time. He’d always been intelligent, eager to learn. Now he had unlimited time before him. He studied by night, planned by day. He swam to France and—“

“He swam to France?”

“People swim the Channel all the time, Beau,” he reminded me patiently.

“Okay, but people don’t swim to France.”

“Swimming is easy for us—“

“What isn’t easy for you?” I griped.

He waited, his expression amused.

“I won’t interrupt again, I promise.”
He chuckled darkly, and finished his sentence. “Because, technically, we don’t need to breathe.”

“You—“

“No, no, you promised.” He laughed, putting his cold finger lightly to my lips. “Do you want to hear the story or not?”

“You can’t spring something like that on me, and then expect me not to say anything,” I mumbled against his finger.

He lifted his hand, moving it to rest against my neck.

“You don’t have to breathe?” I demanded.

“No, it’s not necessary. Just a habit.” He shrugged.

“How long can you go…without breathing?”

“Indefinitely, I suppose; I don’t know. It gets a bit uncomfortable—being without a sense of smell.”

“A bit uncomfortable,” I echoed.

I wasn’t paying attention to my own expression, but something in it made him grow somber. His hand dropped to his side and he stood very still, his eyes intent on my face. The silence lengthened. His features were immobile as stone.

“What is it?” I whispered, putting my hand on his frozen cheek.

His face softened under my hand, and he sighed. “I keep waiting for it to happen.”

“For what to happen?”

“I know that at some point, something I tell you or something you see is going to be too much. And then you’ll run away from me, screaming as you go.” He smiled half a smile, but his eyes were serious. “I won’t stop you. I want you to run, I want you to be safe. And yet, I want to be with you. The two desires are impossible to reconcile….”

He trailed off, staring at my face. Waiting.

“I’m not running anywhere,” I promised.

“We’ll see,” he said, smiling sadly.

I frowned at him. “So, go on—Carlisle was swimming to France.”

He paused, getting back into his story. Reflexively, his eyes flickered to another picture—the most colorful of them all, the most ornately framed, and the largest; it was twice as wide as the door it hung next to. The canvas overflowed with bright figures in swirling robes, writhing around long pillars and off marbled balconies. I couldn’t tell if it represented Greek mythology, or if the characters floating in the clouds above were meant to be biblical.

“Carlisle swam to France, and continued on through Europe, to the universities there. By night he studied music, science, medicine—and found his calling, his penance, in that, in saving human lives.” His expression became awed, almost reverent. “I can’t adequately describe the struggle; it took Carlisle two centuries of torturous effort to perfect his self-control. Now he is all but immune to the scent of human blood, and he is able to do the work he loves without agony. He finds a great
deal of peace there, at the hospital...” Edward stared off into space for a long moment. Suddenly he seemed to recall his purpose. He tapped his finger against the huge painting in front of us.

“He was studying in Italy when he discovered the others there. They were much more civilized and educated than the wraiths of the London sewers.”

He gestured to a comparatively sedate quartet of figures painted on the highest balcony, looking down calmly on the mayhem below them. I examined the grouping carefully and realized, with a startled laugh, that I recognized the golden-haired man.

“Solimena was greatly inspired by Carlisle’s friends. He often painted them as gods,” Edward chuckled. “Aro, Marcus, Caius,” he said, indicating the other three, two black-haired, one pale blond. “Nighttime patrons of the arts.”

“What happened to them?” I wondered aloud, my fingertip hovering a centimeter from the figures on the canvas.

“They’re still there.” He shrugged. “As they have been for who knows how many millennia. Carlisle stayed with them only for a short time, just a few decades. He greatly admired their civility, their refinement, but they persisted in trying to cure his aversion to ‘his natural food source,’ as they called it. They tried to persuade him, and he tried to persuade them, to no avail. At that point, Carlisle decided to try the New World. He dreamed of finding others like himself. He was very lonely, you see.

“He didn’t find anyone for a long time. But, as monsters became the stuff of fairy tales, he found he could interact with unsuspecting humans as if he were one of them. He began practicing medicine. But the companionship he craved evaded him; he couldn’t risk familiarity.

“When the influenza epidemic hit, he was working nights in a hospital in Chicago. He’d been turning over an idea in his mind for several years, and he had almost decided to act—since he couldn’t find a companion, he would create one. He wasn’t absolutely sure how his own transformation had occurred, so he was hesitant. And he was loath to steal anyone’s life the way his had been stolen. It was in that frame of mind that he found me. There was no hope for me; I was left in a ward with the dying. He had nursed my parents, and knew I was alone. He decided to try...”

His voice, nearly a whisper now, trailed off. He stared unseeingly through the west windows. I wondered which images filled his mind now, Carlisle’s memories or his own. I waited quietly.

When he turned back to me, a gentle angel’s smile lit his expression.

“And so we’ve come full circle,” he concluded.

“Have you always stayed with Carlisle, then?” I wondered.

“Almost always.” He put his hand lightly on my waist and pulled me with him as he walked through the door. I stared back at the wall of pictures, wondering if I would ever get to hear the other stories.

Edward didn’t say any more as we walked down the hall, so I asked, “Almost?”

He sighed, seeming reluctant to answer. “Well, I had a typical bout of rebellious adolescence—about ten years after I was... born... created, whatever you want to call it. I wasn’t sold on his life of abstinence, and I resented him for curbing my appetite. So I went off on my own for a time.”

“Really?” I was intrigued, rather than frightened, as I perhaps should have been.
He could tell. I vaguely realized that we were headed up the next flight of stairs, but I wasn’t paying much attention to my surroundings.

“That doesn’t repulse you?”

“No.”

“Why not?”

“I guess… it sounds reasonable.”

He barked a laugh, more loudly than before. We were at the top of the stairs now, in another paneled hallway.

“From the time of my new birth,” he murmured, “I had the advantage of knowing what everyone around me was thinking, both human and non-human alike. That’s why it took me ten years to defy Carlisle—I could read his perfect sincerity, understand exactly why he lived the way he did.

“It took me only a few years to return to Carlisle and recommit to his vision. I thought I would be exempt from the… depression… that accompanies a conscience. Because I knew the thoughts of my prey, I could pass over the innocent and pursue only the evil. If I followed a murderer down a dark alley where he stalked a young girl—if I saved her, then surely I wasn’t so terrible.”

I shivered, imagining only too clearly what he described—the alley at night, the frightened girl, the dark man behind her. And Edward, Edward as he hunted, terrible and glorious as an unstoppable god. Would she have been grateful, that girl, or more frightened than before?

“But as time went on, I began to see the monster in my eyes. I couldn’t escape the debt of so much human life taken, no matter how justified. And I went back to Carlisle and Esme. They welcomed me back like the prodigal. It was more than I deserved.”

We’d come to a stop in front of the last door in the hall.

“My room,” he informed me, opening it and leading me through.

His room faced south, with a wall-sized window like the great room below. The whole back side of the house must be glass. His view looked down on the winding Sol Duc River, across the untouched forest to the Olympic Mountain range. The mountains were much closer than I would have believed.

The western wall was completely covered with shelf after shelf of CDs. His room was better stocked than a music store. In the corner was a sophisticated-looking sound system, the kind I could never afford. There was no bed, only a wide and inviting black leather sofa. The floor was covered with a thick golden carpet, and the walls were hung with heavy fabric in a slightly darker shade.

“Good acoustics?” I guessed.

He chuckled and nodded.

He picked up a remote and turned the stereo on. It was quiet, but the soft jazz number sounded like the band was in the room with us. I went to look at his mind-boggling music collection.

“How do you have these organized?” I asked, unable to find any rhyme or reason to the titles.

He wasn’t paying attention.

“Ummm, by year, and then by personal preference within that frame,” he said absently.
I turned, and he was looking at me with a peculiar expression in his eyes.

“What?”

“I was prepared to feel…relieved. Having you know about everything, not needing to keep secrets from you. But I didn’t expect to feel more than that. I like it. It makes me… happy.” He shrugged, smiling slightly.

“I’m glad,” I said, smiling back. I’d worried that he might regret telling me these things. It was good to know that wasn’t the case.

But then, as his eyes dissected my expression, his smile faded and his forehead creased.

“You’re still waiting for the running and the screaming, aren’t you?” I guessed.

A faint smile touched his lips, and he nodded.

“I’m not scared of you.” I said simply.

He stopped, raising his eyebrows in blatant disbelief. Then he flashed a wide, wicked smile.

“You really shouldn’t have said that,” he chuckled.

He growled, a low sound in the back of his throat; his lips curled back over his perfect teeth. His body shifted suddenly, half-crouched, tensed like a lion about to pounce.

“Um… Edward?”

I didn’t see him leap at me—it was much too fast. I couldn’t even understand what was happening. For half a second I was airborne and the room rolled around me, upside down and then right side up again. I didn’t feel the landing, but suddenly I was on my back on the black leather couch and Edward was on top of me, his knees tight against the sides of my hips, his hands planted on either side of my head so that I couldn’t move, and he bared his teeth just inches from my face.

“Wow,” I breathed.

“You were saying?” he growled playfully.

“That you are a very, very terrifying monster,” I said, chuckling.

“Much better,” he approved.

“Um.” I struggled. “Can I get up now?”

“Mmm…” He smiled, “I don’t think I’m done with you yet.”

Edward gently ran his cold lips along my jaw, then down my neck. He kissed my neck, growling softly.

“Edward!” I laughed as struggled in vain against his iron grip as electric shivers ran through my body.

He just laughed smugly as he kissed my throat.

“Can we come in?” a soft voice sounded from the hall.
Edward groaned, and in a swift motion had moved me from underneath him to next to him, my legs draped over his. I could see it was Alice, then, and Jasper behind her in the doorway. My cheeks burned, but Edward seemed at ease, if not annoyed.

“Go ahead.” Edward sighed.

Alice seemed to find nothing unusual in our embrace; she walked—almost danced, her movements were so graceful—to the center of the room, where she folded herself sinuously onto the floor. Jasper, however, paused at the door, his expression a trifle shocked. He stared at Edward’s face, and I wondered if he was sensing the atmosphere with his unusual sensitivity.

“It sounded like you were having Beau for lunch, and we came to see if you would share,” Alice announced.

I stiffened for an instant, until I realized Edward was grinning—whether at her comment or my response, I couldn’t tell.

“Sorry, I’m not in a mood to share,” he replied, his arms holding me recklessly close. “In fact, I wasn’t even done myself.”

Alice shrugged, “Fair enough.”

“Actually,” Jasper said, smiling despite himself as he walked into the room, “Alice says there’s going to be a real storm tonight, and Emmett wants to play ball. Are you game?”

The words were all common enough, but the context confused me. I gathered that Alice was a bit more reliable than the weatherman, though.

Edward’s eyes lit up, but he hesitated.

“Of course you should bring Beau,” Alice chirped. I thought I saw Jasper throw a quick glance at her.

“Do you want to go?” Edward asked me, excited, his expression vivid.

“Sure.” I couldn’t say no to that face. “Um, where are we going?”

“We have to wait for thunder to play ball—you’ll see why,” he promised.

“Will I need an umbrella?”

All three laughed aloud.

“Will he?” Jasper asked Alice.

“No.” She was positive. “The storm will hit over town. It should be dry enough in the clearing.”

“Good, then.” The enthusiasm in Jasper’s voice was catching, naturally. I found myself eager, rather than scared stiff.

“Let’s go see if Carlisle will come.” Alice bounded up to the door in a fashion that would break any ballerina’s heart.

“Like you don’t know,” Jasper teased, and they were swiftly on their way. Jasper managed to inconspicuously close the door behind them.
“What will we be playing?” I asked.

“You will be watching,” Edward clarified. “We will be playing baseball.”

I looked at him skeptically. “Vampires like baseball?”

“It’s the American pastime,” he said with mock solemnity.

I snickered at him, and he grinned.

“Now,” a wicked look on his face, “where were we?”

I giggled in protest as we rolled around on the couch while he kissed my neck and jaw.
The Game

It was just beginning to drizzle when Edward turned onto my street. Up until that moment, I had assumed that he'd be staying with me while I spent a few interim hours in the real world.

And then I saw the black, weathered Sedan parked in Charlie’s driveway—and heard Edward mutter something unintelligible in a low, harsh voice.

Leaning away from the rain under the shallow front porch, Jacob Black stood behind his father’s wheelchair. Billy’s face was impassive as stone as Edward parked my truck against the curb. Jacob stared down, his expression mortified.

Edward’s low voice was furious. “This is crossing the line.”

“He came to warn Charlie?” I guessed, more horrified than angry.

Edward just nodded, answering Billy’s gaze through the rain with narrowed eyes.

At least Charlie wasn’t home yet. Maybe the disaster could be averted.

“Let me deal with this,” I suggested. Edward’s black glare made me anxious.

I was surprised that he agreed. “That’s probably best. Be careful, though. The boy has no idea.”

“Boy? His name is Jacob.” I chided him.

Edward looked at me curiously for a moment before simply shrugging.

I sighed and put my hand on the door handle.

“Get them inside,” he instructed, “so I can leave. I’ll be back around dusk.”

“Do you want my truck?” I offered, meanwhile wondering how I would explain its absence to Charlie.

He rolled his eyes. “I could walk home faster than this truck moves.”

“You don’t have to leave,” I said, hopeful.

He smiled at my wistful expression. “Actually, I do. After you get rid of them”—he threw a dark glance in the Black’s direction— “you still have to prepare Charlie to meet your new boyfriend.” He grinned widely, showing all of his teeth.

I groaned. “Thanks.”

He smiled the crooked smile that I loved. “I’ll be back soon,” he promised.

His eyes flickered back to the porch, and then he leaned in to swiftly kiss me just under the edge of my jaw. My heart lurched, and I, too, glanced toward the porch. Billy’s face was no longer impassive, and his hands clutched at the armrests of his chair.

“Soon,” I stressed as I opened the door and stepped out into the rain.

I could feel his eyes on my back as I half-ran through the light sprinkle toward the porch.
“Hey, Billy. Hi, Jake.” I greeted them as cheerfully as I could manage. “Charlie’s gone for the day—I hope you haven’t been waiting long.”

“Not long,” Billy said in a subdued tone. His black eyes were piercing. “I just wanted to bring this up.” He indicated a brown paper sack resting in his lap.

“Oh, thanks,” I said, though I had no idea what it could be. “Why don’t you come in for a minute and dry off?”

I pretended to be oblivious to his intense scrutiny as I unlocked the door, and waved them in ahead of me.

“Here, let me take that,” I offered, turning to shut the door. I allowed myself one last glance at Edward. He was waiting, perfectly still, his eyes solemn.

“You’ll want to put it in the fridge,” Billy noted as he handed me the package. “It’s some of Harry Clearwater’s homemade fish fry—Charlie’s favorite. The fridge keeps it drier.” He shrugged.

“Thanks,” I repeated, but with feeling this time. “I was running out of new ways to fix fish, and he’s bound to bring home more tonight.”

“Fishing again?” Billy asked with a subtle gleam in his eyes. “Down at the usual spot? Maybe I’ll run by and see him.”

“No,” I quickly lied, my face going hard. “He was headed someplace new… But he didn’t tell me where.”

He took in my changed expression and it made him thoughtful.

“Jake,” he said, still appraising me. “Why don’t you go get that new picture of Rebecca out of the car? I’ll leave that for Charlie, too.”

“Where is it?” Jacob asked, his voice morose. I glanced at him, but he was staring at the floor, his eyebrows pulling together.

“I think I saw it in the trunk,” Billy said. “You may have to dig for it.”

Jacob slouched back out into the rain.

Billy and I faced each other in the silence. After a few seconds, the quiet started to feel awkward, so I turned and headed to the kitchen. I could hear his wet wheels squeak against the linoleum as he followed.

I shoved the bag onto the crowded top shelf of the fridge, and spun around to face him. His deeply lined face was unreadable.

“Charlie won’t be back for a while.” My voice was almost rude.

He nodded in agreement, but said nothing.

“Thanks again for the fish fry,” I hinted.

He continued nodding. I sighed and folded my arms across my chest.

He seemed to sense that I had given up on small talk. “Beau,” he said, and then he hesitated.
I waited.

“Beau,” he said again, “Charlie is one of my best friends.”

“Yes.”

He spoke each word carefully in his rumbling voice. “I noticed you’ve been spending time with one of the Cullens.”

“Yes,” I repeated curtly.

His eyes narrowed. “Maybe it’s none of my business, but I don’t think that is such a good idea.”

“You’re right, Billy,” I agreed. “It is none of your business.”

He raised his graying eyebrows at my tone. “You probably don’t know this, but the Cullen family has an unpleasant reputation on the reservation.”

“Actually, I did know that,” I informed him in a hard voice. “But that reputation couldn’t be deserved, could it? Because the Cullens never set foot on the reservation, do they?” I could see that my less than subtle reminder of the treaty that both bound and protected his tribe pulled him up short.

“That’s true,” he acceded, his eyes guarded. “You seem… well informed about the Cullens. More informed than I expected.”

I stared him down. “Maybe even better informed than you are.”

He pursed his lips as he considered that. “Maybe,” he allowed, but his eyes were shrewd. “Is Charlie as well informed?”

He had found the weakness in my armor.

“Charlie likes the Cullens a lot,” I hedged. He clearly understood my evasion. His expression was unhappy, but unsurprised.

“It’s not my business,” he said. “But it may be Charlie’s.”

“Though it would be my business, again, whether or not I think that it’s Charlie’s business, right?”

I wondered if he even understood my confused question as I struggled not to say anything compromising. But he seemed to. He thought about it while the rain picked up against the roof, the only sound breaking the silence.

“Yes,” he finally admitted. “I guess that’s your business, too.”

“And besides,” I continued, “didn’t you and Charlie have a sort of falling out the last time you said something to him about the Cullens?”

Billy stiffened, his eyes narrowed but he didn’t speak.

“And being that you are such good friends with my dad,” I narrowed my eyes back at him, “I would hate to see you two have another falling out over something like that.”

For a moment, he seemed very angry, but I wasn’t going to back down.
He finally sighed, “You’re right.” His demeanor shifted, I had won.

I sighed with relief. “Thanks, Billy.”

“Just think about what you’re doing, Beau,” he urged.

“I do, Billy. Every day.”

He frowned. “What I meant to say was, don’t do what you’re doing.”

I looked into his eyes, filled with nothing but concern for me, and there was nothing I could say.

Just then the front door banged loudly, and I jumped at the sound.

“There’s no picture anywhere in that car.” Jacob’s complaining voice reached us before he did. The shoulders of his shirt were stained with the rain, his hair dripping, when he rounded the corner.

“Hmm,” Billy grunted, suddenly detached, spinning his chair around to face his son. “I guess I left it at home.”

Jacob rolled his eyes dramatically. “Great.”

“Well, Beau, tell Charlie”—Billy paused before continuing—“that we stopped by, I mean.”

“Will do,” I muttered.

Jacob was surprised. “Are we leaving already?”

“Charlie’s gonna be out late,” Billy explained as he rolled himself past Jacob.

“Oh.” Jacob looked disappointed. “Well,” he hesitated, awkwardly holding out his hand in a goodbye gesture, “I guess I’ll see you later, then, Beau.”

I may have been mad at Billy, but I couldn’t be mad at Jacob. I managed a smile for him, and pulled him by his hand into a quick hug. “See you soon, Jake.”

He hugged me tight for a second, smiling.

“Take care, Beau,” Billy warned. I didn’t answer and Jacob pulled away from our hug, looking morose again. He helped his father out the door. I waved at Jacob, then glanced swiftly toward my now-empty truck, and then shut the door before they were gone.

I stood in the hallway for a minute, listening to the sound of their car as it backed out and drove away. I stayed where I was, waiting for the irritation and anxiety to subside. When the tension eventually faded a bit, I headed upstairs to change out of my nicer clothes into something suitable for baseball.

I dug through my closet, not sure what to expect tonight. As I concentrated on what was coming, what had just happened seemed insignificant. Now that I was removed from Jasper’s and Edward’s influence, I began to make up for not being terrified before. A whole morning in a house full of vampires and I had survived, not only that, I had met my vampire boyfriend’s family. This was serious and dangerous and now I was going to play baseball with vampires in the rain.

I felt the panic rise in my chest; I took a few deep breaths. But I had to remember that I chose this; I made the decision to follow this through. The danger was present, I couldn’t fault Billy for being concerned, but I trusted Edward and I trusted his family. Maybe my trust was given too freely, but
Edward made it clear that I was always in danger around him and that he would do whatever he could to keep me safe. From his family, from any threat, and especially from himself. I gave up quickly on choosing a practical outfit—throwing on an old flannel shirt and jeans—knowing I would be in my raincoat all night anyway.

My reverie was interrupted by the sound of the phone ringing. I sprinted downstairs to get it. Picking up the phone and remembering to say hello seemed impossible, like I had never done it before. My head was spinning with all my thoughts about the situation I was in.

“Hello?” I managed, awkwardly.

“Beau? It’s me,” Jessica said.

“Jess? Jess, hey, how are you?” It felt like months rather than days since I’d spoken to Jess. “How was the dance?”

“It was so much fun!” Jessica gushed. Needing no more invitation than that, she launched into a minute-by-minute account of the previous night. Despite the difficult time I was having concentrating, it was nice to listen to her. Jessica, Mike, the dance, the school—they all seemed so far-away. It was grounding to be reminded of reality; to hear how easy it was to just be a human in love with a human. My mind began to wander as I contemplated that thought.

“Did you hear what I said, Beau?” Jess asked, suddenly irritated.

“I’m so sorry, Jess, what?”

“I said, Mike kissed me! Can you believe it?”

“No way!” I laughed, “At the dance?”

“During the last slow dance of the night! He just kissed me!” She sounded so happy, I couldn’t help but smile. “It was perfect.”

How easy it must be, to just kiss your boyfriend at a dance and not have him want to drink your blood. “That’s wonderful, Jess,” I said.

“So what did you do yesterday?” Jessica challenged, her voice full of eagerness.

“Oh, well, I went out and enjoyed the sun.” I said. Well, it wasn’t a lie.

I heard Charlie’s car in the driveway.

“Did you ever hear anything more from Edward Cullen?”

The front door slammed and I could hear Charlie banging around under the stairs, putting his tackle away.

“Um, well, about that…” I started slowly.

Jessica practically screamed with excitement, “Tell me everything!” She squealed.

“Hi there, kiddo!” Charlie called as he walked into the kitchen. I waved at him.

Jess heard his voice. “Oh, you’re dad’s there.” She sounded devastated, I couldn’t help but snicker a little. “Never mind—we’ll talk tomorrow. Beau Swan, you better tell me everything.”
“See you in Trig, Jess.” I laughed.

“See ya, Beau!” I heard the phone click, and hung up the phone.

“Hey, Dad,” I said. He was scrubbing his hands in the sink. “Where’s the fish?”

“I put it out in the freezer.”

“I’ll go grab a few pieces before they freeze—Billy dropped off some of Harry Clearwater’s fish fry this afternoon.” I worked to sound enthusiastic.

“He did?” Charlie’s eyes lit up. “That’s my favorite.”

Charlie cleaned up while I got dinner ready. It didn’t take long until we were sitting at the table, eating in silence. Charlie was enjoying his food. I was wondering how to even begin the conversation, how to bring up the word boyfriend without it feeling as sudden as I knew it was.

“What did you do with yourself today?” he asked, snapping me out of my reverie.

“Well, this afternoon I just hung around the house…” Only the very recent part of this afternoon, actually. I tried to keep my voice upbeat, but my stomach was in knots. “And this morning I was over at the Cullens.”

Charlie dropped his fork, my heart landed somewhere with it.

“Dr. Cullen’s place?” He asked in astonishment.

I pretended not to notice his reaction. “Yeah.”

“What were you doing there?” He hadn’t picked his fork back up.

“Well, I sort of have a date with Edward Cullen tonight, and he wanted to introduce me to his parents… Dad?”

It appeared Charlie was having an aneurysm.

“Dad, are you all right?”

“You’re going out with Edward Cullen?” He thundered.

_Uh-oh._ “I thought you liked the Cullens. Besides, I thought you were okay with all… _this,_ Dad.”

His mood immediately shifted, he calmed down and put his hand on my arm. “Of course I am,” He took a deep breath, “it had nothing to do with that!” He explained, “It’s just that he’s too old for you!”

I stared at him blankly for a moment. “We’re both juniors,” I offered. Though, he was more right than he knew.

“Wait…” He paused. “Which one is Edwin?”

_Edward_is the youngest, the one with the reddish brown hair.” I offered, confused.

“Oh, well, that’s”—he struggled—“He’s not the big one right? I’m sure he’s a nice kid, but he looks too… mature for you. It’s not the big one?”
“No, Dad, that’s Emmett.” I explained feeling relieved.

He considered that for a moment, “And not the other big one with the blond hair?”

“No, Dad,” I sighed, “Not Royal, either.”

He narrowed his eyes but his look was more curious than anything, “Is this Edwin your boyfriend?”

Oh, god. “It’s Edward, Dad.”

“Is he?”

“I don’t know, maybe.”

“You said last night that you weren’t interested in any of the boys in town.” But he picked up his fork again, so I could tell the worst was over.

“Well, Edward doesn’t live in town, Dad.”

He gave me a disparaging look as he chewed. “Why didn’t you say something? Was I being too nosey?”

“No, Dad, not at all. It’s just… this is all kind of new, you know? I didn’t want to jinx it.”

“Huh.” He reflected for a minute while he ate another bite. “So you went to meet his folks, eh?”

“Er, yeah. I mean, I already knew Dr. Cullen. But I got to meet his mother.”

“Esme Cullen is great—real quiet, but very… kind, I guess is the best word for it. She’s a very kind lady.”

“Yeah, she is.”

“Meeting the parents, though. Isn’t that kind of serious? Doesn’t that mean he’s your boyfriend?”

“Yeah.” I felt a smile appearing on my face, despite myself. “I guess he’s my boyfriend.”

Charlie was trying to look serious—tough dad act—but I could see he was fighting a smile. He seemed genuinely happy.

“So, do I get to meet him?”

I raised an eyebrow. “Will you be on your best behavior?”

He lifted both hands. “What, me? Have I ever embarrassed you before?”

“Have I ever brought over a boy before?”

He huffed, trying to hide a laugh, then changed the subject. “Is he picking you up? When is he coming over?”

“He should be here in a few minutes.”

“Where is he taking you?”

“Well, I guess the plan is we’re going to play baseball with his family.”
Charlie stared at me for one second, and then he busted up. I rolled my eyes and waited for him to finish. “You’re playing baseball? You hate sports!”

“Well, I’ll probably just watch.”

“You must really like this guy.”

I thought about shrugging, but I just smiled. “Yeah,” I said. “I really do.”

I heard an unfamiliar engine roar up to the house, and I looked up in surprise. I jumped up and started cleaning the dishes.

“Oh, leave the dishes, I can do them tonight. Go get ready.”

I froze, looking at him suspiciously. I wanted to go brush my teeth, but letting Charlie answer the door made me nervous. He could sense my hesitation.

The doorbell rang, and Charlie stalked off to answer it.

“Dad, be nice.”

He spun around and rolled his eyes at me, making a halo sign around his head with his hand. “Oh, go on,” he shooed me away.

I bolted up the stairs to the bathroom, grabbing my toothbrush and furiously brushing my teeth.

I heard Charlie open the door downstairs. “Come on in, Edward.”

I was relieved that Charlie got his name right.

“Thank you, Chief Swan,” I heard Edward say in a respectful voice.

“Go ahead and call me Charlie. Here, I’ll take your jacket.”

“Thanks, sir.”

I finished up in the bathroom and flew down the stairs, they were waiting for me at the bottom. Charlie was doing his best to look stern, Edward was beaming at me.

“Hi,” I breathed, sounding more out of breath than I realized I was.

“Have a seat there, Edward.” Charlie gestured towards the living room.

I grimaced.

Edward sat down fluidly in the only chair, forcing me to sit next to Chief Swan on the sofa. I quickly shot him a dirty look. He winked behind Charlie’s back.

“So I hear you’re getting my boy to watch baseball.” Only in Washington would the fact that it was absolutely pouring outside have no bearing at all on the playing of outdoor sports.

“Yes, sir, hopefully Beau doesn’t mind spending time with my family.”

“I’d say it was the baseball he’d mind more.”

They both laughed. I shot my dad a look. Where was the best behavior I was promised?
“Should we be on our way?” I suggested. I walked to the hall and pulled on my jacket. They followed.

“Not too late, Beau.”

“Don’t worry, Charlie, I’ll have him home early,” Edward promised.

“You take care of him, all right?”

“He’ll be safe with me, I promise sir.”

Charlie couldn’t doubt Edward’s sincerity, it rang in every word.

I awkwardly inched out the door, Charlie chuckled, and Edward followed me.

I stopped dead on the porch. There, behind my truck, was a monster Jeep. Its tires were as high as my waist. There were metal guards over the headlights and taillights, and four large spotlights attached to the crash bar. The hardtop was shiny red.

Charlie let out a low whistle.

“Wear your seat belts,” he choked out.

Edward followed me around to my side and opened the door. I gauged the distance to the seat and prepared to jump for it. He chuckled, and then lifted me in with one hand. I hoped Charlie didn’t notice.

As he went around to the driver’s side, at a normal, human pace, I tried to put on my seat belt. But there were too many buckles.

“What’s all this?” I asked when he opened the door.

“It’s an off-roading harness.”

“Oh, god.”

I tried to find the right places for all the buckles to fit, but my frustration must have been evident on my face. He smiled and reached over to help me. I was glad that the rain was too heavy to see Charlie clearly on the porch. That meant he couldn’t see how Edward’s hand lingered at my neck, brushed along my collarbone. I gave up trying to help him and focused on taking a few deep breaths.

Edward turned the key and the engine roared to life. We pulled away from the house.

“This is a… um… big Jeep you have.”

“It’s Emmett’s. I didn’t think you’d want to run the whole way.”

“Where do you keep this thing?”

“We remodeled one of the outbuildings into a garage.”

“Oh, of course.” I rolled my eyes.

He glanced at me, grinning.

Then something sunk in.
“Run the whole way? As in, we’re still going to run part of the way?” My voice started sounding nervous.

He continued grinning. “You’re not going to run.”

“I don’t need to spend the evening suffering from a dizzy spell in front of your family.”

“Keep your eyes closed, you should be fine.”

I shook my head, sighed, then reached over and took his hand. “Hi. I missed you.”

He laughed and interlocked his fingers with mine. “I missed you, too. Isn’t that strange?”

“Strange?”

“You’d think I’d have learned more patience over the last hundred years. And here I am, finding it difficult to pass an afternoon without you.”

“I’m okay with that.” I smiled.

He leaned over to kiss the top of my head, and then let out a long groan. I looked at him, puzzled.

“You smell so good in the rain,” he explained.

“In a good way, or in a bad way?”

He sighed. “Both, always both.”

I don’t know how he found his way in the gloom and downpour, but he somehow found a side road that was less of a road and more of a mountain path. For a long while conversation was impossible, because I was bouncing up and down on the seat like a jackhammer. He seemed to enjoy the ride, though, smiling hugely the whole way.

And then we came to the end of the road; the trees formed green walls on three sides of the Jeep. The rain was a mere drizzle, slowing every second, the sky brighter through the clouds.

“Sorry, Beau, we’ll have to go on foot from here.”

“You know what? I’ll just wait here.”

“What happened to all your courage? You were extraordinary this morning.”

“I haven’t forgotten the last time yet.” Could it have been only yesterday?

He was around to my side of the car in a blur. He started unbuckling me.

“I’ll get those, you go on ahead,” I protested. He was finished before I got the first few words out.

I sat in the car, looking at him.

“You don’t trust me?” He asked, his voice full of mock hurt.

“Trust really isn’t the issue. Me being a dizzy mess on the ground is the issue.”

He laughed, pulled me from the Jeep, and set my feet on the ground. It was barely misting now; Alice was going to be right.
“Do you remember what I was saying about mind over matter?” he asked.

“Yes…”

“Maybe if you concentrated on something else.”

“Like what?”

He smiled and placed his hands against the Jeep on either side of my head and leaned forward, and I leaned back against the door. He leaned in even closer, his face inches from mine.

“When we’re running—and yes, that part is nonnegotiable—I want you to concentrate on this.”

Slowly, he moved in closer, turning his face to the side so that we were cheek to cheek, his lips at my ear. One of his hands slide down to my waist.

“Just remember us… like this…”

His lips pulled softly on my earlobe, then moved slowly across my jaw and down my neck. I rested my hands on his strong chest.

“You’re not breathing, Beau,” he murmured.

I sucked in a loud breath.

He kissed under the edge of my jaw, then along my cheekbone. “Still worried?”

“A bit.”

He chuckled. Both his hands were on my waist now, and he lightly kissed one eyelid and then the next.

“Edward,” I breathed.

Then his lips were on mine, almost roughly and full of urgency. I instinctively wrapped my arms around his stone neck and his lips pressed, unyielding, against my own. His body leaned into mine, pinning me between him and the Jeep. My heart was beating frantically, and I whimpered softly. I heard him moan against my mouth. I sighed, and my lips parted, deepening the kiss.

He staggered back, breaking my grip effortlessly.

“Damnit, Beau!” he broke off, gasping. “You’ll be the death of me, I swear you will.”

I took a few deep breaths as I gazed into his wild eyes.

“You’re indestructible,” I practically panted the words out.

“I might have believed that before I met you.”

I laughed at him, but he suddenly seemed very serious. I reached out my hand and placed it on his cheek. He turned his head to kiss my palm, his eyes still on me. He groaned; a reluctant, yearning groan.

“Let’s get out of here before I do something really stupid,” he growled.

He threw me across his back as he had before, and I could see the extra effort it took for him to be as
gentle as he was. I locked my legs around his waist and secured my arms in a choke hold around his neck.

“Don’t forget to close your eyes,” he warned severely.

I quickly tucked my face into his neck, and squeezed my eyes shut. Another groan escaped his lips.

“Damn…” He growled. I couldn’t help but smirk.

I could hardly tell we were moving. I could feel him gliding along beneath me, but he could have been strolling down the sidewalk, the movement was so smooth. I was tempted to peek, just to see if he was really flying through the forest like before, but I resisted. It wasn’t worth that awful dizziness. I contented myself with listening to his carefully measured breath come and go evenly.

I wasn’t quite sure we had stopped until he reached back and touched my hair.

“It’s over, Beau.”

I dared to open my eyes, and, sure enough, we were at a standstill. I stiffly unlocked my stranglehold on his body and slipped to the ground, landing on my backside.

“Oh!” I huffed as I hit the wet ground.

For a second he stared at me like he wasn’t sure if he was still too mad to find me funny, but then he must have decided that he wasn’t too mad.

My bewildered expression must have pushed him over the edge, and he broke into a roar of laughter.

I got up slowly and brushed the mud and weeds off the back of my jeans. That only made him laugh harder. I rolled my eyes, and began to stride off into the forest.

I felt his arm around my waist.

“Where are you going, Beau?”

“To watch the baseball game?” I raised an eyebrow.

“It’s the other way.”

I pivoted in his arms. “Okay.”

He put his other arm around my waist and pulled me back into is chest, he kissed my ear softly.

“Don’t be mad at me for laughing, I couldn’t help myself. You should have seen your face.” He chuckled before he could stop himself.

“What, you can be mad but I can’t?” I asked incredulously, raising my eyebrows. “I thought you were getting better about your temper.”

“I wasn’t mad at you.”

“I believe you said I would be the death of you.” I pointed out.

“That was simply a statement of fact.” He spun me around to face him. “I wasn’t mad at you.” He was suddenly intense, all trace of teasing gone.
“Then why did you get so upset?” I tilted my head, questioning. “I know it’s not because it was a bad kiss. Because that was one of my better ones, I think.”

He laughed again, loudly. “Oh, but that was the problem.” His eyes were full of adoration. “I could never be mad at you, Beau.” He explained. “So kind, so patient, and brave…” He sighed, “I infuriate myself,” he said gently. “The way I can’t seem to keep from putting you in danger. The way you kissed me back at the Jeep was…” His eyes closed and he took a deep breath, “beyond anything I had experienced thus far.”

“That’s saying something,” I quipped, a little too smug, “we’ve been doing a lot of kissing the last couple days.”

He smiled, but his eyes were sad. “Yes,” he put his hand on my face, rubbing my cheek with his thumb, “but what if lose control? What if I hurt you? Sometimes I truly hate myself. I should be stronger, I should be able to—”

I stopped him with a kiss, this time he froze; remaining still as a statue for a moment, before his hands found their way to my waist and his body relaxed. I pulled away, slowly. His face looked serene, blissful.

“You’re doing a fantastic job,” I smiled. “And I trust you. Completely. So give yourself a little credit.”

“I love you,” he said. “It’s a poor excuse for what I’m doing, but it’s still true.”

It was the first time he’d said he loved me—in so many words. He might not realize it, but I certainly did.

“Now, where were we,” he continued, and he bent to softly brush his lips against mine.

I sighed, contended. “You promised Chief Swan that you would have me home early, remember? We’d better get going.”

He nodded.

“And, as long as you don’t lose complete control,” I grinned, “I don’t mind if you lose a little more control next time we kiss.”

A look of utter bliss passed across his handsome face and he sighed. “I think I can manage that.” He smiled, widely.

“Let’s go.” I smiled back.

“Mmmm,” he sighed again, “Yes, sir.”

He smiled wistfully and released all of me but one hand. He laced his long, cold fingers through mine and led me a few feet through the tall, wet ferns and draping moss, around a massive hemlock tree, and we were there, on the edge of an enormous open field in the lap of the Olympic peaks. It was twice the size of any baseball stadium.

I could see the others all there; Esme, Emmett, and Royal, sitting on a bare outcropping of rock, were the closest to us, maybe a hundred yards away. Much farther out I could see Jasper and Alice, at least a quarter mile apart, appearing to throw something back and forth, but I never saw any ball. It looked like Carlisle was marking bases, but could they really be that far apart.
When we came into view, the three on the rocks rose. Esme started toward us. Emmett followed after a long look at Royal’s back; Royal had risen fluidly and strode off toward the field without a glance in our direction. My stomach began to knot in response.

“Was that you we heard, Edward?” Esme asked as she approached.

“It sounded like a bear choking,” Emmett clarified.

I smiled at Esme. “That was him.”

“Beau was being unintentionally funny,” Edward explained, quickly settling the score.

Alice had left her position and was running, or dancing, toward us. She hurtled to a fluid stop at our feet. “It’s time,” she announced.

As soon as she spoke, a deep rumble of thunder shook the forest beyond us, and then crashed westward toward town.

“Eerie, isn’t it?” Emmett said with easy familiarity, winking at me.

“Let’s go!” Alice reached for Emmett’s hand and they darted toward the oversized field; she ran like a gazelle. He was nearly as graceful and just as fast—yet Emmett could never be compared to a gazelle.

“Are you ready for some ball?” Edward asked, his eyes eager, bright.

His enthusiasm was contagious, I smiled at him. “Go team!”

He laughed, quickly running his fingers through my hair, then bounded off after the other two. His run was more aggressive, a cheetah rather than a gazelle, and he quickly overtook them. The grace and power was breathtaking.

“Shall we go watch?” Esme asked in her soft, melodic voice, and I realized I was staring openmouthed after them. I quickly reassembled my expression and nodded. Esme kept a few feet between us, and I wondered if she was still being careful not to frighten me. She matched her stride to mine without seeming impatient at the pace.

“You don’t play with them?” I asked.

“No, I prefer to referee. I like keeping them honest.”

“She thinks we cheat!” Emmett called from way off in the field

“I know you do!” Esme called back, laughing. “You should hear the arguments they get into! Actually, I hope you don’t, you would think they were raised by a pack of wolves.”

“You sound like my mom.” I laughed.

She laughed too, “Well, I do think of them as my children in most ways. I never could get over my mothering instincts—did Edward tell you I had lost a child?”

“No,” I murmured, stunned, scrambling to understand what lifetime she was remembering.

“Yes, my first and only baby. He died just a few days after he was born, the poor tiny thing,” she sighed. “It broke my heart—that’s why I jumped off the cliff, you know,” she added calmly.
“Oh, Edward just said you fell…”

“Always the gentleman.” She smiled. “Edward was the first of my new sons. I’ve always thought of him that way, even though he’s older than I, in one way at least.” She smiled at me warmly. “That’s why I’m so happy that he’s found you, dear.” The endearment sounded very natural on her lips. “He’s been the odd man out for far too long; it’s hurt me to see him alone.”

“You don’t mind, then?” I asked, feeling hesitant. “That we’re… all wrong for each other?”

“No.” She was thoughtful. “You’re what he wants, and you want him. It will work out, somehow.” She said, though her forehead creased with worry. Another peal of thunder began.

Esme stopped then; apparently, we’d reached the edge of the field. It looked as if they had formed teams. Edward was far out in left field, Carlisle stood between the first and second bases, and Alice held the ball, positioned on the spot that must be the pitcher’s mound.

Emmett was swinging an aluminum bat; it whistled almost untraceably though the air. I waited for him to approach home plate, but then realized, as he took his stance, that he was already there—farther from the pitcher’s mound than I would have thought possible. Jasper stood several feet behind him, catching for the other team. Of course, none of them had gloves.

“All right,” Esme called in a clear voice, which I knew even Edward would hear, as far out as he was. “Batter up.”

Alice stood straight, deceptively motionless. Her style seemed to be stealth rather than an intimidating windup. She held the ball in both hands at her waist, and then, like the strike of a cobra, her right hand flicked out and the ball smacked into Jasper’s hand.

“That was a strike, right?” I whispered to Esme.

“That’s right,” she smiled. Jasper hurled the ball back to Alice’s waiting hand. She permitted herself a brief grin. And then her hand spun out again.

This time the bat somehow made it around in time to smash into the invisible ball. The crack of impact was shattering, thunderous; it echoed off the mountains—I immediately understood the necessity of the thunderstorm and struggled to understand how the bat and ball didn’t just shatter like glass from the impact.

The ball shot like a meteor above the field, flying deep into the surrounding forest.

“That’s got to be a home run,” I murmured.

“Wait,” Esme cautioned, listening intently, one hand raised.

Emmett was a blur around the bases, Carlisle shadowing him. I realized Edward was missing.

“Out!” Esme cried in a clear voice. I stared in disbelief as Edward sprang from the fringe of the trees, ball in his upraised hand, his wide grin visible even to me.

“Emmett hits the hardest,” Esme explained, “But Edward runs the fastest.”

The inning continued before my incredulous eyes. It was impossible to keep up with the speed at which the ball flew, the rate which their bodies raced around the field.

I learned the other reason they waited for a thunderstorm to play when Jasper, trying to avoid
Edward’s infallible fielding, hit a ground ball toward Carlisle. Carlisle ran into the ball, and then raced Jasper to first base. When they collided, the sound was like the crash of two massive falling boulders. I jumped up in concern, but they were somehow unscathed.

“Safe,” Esme called in a calm voice.

Emmett’s team was up by one—Royal managed to soar around the bases after tagging up on one of Emmett’s long flies—when Edward caught the third out. He sprinted to my side, sparkling with excitement.

“What do you think?”

“One thing’s for sure, I’ll never be able to sit through dull old Major League Baseball again.”

“I’m sure you’re heartbroken.” He laughed.

“It’s a little funny,” I teased.

“What is?” he asked, puzzled.

“Vampire baseball. It’s just so funny to think about it.”

He flashed his special crooked smile, leaving me breathless.

“I’m up,” he said, heading for the plate.

He played intelligently, keeping the ball low, out of reach of Royal’s always-ready hand in the outfield, gaining two bases like lightening before Emmett could get the ball back into play. Carlisle knocked one so far out of the field—with a boom that hurt my ears—that he and Edward both made it in. Alice slapped them dainty high fives.

The score constantly changed as the game continued, and they razzed each other like any street ballplayers as they took turns with the lead. Occasionally Esme would call them to order. The thunder rumbled on, but we stayed dry, as Alice had predicted.

Carlisle was up to bat, Edward catching, when Alice suddenly gasped. My eyes were on Edward and I saw his head snap up to look at her. Their eyes met and something flowed between them in an instant. He was at my side before the others could ask Alice what was wrong.

“Alice?” Esme’s voice was tense.

“I didn’t see—I couldn’t tell,” she whispered.

All the others were gathered by this time.

“What is it, Alice?” Carlisle asked with the calm voice of authority.

“They were traveling much quicker than I thought. I can see I had the perspective wrong before,” she murmured.

Jasper leaned over her, his posture protective. “What changed?” he asked.

“They heard us playing, and it changed their path,” she said, contrite, as if she felt responsible for whatever had frightened her.

Seven pairs of quick eyes flashed to my face and away.
“How soon?” Carlisle said, turning toward Edward.

A look of intense concentration crossed his face.

“Less than five minutes. They’re running—they want to play.” He scowled

“Can you make it?” Carlisle asked him, his eyes flicking toward me again.

“No, not carrying—“ He cut short. “Besides, the last thing we need is for them to catch the scent and start hunting.”

“How many?” Emmett asked Alice.

“Three,” she answered tersely.

“Three!” he scoffed. “Let them come.” The steel bands of muscle flexed along his massive arms.

For a split second that seemed much longer than it really was, Carlisle deliberated. Only Emmett seemed unperturbed; the rest stared at Carlisle’s face with anxious eyes.

“Let’s just continue the game,” Carlisle finally decided. His voice was cool and level. “Alice said they were simply curious.”

All this was said in a flurry of words that lasted only a few seconds. I had listened carefully and caught most of it, though I couldn’t hear what Esme now asked Edward with a silent vibration of her lips. I only saw the slight shake of his head and the look of relief on her face.

“You catch, Esme,” he said. “I’ll call it now.” And he planted himself in front of me.

The others returned to the field, warily sweeping the dark forest with their sharp eyes. Alice and Esme seemed to orient themselves around where I stood. Royal was the last to move. He glared at me for a moment before he started moving back to the field.

I stated the obvious. “The others are coming now.”

“Yes, stay very still, keep quiet, and don’t move from my side, please.” He hid the stress in his voice well, but I could hear it. I pulled the collar of my raincoat up around my neck.

“That won’t help,” Royal muttered back at us. “I could smell him across the field.”

“I know.” A hint of frustration colored Edward’s tone.

Carlisle stood at the plate, and the others joined the game halfheartedly.

“What did Esme ask you?” I whispered.

He hesitated for a second before he answered. “Whether they were thirsty,” he muttered unwillingly.

The seconds ticked by; the game progressed apathetically now. No one dared to hit harder than a bunt, and Emmett, Royal, and Jasper hovered in the infield. Now and again, despite the fear that numbed my brain, I was aware of Royal’s eyes on me. They were expressionless, but something about the way he held his mouth me think he was angry.

Edward paid no attention to the game at all, eyes and mind ranging the forest.

“I’m sorry, Beau,” he muttered fiercely. “It was stupid and irresponsible of me to expose you like
this. I’m so sorry.”

I heard his breath stop, and his eye zeroed in on right field. He took a half step, angling himself between me and what was coming.

Carlisle, Emmett, and the others turned in the same direction, hearing sounds of passage much too faint for my ears.

I held my breath as I realized that what was coming now was going to change everything.
They emerged one by one from the forest edge, ranging a dozen meters apart. The first male into the clearing fell back immediately, allowing the other male to take the front, orienting himself around the tall, dark-haired man in a manner that clearly displayed who led the pack. The third man appeared last; from this distance, all I could see of him was that his hair was a startling shade of red.

They closed ranks before they continued cautiously toward Edward’s family, exhibiting the natural respect of a troop of predators as it encounters a larger, unfamiliar group of its own kind.

As they approached, I could see how different they were from the Cullens. Their walk was catlike, a gait that seemed constantly on the edge of shifting into a crouch. They dressed in the ordinary gear of backpackers: jeans and casual button-down shirts in heavy, weatherproof fabrics. The clothes were frayed, though, with wear, and they were barefoot. The first two men had cropped hair, but the third’s brilliant orange hair was long and filled with leaves and debris from the woods.

Their sharp eyes carefully took in the more polished, urbane stance of Carlisle, who, flanked by Emmett and Jasper, stepped guardedly forward to meet them. Without any apparent communication between them, they each straightened into a more casual, erect bearing.

The man in front was easily the most beautiful, his skin olive-toned beneath the typical pallor, his hair a glossy black. He was of a medium build, hard-muscled, of course, but nothing next to Emmett’s brawn. He smiled an easy smile, exposing a flash of gleaming white teeth.

The red-headed man was wilder, his eyes shifting restlessly between the others facing him, and the loose grouping around me, his chaotic hair quivering in the slight breeze. His posture was distinctly feline. The last male hovered unobtrusively behind them, slighter than the leader, his light brown hair and regular features both nondescript. His eyes, though completely still, somehow seemed the most vigilant.

Their eyes were different, too. Not the gold or black I had come to expect, but a deep burgundy color that was disturbing and sinister.

The dark-haired man, still smiling, stepped toward Carlisle.

“We thought we heard a game,” he said in a relaxed voice with the slightest of French accents. “I’m Laurent, these are Victor and James.” He gestured to the vampires beside him.

“I’m Carlisle. This is my family, Emmett and Jasper, Royal, Esme, and Alice, Edward and Beau.” He pointed us out in groups, deliberately not calling attention to individuals. I felt a shock when he said my name.

“Do you have room for a few more players?” Laurent asked sociably.

Carlisle matched Laurent’s friendly tone. “Actually, we were just finishing up. But we’d certainly be interested another time. Are you planning to stay in the area for long?”

“We’re headed north, in fact, but we were curious to see who was in the neighborhood. We haven’t run into any company in a long time.”

“No, this region is usually empty except for us and the occasional visitor, like yourselves.”

The tense atmosphere had slowly subsided into a casual conversation; I guessed that Jasper was
using his peculiar gift to control the situation.

“What’s your hunting range?” Laurent casually inquired.

Carlisle ignored the assumption behind the inquiry. “The Olympic Range here, up and down the Coast Ranges on occasion. We maintain a permanent residence nearby. There’s another permanent settlement like ours up near Denali.”

Laurent rocked back on his heels slightly.

“Permanent? How do you manage that?” There was honest curiosity in his voice.

“Why don’t you come back to our home with us and we can talk comfortably?” Carlisle invited. “It’s a rather long story.”

James and Victor exchanged a surprised look at the mention of the word “home,” but Laurent controlled his expression better.

“That sounds very interesting, and welcome.” His smile was genial. “We’ve been on the hunt all the way down from Ontario, and we haven’t had the chance to clean up in a while.” His eyes move appreciatively over Carlisle’s refined appearance.

“Please don’t take offense, but we’d appreciate it if you’d refrain from hunting in this immediate area. We have to stay inconspicuous, you understand.” Carlisle explained.

“Of course.” Laurent nodded. “We certainly won’t encroach on your territory. We just ate outside of Seattle, anyway,” he laughed. A shiver ran up my spine.

“We’ll show you the way if you’d like to run with us—Emmett and Alice, you can go with Edward and Beau to get the Jeep,” he casually added.

Three things seemed to happen simultaneously while Carlisle was speaking. My hair ruffled with the light breeze, Edward stiffened, and the slighter male, James, suddenly whipped his head around, scrutinizing me, his nostrils flaring.

A swift rigidity fell on all of them as James lurched one step forward into a crouch. Edward bared his teeth, crouching in defense, a feral snarl ripping from his throat. It was nothing like the playful sounds I’d heard from him this morning; it was the single most menacing thing I had ever heard, and chills ran from the crown of my head to the back of my heels.

“What’s this?” Laurent exclaimed in open surprise. Neither James nor Edward relaxed their aggressive poses. James feinted slightly to the side, and Edward shifted in response.

“He’s with us.” Carlisle’s firm rebuff was directed toward James. Laurent seemed to catch my scent less powerfully than James, but awareness now dawned on his face.

“You brought a snack?” he asked, his expression incredulous as he took an involuntary step forward. Edward snarled even more ferociously, harshly, his lip curling high above his glistening, bared teeth. Laurent stepped back again.

“I said he’s with us,” Carlisle corrected in a hard voice.

“But he’s human,” Laurent protested. The words were not at all aggressive, merely astounded.

“Yes.”
Emmett was very much in evidence at Carlisle’s side, his eyes on James. James slowly straightened out of his crouch, but his eyes never left me, his nostrils still wide. Edward stayed tensed like a lion in front of me.

When Laurent spoke, his tone was soothing—trying to defuse the sudden hostility. “It appears we have a lot to learn about each other.”

“Indeed.” Carlisle’s voice was still cool.

“But we’d like to accept your invitation.” His eyes flicked toward me and back to Carlisle. “And, of course, we will not harm the human boy. We won’t hunt in your range, as I said.”

James glanced in disbelief and aggravation at Laurent and exchanged another brief look with Victor, whose eyes still flickered edgily face to face.

Carlisle measured Laurent’s open expression for a moment before he spoke. “We’ll show you the way. Jasper, Royal, Esme?” he called. They gathered together, blocking me from view as they converged. Alice was instantly at my side, and Emmett fell back slowly, his eyes locked on James as he backed toward us.

“Let’s go, Beau.” Edward’s voice was low and bleak.

This whole time I’d been rooted in place, terrified into absolute immobility. Edward had to grip my elbow and pull sharply to break my trance. Alice and Emmett were close behind us, hiding me. I stumbled alongside Edward, still stunned with fear. I couldn’t hear if the main group had left yet. Edward was radiating tension as we moved at human speed to the forest edge.

Once we were in the trees, Edward slung me over his back without breaking stride. I gripped as tightly as possible as he took off, the others close on his heels. I kept my head down, but my eyes, wide with fright, wouldn’t close.

They plunged through the now-black forest like wraiths. The sense of exhilaration that usually seemed to possess Edward as he ran was completely absent, replaced by a fury that consumed him and drove him faster. Even with me on his back, the others trailed behind.

We reached the Jeep in an impossibly short time, and Edward barely slowed as he swept me into the backseat.

“Strap him in,” he ordered Emmett, who slid in beside me.

Alice was already in the front seat, and Edward was starting the engine. It roared to life and we swerved backward, spinning around to face the winding road.

Edward was growling something too fast for me to understand, but it sounded a lot like a string of profanities.

The jolting trip was much worse this time, and the darkness only made it more frightening. Emmett and Alice both glared out the side windows. I let out a weak yelp of fright at a particular violent jolt and Emmett reached over and placed a tentative hand on my shoulder, his face was serious.

We hit the main road, and though our speed increased, I could see much better where we were going. And we were headed south, away from Forks.

“Where are we going?”
No one answered. Edward stared furiously at the road, Alice continued to glare out the side window, Emmett averted his eyes.

“Dammit, Edward! Where are you taking me?”

“We have to get you away from here—far away—now.” He didn’t look back, his eyes still on the road. The speedometer read a hundred and five miles an hour.

“Turn around! You have to take me home!” I shouted. I struggled with the complicated harness, tearing at the straps.

“Emmett,” Edward said grimly.

And Emmett secured my hands in his cold, steely grasp.

“No! Edward! No, you can’t do this.”

“I have to, Beau, now please be quiet.”

“Do not tell me to be quiet!” I snapped. Edward’s grip tightened on the steering wheel. Emmett’s eyes widened curiously at me. “You have to take me back home—Charlie will call the FBI! They’ll be all over your family—Carlisle and Esme! They’ll have to leave, to hide forever!”

“Calm down, Beau.” His voice was cold. “We’ve been there before.”

“You’re being ridiculous. You don’t need to do this to yourselves—we can figure something out!” I struggled violently, staring daggers at Emmett.

Alice spoke for the first time. “Edward, pull over.”

He flashed her a hard look, and then sped up.

“Edward, let’s just talk this through.”

“You don’t understand,” he roared in frustration. I’d never heard his voice so loud; it was deafening in the confines of the Jeep. The speedometer neared one hundred and fifteen. “He’s a tracker, Alice, did you see that? He’s a tracker!”

I felt Emmett stiffen next to me, and I wondered at his reaction to the word. I meant something more to the three of them than it did to me; I wanted to understand, but there was no opening for me to ask.

“Pull over, Edward.” Alice’s tone was reasonable, but there was a ring of authority in it I’d never heard before.

The speedometer inched past one-twenty.

“Do it, Edward.”

“Listen to me, Alice. I saw his mind. Tracking is his passion, his obsession—and he wants him, Alice—him, specifically. He begins the hunt tonight.”

“He doesn’t know where—“

He interrupted her. “How long do you think it will take him to cross his scent in town? His plan was already set before the words were out of Laurent’s mouth.”
I gasped, knowing where my scent would lead. “Charlie! You can’t leave him there! You can’t leave him!” I vainly tried to wrench my hands from Emmett’s steel grip.

“He’s right,” Alice said.

The car slowed slightly.

“Let’s just look at our options for a minute,” Alice coaxed.

The car slowed again, more noticeably, and then suddenly we screeched to a stop on the shoulder of the highway. I flew against the harness, and then slammed back into the seat.

“There are no options,” Edward hissed.

“I’m not leaving Charlie!” I yelled.

He stiffened at the edge to my voice, but ignored me.

“We have to take him back,” Emmett finally spoke.

“No.” Edward was absolute.

“He’s no match for us, Edward. He won’t be able to touch Beau.”

“He’ll wait.”

Emmett smiled. “I can wait, too.”

“You didn’t see—you don’t understand. Once he commits to a hunt, he’s unshakable. We’d have to kill him.”

Emmett didn’t seem upset by the idea. “That’s an option.”

“And the redhead. He’s with him. If it turns into fight, the leader will go with them, too.”

“There are enough of us.”

“There’s another option,” Alice said quietly.

Edward turned on her in fury, his voice a blistering snarl. “There—is—no—other—option!”

Emmett and I both stared at him in shock, but Alice seemed unsurprised. The silence lasted a long minute as Edward and Alice stared each other down.

I broke it. “Does anyone want to hear my plan?”

“No,” Edward growled. Alice glared at him, finally provoked.

“Listen,” I began. “You take me back.”

“No,” he interrupted.

I glared at him, no longer able to contain my anger.

“Edward Cullen, listen to me.” I snapped, my voice thick with frustration. His eyes widened and he quickly glanced at me for a moment.
“Shut up, get your temper under control and stop yelling.” The anger in my voice was harsh—I had never imagined I would ever speak to anyone, let alone him, in that tone. “You will take me back. I’ll tell my dad want to go home to Phoenix. I pack my bags. We wait till this tracker is watching, and then we run. He’ll follow us and leave Charlie alone. Charlie won’t call the FBI on your family. Then you can take me any damned place you want. Got it?”

They stared at me, stunned.

“It’s not a bad idea, really.” Emmett sounded surprised—and almost impressed.

“It might work—and we simply can’t leave his father unprotected. You know that.” Alice said.

Everyone looked at Edward.

“It’s too dangerous—I don’t want him within a hundred miles of Beau.”

Emmett was supremely confident. “Edward, he’s not getting through us.”

Alice thought for a minute. “I don’t see him attacking. He’ll try to wait for us to leave him alone.”

“It won’t take long for him to realize that’s not going to happen.”

“I demand that you take me home.” My voice was a growl.

Edward pressed is fingers to his temples and squeezed his eyes shut.

“Edward,” my was voice calmer, but still hard, “please.”

He didn’t look up. When he spoke, his voice sounded worn.

“You’re leaving tonight, whether the tracker sees or not. You tell Charlie that you can’t stand another minute in Forks. Tell him whatever story words. Pack the first things your hands touch, and then get in your truck. I don’t care what he says to you. You have fifteen minutes. Do you hear me? Fifteen minutes from the time you cross the doorstep.”

“I will take however long I need to convince Charlie not to follow me,” I countered. “Do you hear me?”

Edward didn’t say anything, but at least he didn’t argue. The Jeep rumbled to life, and he spun us around, the tires squealing. The needle on the speedometer started to race up the dial.

“Emmett?” I asked, looking pointedly at my hands.

“Oh, sorry.” He let me loose. He leaned in closer to me, “That was badass of you just now.” He said quietly, grinning.

“Thanks,” I muttered.

A few minutes passed in silence, other than the roar of the engine. Then Edward spoke again.

“This is how it’s going to happen. When we get to the house, if the tracker is not there, I will walk him to the door. Then he has fifteen minutes.” He glared at me in the rearview mirror, I glared back. “Emmett, you take the outside of the house. Alice, you get the truck. I’ll be inside as long as he is. After he’s out, you two can take the jeep home and tell Carlisle.”

“No way,” Emmett broke in. “I’m with you.”
“Think it through, Emmett. I don’t know how long I’ll be gone.”

“Until we know how far this is going to go, I’m with you.”

Edward sighed. “If the tracker is there,” he continued grimly, “we keep driving.”

“We’re going to make it there before him,” Alice said confidently.

Edward seemed to accept that. Whatever his problem with Alice was, he didn’t doubt her now.

“What are we going to do with the Jeep?” she asked.

His voice had a hard edge. “You’re driving it home.”

“No, I’m not,” she said calmly.

The unintelligible stream of profanities started again.

“We can’t all fit in my truck,” I pointed out.

Edward didn’t acknowledge me.

“I think you should let me go alone,” I said calmly.

He reacted to that.

“Beau, please just do this my way, just this once,” he said between clenched teeth.

“You’re not making rational decisions. Your temper is out of control and you’re thinking emotionally, not logically,” I protested. “Charlie’s not an imbecile. If you’re not in town tomorrow, he’s going to get suspicious.”

“That’s irrelevant. We’ll make sure he’s safe, and that’s all that matters.”

“Then what about this tracker? He saw the way you acted tonight. He’s going to think you’re with me, wherever you are.”

Emmett looked at me, surprised and impressed again. “Edward, listen to him,” he urged. “I think he’s right.”

“Yes, he is.” Alice agreed.

“I can’t do that.” Edward’s voice was icy.

“Emmett should stay, too,” I continued. “He definitely got an eyeful of Emmett.”

“What?” Emmett turned on me.

“You’ll get a better crack at him if you stay,” Alice agreed.

Edward stared at her incredulously. “You think I should let Beau go alone?”

“Of course not,” Alice said. “Jasper and I will take him.”

“I can’t do that,” Edward repeated, but this time there was a trace of defeat in his voice. The logic was working on him.
I tried to be persuasive, but there was still an edge to my voice. “Hang out here for a week—“ I saw his expression in the mirror and sighed “—a few days. Let Charlie see you haven’t kidnapped me, and lead this James on a fake trail so he’s completely off mine. Then come and meet me. Take a roundabout route, of course, and then Jasper and Alice can go home.”

I could see him beginning to consider it.

“Meet you where?”

“Phoenix.” Of course.

“No. He’ll hear that’s where you’re going,” he said impatiently.

“And you’ll make it look like that’s a ruse,” I snapped, “He’ll know that we’re expecting him to be listening. He’ll never believe I’m actually going where I say I’m going.”

“He’s diabolical,” Emmett chuckled.

“And if that doesn’t work?”

“There are several million people in Phoenix,” I informed him.

“It’s not that hard to find a phone book.”

“Obviously I’m not going home.”

“Oh?” he inquired, a dangerous note in his voice.

“I’m old enough to get my own place.”

“Edward, we’ll be with him,” Alice reminded him.

“What are you going to do in Phoenix?” He asked her scathingly.

“Stay indoors.”

“I kind of like it.” Emmett was thinking about cornering James, no doubt.

“Shut up, Emmett.”

“Look, if we try to take him down while Beau’s still around, there’s a much better chance that someone will get hurt—Beau’ll get hurt, or you will, trying to protect him. Now, if we get the tracker alone…” He trailed off with a slow smile. I was right.

The Jeep was crawling slowly along now as we drove into town. Despite my brave talk, I could feel the hairs on my arms standing up. I thought about Charlie, alone in the house, and tried to be courageous.

“Beau.” Edward’s voice was very soft. Alice and Emmett looked out their windows. “If anything happens to you—anything at all—I’ll never forgive myself. I’ll never be able to forget that it was my fault you…” he trailed off, and took a deep breath. “Do you understand?” Was all he could manage.

“Yes,” I said softly.

He turned to Alice.
“Can Jasper handle this?”

“Give him some credit, Edward. He’s been doing very, very well, all things considered.”

“Can you handle this?” he asked.

And graceful little Alice pulled back her lips in a horrific grimace and let loose with a guttural snarl that had me cowering against the seat in terror.

Edward smiled at her. “But keep your opinions to yourself,” he muttered suddenly.
Goodbyes

Charlie was waiting up for me. All the house lights were on. My mind was blank as I tried to think of a way to make him let me go. This wasn’t going to be pleasant.

Edward pulled up slowly, staying well back from my truck. All three of them were acutely alert, ramrod straight in their seats, listening to every sound of the wood, looking through every shadow, catching every scent, searching for something out of place. The engine cut off, and I sat, motionless, as they continued to listen.

“He’s not here,” Edward said tensely. “Let’s go.”

Emmett reached over to help me get out of the harness. “Don’t worry, Beau,” he said in a low but cheerful voice, “we’ll take care of things here quickly.”

I felt a lump in my throat as I looked at Emmett. I barely knew him, and yet, somehow, not knowing when I would see him again after tonight was anguishing. I knew this was just a faint taste of the goodbyes I would have to survive the next hour, and the thought made me feel sick.

Emmett seemed to catch my mounting emotions and smiled, placing a large hand on my shoulder and giving it a little squeeze.

“Alice, Emmett.” Edward’s voice was a command. They slithered soundlessly into the darkness, instantly disappearing. Edward opened my door and took my hand, then drew me into the protecting enclosure of his arms. He walked me swiftly toward the house, eyes always roving the night.

“Fifteen minutes,” he warned under his breath.

“I can do this.” I sniffed back the threat of tears, inspiration suddenly dawning.

I stopped on the porch and took hold of his face in my hands. I looked fiercely into his eyes.

“I love you,” I said in a low, intense voice. “I will always love you, no matter what happens now.”

“Nothing is going to happen to you, Beau,” he said just as fiercely.

“Just follow the plan, okay? Keep Charlie safe for me. He’s not going to like me very much after this, and I want to have the chance to apologize later.”

“Beau,” His voice was urgent, but he hesitated. He pulled me into a tight embrace. “I’m so sorry for my behavior in the Jeep. Please forgive me.” His voice was deeply pained, “I’m wasting time but I’ve never heard you so angry and I know I was wrong to behave the way I did. Please, forgive me for at least that.” He kissed my cheek softly. “Now, please, hurry.”

“One more thing,” I whispered passionately. “Don’t listen to another word I say tonight!” He was leaning in, and so all I had to do was stretch up on my toes to kiss his surprised, frozen lips with as much force as I was capable of. Then I turned and kicked the door open.

“Go away, Edward! Get the hell away from me!” I yelled at him, running inside and slamming the door shut in his still-shocked face.

“Beau?” Charlie had been hovering in the living room, and he was already on his feet.

“Leave me alone!” I yelled at him with as much anger as I could muster. I ran up the stairs to my
room, throwing the door shut and locking it. I ran to my bed, flinging myself on the floor to retrieve my duffel bag. I reached swiftly between the mattress and the box spring to grab the knotted old sock that contained my secret cash hoard.

Charlie was pounding on my door.

“Beau, are you okay? What’s going on?” His voice was frightened.

“I’m going home,” I shouted, my voice breaking in the perfect spot.

“Did he hurt you?” His tone edged toward anger.

“No!” I yelled. I turned to my dresser, and Edward was already there, silently yanking out armfuls of random clothes, which he proceeded to throw to me.

“Did he break up with you?” Charlie was perplexed.

“No, he didn’t!” I yelled, slightly more breathless as I shoved everything into the bag. Edward threw another drawer’s contents at me. The bag was pretty much full now.

“What happened, Beau?” Charlie shouted through the door, pounding again.

“I broke up with him!” I shouted back, jerking on the zipper of my bag. Edward’s capable hands pushed mine away and zipped it up smoothly. He put the strap carefully over my arm.

“I’ll be in the truck—go!” he whispered, and pushed me toward the door. He vanished out the window.

I unlocked the door and pushed past Charlie roughly, struggling with my heavy bag as I ran down the stairs.

“What happened?” He yelled. He was right behind me. “I thought you liked him.”

He caught my elbow in the kitchen. Though he was still bewildered, his grip was firm.

He spun me around to look at him, and I could see in his face that he had no intention of letting me leave. I could think of only one way to escape, and it involved hurting him so much that I hated myself for even considering it. But I had no time, and I had to keep him safe.

I glared up at my father, tears forming in my eyes for what I was about to do.

“I do like him—that’s the problem. I can’t do this anymore. I can’t put down anymore roots in this damn place! This stupid, awful small town full of small minded idiots! I don’t want to end up trapped here like Mom! I’m not going to make the same dumb mistakes she did. This town is never really going to be okay with someone like me. So what if I throw my life away on some stupid boy here? I’ll still be here. I’ll still be in Forks and I’ll always be miserable. I hate it—I can’t stay here another damn minute!”

His hand dropped from my arm like I’d electrocuted him. I turned away from his shocked, devastated face and headed for the door.

“Beau, you can’t leave now. It’s nighttime,” he whispered behind me.

I didn’t turn around. “I’ll sleep in the truck if I get tired.”

“Just wait another week,” He pled, still shocked and hurt. “Your mom will be back by then.”
This completely derailed me. “What?”

Charlie continued eagerly, almost babbling with relief as I hesitated. “She called while you were out. Things aren’t going so well in Florida, and if Phil doesn’t get signed by the end of the week, they’re going back to Arizona. The assistant coach of the Sidewinders said they might have a spot for another shortstop.”

I shook my head, trying to reassemble my now-confused thoughts. Every passing second put Charlie in more danger.

“I have a key,” I muttered, turning the knob. He was too close, one hand extended toward me, his face dazed.

“Please, Beau,” the hurt in his voice was deep, “I can be better, I can spend more time at the house—we can do more stuff together.” His voice was desperate, “Please, I just got you back.”

I couldn’t lose any more time arguing with him, I couldn’t put him in any more danger. I was going to have to hurt him further.

Just let me go, Charlie.” I repeated my mother’s last words as she’d walked out this same door so many years ago. I said them as angrily as I could manage, and I threw the door open. “It didn’t work out, okay? I absolutely hate Forks.”

My cruel words did their job—Charlie stayed frozen on the doorstep, stunned, while I ran into the night. I was hideously frightened of the empty yard. I ran wildly for the truck, visualizing a dark shadow behind me. I threw my bag in the bed and wrenched the door open. The key was waiting in the ignition.

“I’ll call you tomorrow!” I yelled, wishing more than anything that I could explain everything to him right then, knowing I would never be able to. I gunned the engine and peeled out.

Edward reached for my hand.

“Pull over,” he said as the house, and Charlie, disappeared behind us.

“I can drive,” I choked the words out as tears escaped my eyes.

His long hands unexpectedly gripped my waist, and his foot pushed mine off the gas pedal. He pulled me across his lap, wrenching my hands free of the wheel, and suddenly he was in the driver’s seat. The truck didn’t swerve an inch.

Without the task of driving to distract me I felt my body go numb, my emotions punched me square in the stomach, and I broke down in violent sobs. I would have hurt Charlie less if I had stabbed him with a knife from the kitchen. The guilt and regret poured over me till I was drowning. After everything Charlie had done for me, after being so perfectly great at being a father to me, I had said those horrible cruel things to him. I was sobbing so hard I felt myself start to shake. Edward reached out his arm and pulled me tightly to him, I clutched at his shirt, trying to steady my breathing.

“Shhh…” he rubbed my arm with his hand.

“God, I hate myself.” The words barely came out.

“You were doing what you had to do to protect him.” His voice was soothing.

Lights flared suddenly behind us. I stared out the back window, eyes wide with horror.
It’s just Alice,” he reassured me. He took my hand again.

“The tracker?” I sniffed.

“He heard the end of your performance,” Edward said grimly.

“Charlie?” I asked in dread.

“Charlie’s fine. The tracker followed us. He’s running behind us now.”

My body went cold. “Can we outrun him?”

“No.” But he sped up as he spoke. The truck’s engine whined in protest.

My plan suddenly didn’t feel so brilliant anymore.

I was staring back at Alice’s headlights when the truck shuddered and a dark shadow sprung up outside the window.

A strangled sound of panic escaped my lips and my fingers dug into Edward’s shirt.

“It’s Emmett!”

He wound his arm tightly around my waist.

“It’s okay, Beau,” he promised. “You’re going to be safe.”

We raced through the quiet town toward the north highway.

“I didn’t realize you were still so bored with small-town life,” he said conversationally, and I knew he was trying to distract me. “It seemed like you were adjusting fairly well—especially recently. Maybe I was just flattering myself that I was making life more interesting for you. Then again, I am just some stupid boy.”

“I wasn’t being nice,” I confessed, ignoring his attempt at diversion, looking down at my knees. “That was the same thing my mom said when she left him. You could say I was hitting below the belt.”

“Don’t worry. He’ll forgive you.” He smiled a little, though it didn’t touch his eyes.

I stared at him desperately, and he saw the naked panic in my eyes.

“Beau, it’s going to be all right.”

“It won’t be, not when you have to leave,” I whispered, “I just said my goodbyes to Charlie and now I’ll have to say goodbye to you.”

“We’ll be together again in a few days,” he said, tightening his arm around me. “Don’t forget that this was your idea.”

“It was the best idea—of course it was mine.”

His answering smile was bleak and disappeared immediately.

“Why did this happen?” I asked, my voice catching. “Why me?”

He stared blackly at the road ahead. “It’s my fault—I was a fool to expose you like that.” The rage in
his voice was directed internally.

“That’s not what I meant,” I insisted. “I was there, big deal. It didn’t bother the other two. Why did James decide to kill me? There’re people all over the place, why me?”

He hesitated, thinking before he answered.

“I got a good look at his mind tonight,” he began in a low voice. “I’m not sure if there’s anything I could have done to avoid this, once he saw you. It is partially your fault.” His voice was wry. “If you didn’t smell so damn luscious, he might not have bothered. But when I defended you… well, that made it a lot worse. He’s not used to being thwarted, no matter how insignificant the object. He thinks of himself as a hunter and nothing else. His existence is consumed with tracking and a challenge is all he asks of life. Suddenly we’ve presented him with a beautiful challenge—a large clan of strong fighters bent on protecting the one vulnerable element. You wouldn’t believe how euphoric he is now. It’s his favorite game, and we’ve just made it his most exciting game ever.” His tone was full of disgust.

He paused a moment.

“But if I had stood by he would have killed you right then,” he said with hopeless frustration.

“I thought… I didn’t smell the same to the others… as I do to you,” I said hesitantly.

“You don’t. But that doesn’t mean you aren’t still a temptation to every one of them. If you had appealed to the tracker—or any of them—the same way you appeal to me, it would have meant a fight right there.”

I shuddered.

“I don’t think I have any choice but to kill him now,” he muttered. “Carlisle won’t like it.”

I could hear the tires cross the bridge, though I couldn’t see the river in the dark. I knew we were getting close. I had to ask him now.

“How can you kill a vampire?”

He glanced at me with unreadable eyes and his voice was suddenly harsh. “The only way to be sure it to tear him to shreds, and then burn the pieces.”

“And the other two will fight with him?”

“The red-head will. I’m not sure about Laurent. They don’t have a very strong bond—he’s only with them for convenience. He was embarrassed by James in the meadow…”

“But James and the red-head—they’ll try to kill you?” I asked, my voice raw.

“Beau, don’t you dare waste time worrying about me. I put you in danger. It’s my fault you had to hurt Charlie and run away from home. Your only concern should be keeping yourself safe.”

“Is he still following?”

“Yes. He won’t attack the house, though. Not tonight.”

He turned off onto the invisible drive, with Alice following behind.

We drove right up to the house. The lights inside were bright, but they did little to alleviate the
blackness of the encroaching forest. Emmett had my door open before the truck was stopped; he pulled me out of the seat, tucked me like a football into his vast chest, and ran me through the door.

We burst into the large while room, Edward and Alice at our sides. All of them were there; they were already on their feet at the sound of our approach. Laurent stood in their midst. I could hear low growls rumble deep in Emmett’s throat as he set me down next to Edward.

“He’s tracking us,” Edward announced, glaring balefully at Laurent.

Laurent’s face was unhappy. “I was afraid of that.”

Alice danced to Jasper’s side and whispered in his ear; her lips quivered with the speed of her silent speech. They flew up the stairs together. Royal watched them, and then moved quickly to Emmett’s side. His beautiful eyes were intense and—when they flickered unwillingly to my face—furious.

“What will he do?” Carlisle asked Laurent in chilling tones.

“I’m sorry,” he answered. “I was afraid when your boy there defended the human that it would set him off.”

“Can you stop him?”

Laurent shook his head. “Nothing stops James when he gets started.”

“We’ll stop him,” Emmett promised. There was no doubt what he meant.

“You can’t bring him down. I’ve never seen anything like him in my three hundred years. He’s absolutely lethal. That’s why I joined his coven.”

His coven, I thought, of course. The show of leadership in the clearing was merely that, a show.

Laurent was shaking his head. He glanced at me, perplexed, and back to Carlisle. “Are you sure it’s worth it?”

Edward’s enraged roar filled the room; Laurent cringed back.

Carlisle looked gravely at Laurent. “I’m afraid you’re going to have to make a choice.”

Laurent understood. He deliberated for a moment. His eyes took in every face, and finally swept the bright room.

“I’m intrigued by the life you’ve created here. But I won’t get in the middle of this. I bear none of you any enmity, but I won’t go up against James. I think I will head north—to that clan in Denali.” He hesitated. “Don’t underestimate James. He’s got a brilliant mind and unparalleled senses. He’s every bit as comfortable in the human world as you seem to be, and he won’t come at you head on… I’m sorry for what’s been unleashed here. Truly sorry.” He bowed his head, but I saw him flicker another puzzled look at me.

“Go in peace,” was Carlisle’s formal answer.

Laurent took another long look around himself, and then he hurried out the door.

The silence lasted less than a second.

“How close?” Carlisle looked to Edward.
Esme was already moving; her hand touched an inconspicuous keypad on the wall, and with a groan, huge metal shutters began sealing up the glass wall. I gaped.

“About three miles out past the river; he’s circling around to meet up with the red-head.”

“What’s the plan?”

“We’ll lead them off, and then Jasper and Alice will run Beau south.”

“And then?”

Edward’s tone was deadly. “As soon as Beau is clear, we hunt the tracker.”

“I guess there’s no other choice,” Carlisle agreed, his face grim.

Edward turned to Royal.

“Get him upstairs and trade clothes,” Edward commanded. Royal stared back at him with livid disbelief.

“Why should I?” He hissed. “What is he to me? Except a menace—a danger you’ve chosen to inflict on all of us.”

I flinched back from the venom in his voice.

“Roy…,” Emmett murmured, putting one hand on his shoulder. He shook it off.

But I was watching Edward carefully, knowing his temper, worried about his reaction. But Edward didn’t speak. He seemed to be making a conscience effort to maintain composure as he and Royal glared at each other.

“Aw, hell,” Emmett finally broke the silence, “C’mon, Beau.”

He was at my side in half a heartbeat, swinging me again into his strong arms, and dashing up the stairs before I could react.

“What are we doing?” I asked breathlessly as he set me down in a dark room somewhere off the second-story hall.

“Trying to confuse the smell.” Emmett flicked on a light, “It won’t work for long, but it might help get you out.” He pulled off his shirt and held it out to me.

“I don’t think I’ll fit…” I hesitated.

He laughed, “Of course it won’t; you’re probably less than half the size of me.” He abruptly pulled my shirt over my head and replaced it with his own. It smelled similar to Edward’s scent—sweet, alluring—but there was something woodsier about Emmett’s scent. Emmett quickly dropped his jeans and handed them to me, I slid my own off and yanked his on, but I couldn’t get my feet out; they were too long. He deftly rolled the hems a few times so I could stand and pulled the belt he had left on them as tight as it would go.

“I don’t think I’ll fit…” I hesitated.

He laughed, “Of course it won’t; you’re probably less than half the size of me.” He abruptly pulled my shirt over my head and replaced it with his own. It smelled similar to Edward’s scent—sweet, alluring—but there was something woodsier about Emmett’s scent. Emmett quickly dropped his jeans and handed them to me, I slid my own off and yanked his on, but I couldn’t get my feet out; they were too long. He deftly rolled the hems a few times so I could stand and pulled the belt he had left on them as tight as it would go.

“Wait here,” he commanded, and vanished suddenly. He was back half a second later in a new outfit, he grabbed my old clothes off the floor. “Esme,” he called. She was already in the doorway and caught my clothes as he tossed them. Then he scooped me up carried me back to the stairs where Alice stood, a small leather bag in one hand. They flew down the stairs with me in tow.
Emmett set me down at the base of the stairs and went to Edward’s side. It appeared that everything had been settled downstairs in our absence. Edward looked ready to leave and handed a heavy-looking backpack to Emmett who slung it over his shoulder. Esme appeared from upstairs wearing my old clothes, her hair tucked into a baseball cap. Carlisle met her and gave her something small and flat. He turned and handed Alice the same thing—it appeared to be a cell phone.

“Esme and Royal will be taking your truck, Beau,” he told me as he passed. “We’re hoping the scent of your clothes might confuse the tracker into thinking Esme is you.” I nodded, glancing warily at Royal. He was glowering at Carlisle with a resentful expression.

“Alice, Jasper—take the Mercedes. You’ll need the dark tint in the south.” They nodded as well.

“We’ll take the Jeep.”

I was surprised to see that Carlisle intended to go with Edward. I realized suddenly, with a stab of fear, that they made up the hunting party.

“Alice,” Carlisle asked, “will they take the bait?”

Everyone watched Alice as she closed her eyes and became incredibly still.

Finally her eyes opened. “He’ll track you. The red-head will follow the truck. We should be able to leave after that.” Her voice was certain.

“Let’s go.” Carlisle began to walk toward the kitchen.

Emmett gave me a gentle pat on the back, “Don’t ruin that shirt,” he grinned. I feebly smiled back; he considered my expression for a moment and pulled me into a tight side-hug. “We’ll keep you safe, big guy.” He smiled warmly.

Royal was glaring at us.

Edward as at my side as soon as Emmett had left. He caught me up in his iron grip, crushing me to him. He seemed unaware of his watching family as he pulled my face to his, lifting my feet off the floor. For the shortest second, his lips were icy and hard against mine. Then it was over. He set me down, still holding my face, his glorious eyes burning into mine.

“Remember, you are my life.”

“I love you.”

And he was gone.

I stood there, the others looking away from me as I fought the tears threatening to break free.

The silent moment dragged on, and then Esme’s phone vibrated in her hand. It flashed to her ear.

“Now,” she said. Royal stalked out the front door without another glance in my direction, but Esme touched my cheek as she passed.

“Be safe.” Her whisper lingered behind them as they slipped out the door. I heard my truck start thunderously, and then fade away.

Jasper and Alice waited. Alice’s phone seemed to be at her ear before it buzzed.

“Edward says the red-head is on Esme’s trail. I’ll get the car.” She vanished into the shadows the
way Edward had gone.

Jasper and I looked at each other. He stood across the length of the entryway from me… being careful.

“You’re wrong, you know,” he said quietly.

“What?”

“I can feel what you’re feeling now—and you are worth it.”

“I don’t think I am,” I mumble. “If anything happens to any of them, it will be for nothing.”

“You’re wrong,” he repeated, smiling kindly at me.

I heard nothing, but then Alice stepped through the front door and came toward me with her arms held out.

“May I?” she asked.

I stared at her disbelievingly, “Well, at least you’re the first person to ask permission.” I shrugged in consent.

She lifted me in her slender arms as easily as Emmett had, shielding me protectively, and then we flew out the door, leaving the bright lights behind us.
When I woke up, I was confused. It took me longer than it should have to remember where I was.

The room was too bland to belong anywhere but a hotel. The bedside lamps were bolted to the tables, and the drapes were made from the same fabric as the bedspread.

I tried to remember how I’d gotten to this room, but nothing came at first.

I remembered the sleek black car, the glass in the windows darker than that on a limousine. The engine was almost silent, though we’d raced across the black freeways at more than twice the legal limit.

And I remembered Alice sitting with me on the dark leather backseat. Somehow, during the long night, my head had ended up against her shoulder. She didn’t seem to mind my closeness as I leaned against her cold, marble body. I fought back panic and tears thinking about the danger; the danger I was in and the other danger I was worried about.

I asked Alice to keep up a strange stream-of-consciousness future watch all night long. There weren’t any details so small they didn’t interest me. She’d told me turn by turn how Edward, Carlisle, and Emmett would be moving through the forest, and though I didn’t know any of the landmarks she referenced, I’d been riveted by every word. And then she would go back and describe the same sequence differently, as some decision remapped the future. This happened over and over again, and it was impossible to follow, but I didn’t care. As long as the future never put Edward and his family in danger, I’d be able to fight the panic.

Sometimes she would switch to Esme for me. Esme and Royal were in my truck, heading east. Which meant the red-haired man was still on their trail.

Alice had a more difficult time seeing Charlie. “Humans are harder than vampires,” she told me. “But,” she continued, “he’s doing fine. Don’t worry.”

I remembered the sun coming up over a low peak somewhere in California. The light had stung my eyes, but I’d tried not to close them. When I did, the images that flashed behind my lids like still slides were too much. I’d rather my eyes burn than see them again. Charlie’s broken expression… Edward’s bared teeth… Royal’s furious glare… the red eyes of the tracker staring at me… the dead look in Edward’s eyes when he’d turned away from me…

I kept my eyes open, and the sun moved across the sky.

I remembered my head feeling heavy and light at the same time as we raced through a shallow mountain pass and the sun, behind us now, reflected off the tiled rooftops of my hometown. I hadn’t had enough emotion left to be surprised that we’d made a three-day journey in one. I’d stared blankly at the city laid out in front of us, realizing slowly that it was supposed to mean something to me. The scrubby creosote, the palm trees, the green golf course amoebas, the turquoise splotches of swimming pools—these were supposed to be familiar. I was supposed to feel like I was home.

The shadows of the streetlight had slanted across the freeway with lines that were sharper than I remembered. So little darkness. There was no place to hide in these shadows.

“Which way to the airport?” Jasper had asked—the first time he’d spoken since we’d gotten in the car. Though his voice was quiet it had startled me; it was the first sound, besides the purr of the car, to break the long night’s silence.
“Stay on the I-ten,” I’d answered automatically. “We’ll pass right by it.”

It had taken me a few seconds more to process the implications of his question. My brain was foggy with exhaustion.

“Are we flying somewhere?” I’d asked Alice. I couldn’t think of the plan. This didn’t sound right, though.

“No, but it’s better to be close, just in case.”

I remembered starting the loop around Sky Harbor International… but not ending it. That must have been when my brain had finally crashed.

Though, now that I’d chased the memories down, I did have a vague impression of leaving the car—the sun behind the horizon, my arm draped over Alice’s shoulder, her arm around my waist as I stumbled through the warm, dry shadows.

I had no memories of this room.

I looked at the digital clock on the nightstand. The red numbers claimed it was three o’clock, but there was no way to tell if that meant day or night. No light showed around the edges of the thick curtains, but the room was bright with the light from the lamps.

I rose stiffly and staggered to the window, pulling back the drapes.

It was dark outside. Three in the morning, then. The room looked out on a deserted section of the freeway and the new long-term parking garage for the airport. It made me feel better—by a very small amount—to be able to pinpoint time and place.

I looked down. I was still wearing Emmett’s giant shirt and too-large pants. I looked around the room and was glad when I saw my duffel bag on top of the low dresser.

A light tap on the door made me jump.

“Can I come in?” Alice asked.

I took a deep breath. “Sure.”

She walked in and looked me over. “You look like you could sleep longer.” I shook my head.

She darted silently to the window and pulled the curtains shut.

“We’ll need to stay inside,” she told me.

“Okay.” My voice was hoarse; it cracked.

“Thirsty?” she asked.

I shrugged. “I’m okay. How about you?”

She smiled. “Nothing unmanageable. I ordered some food for you—it’s in the front room. Edward reminded me that you have to eat a lot more frequently than we do.”

I was instantly more alert. “He called?”

“No.” She watched my face fall. “It was before we left. He gave me lots of instructions. Come eat
something.”

She was out of the room before I could protest that I wasn’t hungry. I followed slowly behind her.

There was a living room attached to the bedroom. A low buzz of voices was coming from the TV. Jasper sat at the desk in the corner, his eyes on the TV, but no interest in his expression. Alice perched herself on the arm of the sofa and watched the TV like Jasper.

“What’s the latest?” I asked.

“Esme and Royal are back in Forks. The redhead gave up chasing them.”

I opened my mouth, but Alice was faster.

“They’re watching your father. The redhead won’t get past them.”

“What is he doing—the redhead, I mean?”

“Working his way through town, looking for you as far as I can tell—he spent some time at the school.”

My eyes bulged. “Did he hurt anyone?”

Alice shook her head. “They seem pretty committed to the hunt they already started.”

“Edward?”

“Frustrated, it looks like. They turned on the tracker, but he was already running. He’s kept going north. They’re chasing him.”

I stood there, not sure what to do. Wanting to help, but knowing there was no way I could.

“Eat something, Beau. Edward gets really difficult when he thinks his instructions aren’t being followed to the letter.”

There was a tray on the coffee table with a couple of stainless steel covers over the plates on it. I couldn’t think of anything to do besides follow Alice’s order. I sat on the floor next to the table and pulled off the first cover. I didn’t look at the food, I just grabbed something and started eating. I was probably hungry. We hadn’t stopped for food during our drive.

They were quiet and motionless while I ate. I stared at the TV, but I couldn’t make sense of what was happening. Was it a news show? Was it an infomercial? I wasn’t sure. I ate until the plates were empty. I didn’t taste any of it.

When there was nothing left to eat, I stared at the wall.

All I could think about was Edward chasing James. Edward, faster than the rest. Surely he would catch up with the tracker first.

Laurent’s words echoed in my head. You can’t bring him down. He’s absolutely lethal.

Suddenly Jasper was standing over me, closer than usual.

“Beau,” he said in a soothing voice. “You have nothing to worry about. You are completely safe here.”
“I know.”

“Then why are you frightened?” He sounded confused. He might feel my emotions, but he couldn’t see the reason behind them.

“You heard what Laurent said. James is lethal. What if something goes wrong and they get separated? If anything happens, if Carlisle or Emmett—or Edward—“ My voice broke. “If that crazy redhead hurts Esme—how do I live with myself when it’s my fault? None of you should be risking your lives for—”

“Stop, Beau, stop,” he interrupted, his words pouring out so quickly they were hard to understand. “You’re worrying about all the wrong things, Beau. Trust me on this—none of us are in jeopardy. You are under enough strain as it is; don’t add to it with imaginary worries. Listen to me!” he ordered—I’d looked away. “Our family is strong. Our only fear is losing you.”

“But why should you—“

Alice was there then, touching my cheek with her cold fingers. “It’s been almost a century that Edward’s been alone. Now he’s found you. You can’t see the changes that we see, we who have been with him for so long. Do you think any of us want to look into his eyes for the next hundred years if he loses you?”

My guilt started to ease. But even though the calm that spread over me felt totally natural, like it came from inside, I knew better.

“You know I’d do this anyway,” Alice added. “Even if Edward hadn’t ask me to.”

“Why?”

She smiled. “It’s hard to explain without sounded completely ridiculous… Time doesn’t mean the same thing to me that it does to you—or Jazz, or anyone else.” Jasper grinned and put his arm around her waist. “So this won’t make sense to you. But for me, it’s like we’ve already been friends for a long time, Beau. The first second you became a part of Edward’s life, for me it was like we’d already spent hundreds of hours together. We’ve laughed at Edward’s overreactions together, we’ve annoyed Royal right out of the house together, we’ve stayed up all night talking with Carlisle together…”

I stared and she shrugged delicately. “It’s how I experience the world.”

“We’re friends?” I asked, my voice full of wonder.

“Best friends,” she told me. “Someday. It was nice of my favorite brother, don’t you think, to fall in love with my best friend? I guess I owe him one.”

“Huh,” was all I could think to say.

Alice laughed.

Jasper rolled his eyes. “Thanks so much, Alice. I just got him calm.”

“No, I’m good,” I promised. Alice could be lying to make me feel better, but either way it worked. It wasn’t so bad if Alice wanted to help me, too. If she wasn’t just doing it for Edward.

“So what do we do now?” I asked.
“We wait for something to change.”

It was a very long day.

We stayed in the room. Alice called down to the front desk and asked them to suspend our housekeeping service. The curtains stayed shut, the TV on, though no one watched it. At regular intervals, food was delivered for me.

It was funny how I was suddenly comfortable with Alice. It was like her vision of our friendship, spoken out loud, had made it real. She sat in the chair next to the sofa where I had curled up, and answered all the questions I’d been too nervous to ask before. Sometimes she’d answer them before I asked them. It was a little weird, but I figured that was how everyone else felt around Edward all the time.

“Yes,” she said, when I thought about asking her that. “It’s exactly the same. He tries hard not to be obnoxious about it.”

She told me about waking up.

“I only remembered one thing, but I’m not even sure it was a memory. I thought I remembered someone saying my name—calling me Alice. But maybe I was remembering something that hadn’t happened yet—seeing that someday someone would call me Alice.” She smiled at my expression. “I know, it’s a circular dilemma, isn’t it?”

“My hair?” She ran a hand through her short, inky hair. “It would have been a little short even for 1920. My best guess is disease or perhaps bad behavior.”

“Bad behavior?” I asked.

She shrugged. “I might have been in prison.”

“You couldn’t have been much older than me,” I protested.

She put a delicate finger to her chin thoughtfully. “I like to believe if I was a criminal, I was both a mastermind and a prodigy.”

Jasper—back at the desk and mostly silent—laughed with me.

“It wasn’t confusing the way it probably should have been,” Alice said when I asked her what her first visions were like. “It seemed normal—I knew what I was seeing hadn’t happened. I think maybe I’d seen things before I changed. Or maybe I just adapt quickly.” She smiled, already knowing the question I had waiting. “It was Jasper. He was the first thing I saw.” And then, “No, I didn’t actually meet him in person until much later.”

Something about her tone made me wonder. “How long?”

“Twenty-eight years.”

“Twenty-eight…? You had to wait twenty-eight years? But couldn’t you…?”

She nodded. “I could have found him earlier. I knew where he was. But he wasn’t ready for me yet. If I’d come too early, he would have killed me.”

I gasped and stared at him. He raised an eyebrow at me, and I looked back at Alice. She laughed.

“But Edward said you were the only one who could hold your own against him—?”
Jasper growled—not like he was mad, like he was annoyed. I glanced at him again and he was rolling his eyes.

“We’ll never know,” Alice said. “If Jazz was really trying to kill Edward, rather than just playing…? Well, Jazz has a lot of experience. Seeing the future isn’t the only reason why I can keep up with Edward—it’s also because it was Jasper who taught me how to fight. Laurent’s coven all had their eyes on Emmett—he’s pretty spectacular, I grant you. But if it had come to a fight, Emmett wouldn’t have been their problem. If they’d taken a closer look at my darling”—she blew him a kiss—“they would have forgotten all about the strong man.”

I remembered the first time I’d seen Jasper, in the cafeteria with his family. Beautiful, like the others, but with that edge. Even before I’d put it into words inside my own head, I’d sensed there was something about him that matched up with what Alice was telling me now.

I looked at Alice.

“You can ask him,” she said. “But he’s not going to tell you.”

“He wants to know my story?” Jasper guessed. He laughed once—it was a dark sound. “You’re not ready for that, Beau. Believe me.”

And though I was still curious, I did believe him.

“You said humans were harder… but you seem to see me pretty well,” I noted.

“I’m paying attention, and you’re right here,” Alice said. “Also, the two-second head starts are simpler than the weather. It’s the long term that won’t hold still. Even an hour complicates thing. I can only see the course someone is on while they’re on it. Once they change their minds—make a new decision, no matter how small—the whole future shifts.”

Alice kept me updated on what was happening with the others—which was mostly nothing. James was good at running away. There were tricks, Alice told me. Scents couldn’t be tracked through water, for example. James seemed to know the tricks. A half dozen times the trail took them back toward Forks, only to race off in the other direction again. Twice Alice called Carlisle to give him instructions. Once it was something about the direction in which James had jumped off a cliff, the other time it was where they would find his scent on the other side of a river. From the way she described it, she wasn’t seeing the hunter, she was seeing Edward and Carlisle. I guessed she would see her family most clearly. I wanted to ask for the phone, but I knew there wasn’t time for me to hear Edward’s voice. They were hunting.

I also knew I was supposed to be rooting for Edward and the others to succeed, and for my own sake I desperately wanted them to, but I couldn’t help but feel relieved knowing the distance between Edward and James grew larger, despite Alice’s help. If it meant I would be stuck in here in this hotel room forever, I wouldn’t complain. Whatever kept me safe, kept Edward safe, and kept his family safe.

There was one more question that I wanted to ask, but I hesitated. It was a question I wanted to know the answer to. Mostly I wanted to know because I was curious, but I also knew that because I had made the choice to go down this road—because I had chosen Edward—this was something I felt like I needed to know. I think if Jasper hadn’t been there, I might have done it sooner. I didn’t feel the same ease in his presence that I did now with Alice. Which was probably only because he wasn’t trying to make me feel that way.

When I was eating—dinner? Maybe, I couldn’t remember which meal I was on—I was thinking
about different ways to ask. And then I caught a look on Alice’s face and I knew that she already knew what I was trying to ask, and unlike my dozens of other questions, she was choosing not to answer this one.

My eyes narrowed.

“Was this on Edward’s list of instructions?” I asked sourly.

I thought I heard a faint sigh from Jasper’s corner. It was probably annoying listening to half a conversation. But he should be used to that. I’d best Edward and Alice never had to speak out loud at all when they talked to each other.

“It was implied,” Alice answered.

I thought about their fight in the Jeep. Was this what it was about?

“I don’t suppose our future friendship is enough to shift your loyalties?”

She smirked. “Edward is my brother.”

“Even if you disagree with him on this?”

We stared at each other for a minute.

“That’s what you saw,” I realized. I felt my eyes get bigger. “And then he got so upset. You already saw it, didn’t you?”

“It was only one future among many. I also saw you die,” she reminded me.

“But you saw it. It’s a possibility.”

She shrugged.

“Don’t you think I deserve to know, then? Even if there’s only the slightest chance?”

She stared at me, deliberating.

“You do,” she finally said. “You have the right to know.”

I waited.

“You don’t know fury like Edward when he’s thwarted,” she warned me.

“It’s none of his business. This is between you and me. As your friend, I’m begging you.”

She paused, then made her choice. “I can tell you the mechanics of it, but I don’t remember it myself, and I’ve never done it or seen it done, so keep in mind that I can only tell you the theory.”

“How does someone become a vampire?”

“Oh, is that all?” Jasper muttered behind me. I’d forgotten he was listening.

I waited.

“As predators,” Alice began, “we have a glut of weapons in our physical arsenal—much, much more than we need for hunting easy prey like humans. Strength, speed, acute senses, not to mention those of us like Edward, Jasper, and me who have extra senses as well. And then, like a carnivorous
flower, we are physically attractive to our prey.”

I was seeing it all in my head again—how Edward had illustrated the same concept for me in the meadow.

She smiled a wide, ominous smile—her teeth glistened. “We have one more, fairly superfluous weapon. We’re also venomous. The venom doesn’t kill—it’s merely incapacitating. It works slowly, spreading through the bloodstream, so that, once bitten, our prey is in too much physical pain to escape us. Mostly superfluous, as I said. If we’re that close, our prey doesn’t escape. Of course, unless we want it to.”

“Carlisle,” I said quietly. The holes in the story Edward had told me were filling themselves in. “So… if the venom is left to spread…?”

“It takes a few days for the transformation to be complete, depending on how much venom is in the bloodstream, how close the venom enters to the heart—Carlisle’s creator bit him on the hand on purpose to make it worse. As long as the heart keeps beating, the poison spreads, healing, changing the body as it moves through it. Eventually the heart stops, and the conversion is finished. But all that time, every minute of it, a victim would be wishing for death—screaming for it.

I shuddered.

“It’s not pleasant, no.”

“Edward said it was very hard to do… but that sounds simple enough.”

“We’re also like sharks in a way. Once we taste blood, or even smell it for that matter, it becomes very hard to keep from feeding. Impossible, even. So you see, to actually bite someone, to taste the blood, it would begin the frenzy. It’s difficult on both sides—the bloodlust on the one hand, the awful pain on the other.”

“Why do you think you don’t remember?”

“I don’t know. For everyone else, the pain of transformation is the sharpest memory they have of their human life. I remember nothing of being human.” Her voice was wistful.

Alice stared past me, motionless. I wondered what it would be like, not to know who you were. To look in the mirror and not recognize the person looking back.

It hurt to think of Alice waking up, lost, confused, not knowing who she was or why she there. There was something intrinsically good about Alice, about her very being. There was something better than perfection about Alice’s face. It was totally pure.

“There are positives to being different,” Alice said suddenly. “I don’t remember anyone I left behind. I got to skip that pain, too.” She looked at me, and her eyes narrowed little bit. “Carlisle, Edward, and Esme all lost everyone who mattered to them before they left being human behind. So there was grief, but not regret. It was different for the others. The physical pain is a quick thing, comparatively, Beau. There are slower ways to suffer…”

“Royal had parents who loved him and depended on him—two little sisters he adored. He could never see them again after he was changed. And then he outlived them all. That kind of pain is very, very slow.”

I wondered if she was trying to make me feel bad for Royal—to cut him some slack even if he hated me. Well… it was working.
She shook her head, like she knew I wasn’t getting it.

“That’s part of the process, Beau. I haven’t experienced it. I can’t tell you what it feels like. But it’s a part of the process.”

And then I understood what she was telling me.

She was perfectly still again. I put my arm behind my head and stared up at the ceiling.

If… if ever, someday, Edward wanted me that way… what would that mean for Mom? What would that mean for Charlie?

There were so many things to think about. Thing I didn’t even know I didn’t know to think about.

But some things seemed obvious. For whatever reason, Edward didn’t want me thinking about any of this. Why? Was it because Edward wanted to change me but was afraid I wouldn’t let him if I knew how painful it would be? No, Edward didn’t want to change me. He didn’t want me to think about the possibility. That was the answer. I considered that and decided, for now, I was okay with that. I couldn’t say goodbye to mom and never see her again. The only reason I didn’t completely hate myself for what I had said to Charlie was because I was holding on to the hope that I would see him again and beg for his forgiveness. I couldn’t leave them forever.

Alice suddenly sprang to her feet.

I looked up at her, startled by the sudden movement, then alarmed again when I saw her face. It was totally blank—empty, her mouth half open.

Then Jasper was there, gently pushing her back into the chair.

“What do you see?” he asked in a low, soothing voice.

“Something’s changed,” Alice said, even more quietly.

I leaned closer.

“What is it?”

“A room. It’s long—there are mirrors everywhere. The floor is wood. The tracker is in the room, and he’s waiting. There’s a gold stripe across the mirrors.”

“Where is the room?”

“I don’t know. Something is missing—another decision hasn’t been made yet.”

“How much time?”

“It’s soon. He’ll be in the mirror room today, or maybe tomorrow. It all depends. He’s waiting for something.” Her face went blank again. “And he’s in the dark now.”

Jasper’s voice was calm, methodical. “What is he doing?”

“He’s watching TV… no, he’s running a VCR, in the dark, in another place.”

“Can you see where he is?”
"No, the space is too dark."

"And the mirror room, what else is there?"

"Just the mirrors, and the gold. It’s a band, around the room. This is the room where he waits.” Her eyes drifted, then focused on Jasper’s face.

"There’s nothing else?"

She shook her head. They looked at each other, motionless.

"What does it mean?" I asked.

Neither of them answered for a moment, then Jasper looked at me.

"It means the tracker’s plans have changed. He’s made a decision that will lead him to the mirror room, and the dark room."

"But we don’t know where those rooms are?"

"No."

"But we do know that he won’t be in the mountains north of Washington, being hunted. He’ll elude them.” Alice’s voice was bleak.

She picked up the phone just as it vibrated.

"Carlisle," she said. And then she glanced at me. "Yes." She listened for another long moment, then said, "I just saw him." She described the vision like she had for Jasper. "Whatever made him get on that plane… it was leading him to those rooms." She paused. "Yes."

She held out the phone to me. "Beau?"

I yanked it out of her hand. "Hello?"

"Beau," Edward breathed.

"Oh, Edward," I said. "Where are you?"

"Outside of Vancouver. I’m sorry, Beau—we lost him. He seems suspicious of us—he stays just far enough away that I can’t hear him. He’s gone now—looks like he took a plane. We think he’s heading back to Forks to start over."

I could hear Alice filling in Jasper behind me.

"I know. Alice saw that he got away.” I sighed.

"You don’t have to worry, though. He won’t find anything to lead him to you. You just have to stay there and wait till find him again.”

"I’ll be fine. Is Esme with Charlie?"

"Yes—the red-head’s been in town. He went to the house, but while Charlie was at work. He hasn’t gone near your father. Don’t worry—Charlie’s safe with Esme and Royal watching."

"What do you think Victor is doing?"
“Probably trying to pick up the trail. He’s been all through the town during the night. Royal traced him through the airport, all the roads around town, the school… he’s digging, Beau, but there’s nothing to find.”

“And you’re sure Charlie’s safe?”

“Yes, Esme won’t let him out her sight. And we’ll be there soon. If the tracker gets anywhere near Forks, we’ll have him.”

I swallowed. “Be careful. Stay with Carlisle and Emmett.”

“I will.”

“I miss you,” I whispered.

“I know, believe me, I know. It’s like you’ve taken half of my self away with you.”

“Come and get it, then.” I challenged.

“As soon as I possibly can. I will make you safe first.” His voice was hard.

“I love you.”

“Could you believe that, despite everything I’ve put you through, I love you, too?”

“Yes, I can.”

“I’ll come for you soon.”

“I’ll wait for you.”

The phone went dead, and a sudden wave of depression crashed over me. Jasper looked up sharply, and the feeling dissipated.

Jasper went back to watching Alice. She was on the couch, leaning over the table sketching on a piece of hotel stationery. I leaned on the back of the couch, looking over her shoulder.

She drew a room: long, rectangular, with a thinner, square section at the back. She drew lines to show how the wooden planks that made up the floor stretched lengthwise across the room. Down the walls were more lines denoting the breaks in the mirrors. I hadn’t been picturing them like that—covering the whole wall that way. And then, wrapping around the walls, waist high, a long band. The band Alice said was gold.

“It’s a ballet studio,” I said, suddenly recognizing the familiar shapes.

They both looked up at me, surprised.

“Do you know this room?” Jasper’s voice sounding calm, but there was an undercurrent to it. Alice leaned closer to the paper, her hand flying across the page now. An emergency exit took shape against the back wall just where I knew it would be; the stereo and TV filled in the right corner foreground.

“It looks like a place where my mom used to teach dance lessons—I took a few lessons there too, but I wasn’t any good. It was shaped just the same.” I touched the page where the square section jutted out, narrowing the back part of the room. “That’s where the bathrooms were—the doors were through the other dance floor. But the stereo was here”—I pointed to the left corner—“it was older,
and there wasn’t a TV. There was a window in the waiting room—you could see the room from this perspective if you looked through it.”

Alice and Jasper were staring at me.

“Are you sure it’s the same room?” Jasper asked with the same unnatural calm.

“No, not at all. I mean, most dance studios would look the same—the mirrors, the bar.” I moved around the couch to stand at the table, I leaned over and traced my finger along the ballet bar set against the mirrors. “It’s just the shape that looked familiar.”

“Would you have any reason to go there now?” Alice asked.

“No. I haven’t been back since my mom quit—it’s probably been ten years.”

“So there’s no way it could be connected with you?” Alice asked intently.

I shook my head. “I don’t even think the same person owns it. I’m sure it’s just another dance studio, somewhere else.”

“Where was the studio you and your mother went to?” Jasper asked, his voice much more casual than Alice’s.

“Just around the corner from our house… I could meet her there when I walked home from school…” My voice trailed off as I watched the look they exchanged.

“Here in Phoenix, then?” He asked, still casual.


We all stared in silence at the drawing.

“Alice, is that phone safe?” I asked.

“The number just traces back to Washington,” she told me.

“Then I can use it to call my mom.”

“She’s in Florida, right? She should be safe there.”

“She is—but she’s coming home soon, and she can’t come back to that house while…” A tremor ran through my voice. I was thinking about Victor searching Charlie’s house, the school in Forks where my records were.

“What’s her number?” Alice asked. She had the phone in her hand.

“They don’t have a permanent number except at the house. She’s supposed to check her messages there regularly.”

“Jasper?” Alice asked.

He thought about it. “I don’t think it could hurt—don’t say where you are, obviously.”

I nodded, reaching for the phone. I dialed the familiar number, then waited through four rings until my mother’s breezy voice came on, telling me to leave a message.
“Mom,” I said after the beep, “it’s me. Listen, I need you to do something. It’s important. As soon as you get this message, call me at this number.” Alice pointed to the number already written on the bottom of her picture. I read it carefully, twice. “Please don’t go anywhere until you talk to me. Don’t worry, I’m okay, but I have to talk to you right away, no matter how late you get this call, all right? I love you, Mom. Bye.” I closed my eyes and prayed that no unforeseen change of plans would bring her home before she got my message.

Then we were back to waiting.

I thought about calling Charlie, but I wasn’t sure what I could say. I watched the news, concentrating now, watching for stories about Florida, or about spring training—strikes or hurricanes or floods—anything that might send them home early.

I seemed like immortality granted endless patience, too. Neither Jasper nor Alice seemed to feel the need to do anything at all. For a while, Alice sketched the vague outline of the dark room from her vision, as much as she could see in the light from the TV. But when she was done, she simply sat, looking at the blank walls. Jasper, too, seemed to have no urge to pace, or to peek through the curtains, or run screaming out the door, the way I did.

I fell asleep on the couch, waiting for the phone to ring. The touch of Alice’s cold hands woke me briefly as she carried me to the bed, but I was unconscious again before my head hit the pillow.
I could feel it was too early again when I woke, and I knew I was getting the schedule of my days and nights slowly reversed. I lay in bed and listened to the quiet voices of Alice and Jasper in the other room. That they were loud enough for me to hear at all was strange. I rolled off the bed and then staggered to the living room.

The clock on the TV said it was just after two in the morning. Alice and Jasper were sitting together on the sofa, Alice sketching again while Jasper looked over her shoulder. They didn’t look up when I entered, too engrossed in Alice’s work.

I crept to Jasper’s side to peek.

“Did she see something more?” I asked him quietly.

“Yes. Something’s brought him back to the room with the VCR, but it’s light now.”

I watched as Alice drew a square room with dark beams across its low ceiling. The walls were paneled in wood, a little too dark, out of date. The floor had a dark carpet with a pattern on it. There was a large window against the south wall, and an opening through the west wall led to the living room. One side of that entrance was stone—a large tan stone fireplace that was open to both rooms. The focus of the room from this perspective, the TV and VCR, balanced on a too-small wooden stand, were in the southwest corner of the room. An aged sectional sofa curved around in front of the TV, a round coffee table in front of it.

“The phone goes there,” I whispered, pointing.

They both stared at me.

“That’s my mother’s house.”

Alice was already off the couch, phone in hand, dialing. I stared at the precise rendering of my mother’s family room. Uncharacteristically, Jasper slid closer to me. He lightly touched his hand to my shoulder, and the physical contact seemed to make his calming influence stronger. The panic stayed dull, unfocused.

Alice’s lips were trembling with the speed of her words, the low buzzing impossible to decipher. I couldn’t concentrate.

“Beau,” Alice said. I looked at her numbly.

“Beau, Edward is coming to get you. He and Emmett and Carlisle are going to take you somewhere, to hide you for a while.”

“Edward is coming?”

“Yes, he’s catching the first flight out of Seattle. We’ll meet him at the airport, and you’ll leave with him.”

“But, my mom… he came here for my mom, Alice!” Despite Jasper, I could feel the panic rise in my chest.

“Jasper and I will stay till she’s safe.”
“I can’t win, Alice! You can’t protect everyone I know forever. Don’t you see what he’s doing? He’s not tracking me at all. He’ll find someone, he’ll hurt someone I love… Alice, I can’t—“

“We’ll catch him, Beau,” she assured me.

“And what if you get hurt, Alice? Do you think that’s okay with me? Do you think it’s only my human family he can hurt me with?”

Alice looked meaningfully at Jasper. A deep, heavy fog of lethargy washed over me, and my eyes closed without my permission. My mind struggled against the fog, realizing what was happening. I forced my eyes open and stood up, stepping away from Jasper’s hand.

“I don’t need to sleep,” I snapped.

I walked to my room and slammed the door. Alice didn’t follow me, the way I half-expected her to. Maybe she could see what my response would be. For nearly four hours I alternated between pacing the room, laying on the bed, and staring at the walls. My mind went around in circles, trying to come up with some way out of this nightmare. There was no escape, only one possible end looming darkly in my future. The only question was how many other people would be hurt before I reached it.

The only solace I could find was knowing Alice and Jasper were in the room next to me, caring for me and my safety. Knowing that Edward was coming helped, too. Maybe, if I could see his face, I would be able to figure out a solution. Things had a way of working themselves out when we were together, despite the odds.

When the phone rang, I went back to the front room, a little ashamed by my behavior. I hoped I hadn’t offended either of them. I hoped they realized that I was nothing but grateful for the sacrifices they were making for me.

Alice was talking at high speed into the phone again. I looked around, but Jasper was gone. The clock said it was five-thirty in the morning.

“They’re just boarding their plane,” Alice told me. “They’ll land at nine-forty-five.”

Just a few more hours to get through and he’d be here.

“Where’s Jasper?”

“He went to check out.”

“You two aren’t staying here?”

“No, we’re relocating closer to your mother’s house.”

I felt my stomach begin to knot in response to her words.

But the phone rang again, distracting me. Alice looked at the number, then held it out to me. I took it quickly from her hand.

“Mom?”

“Beau? Beau?” It was my mom’s voice—that familiar tone I’d heard a thousand times in my childhood, anytime I’d gotten too close to the edge of the sidewalk or strayed out of her sight in a crowded place. It was the sound of panic.

“Calm down, Mom,” I said in my most soothing voice, walking slowly away from Alice, back to the
bedroom. I wasn’t sure if I could lie as convincingly with her watching. “Everything is fine, okay? Just give me a minute and I’ll explain everything, I promise.”

I paused, surprised that she hadn’t interrupted me yet.

“Mom?”

“Be very careful not to say anything until I tell you to.” The voice I heard now was as unfamiliar as it was unexpected. It was a man’s tenor voice, a very pleasant, generic voice—the kind of voice that you heard in the background of luxury car commercials. He spoke very quickly.

“Now, I don’t need to hurt your mother, so please do exactly as I say, and she’ll be fine. No doubt your friends are with you right now so don’t say a word.” He paused for a minute while I listened in mute horror. “That’s very good,” he congratulated. “Now repeat after me, and do try to sound natural. Please say, ‘No, Mom, stay where you are.’”

“No, Mom, stay where you are.” My voice was barely more than a whisper.

“I can see this is going to be difficult.” The voice was amused, still light and friendly. “Why don’t you walk into another room now so your face doesn’t ruin everything? There’s no reason for your mother to suffer. As you’re walking say, ‘Mom, please listen to me.’ Say it now.”

“Mom, please listen to me,” I pleaded. I walked slowly through the bedroom door, feeling Alice’s worried gaze on my back. I shut the door behind me, trying to think clearly through the terror that immobilized my brain.

“There now, are you alone? Just answer yes or no.”

“Yes.”

“But they can still hear you, I’m sure.”

“Yes.”

“All right, then,” the agreeable voice continued, “say, ‘Mom, trust me.’”

“Mom, trust me.”

“This worked out rather better than I expected. I was prepared to wait, but your mother arrived ahead of schedule. It’s easier this way, isn’t it? Less suspense, less anxiety for you.”

I waited.

“Now I want you to listen very carefully. I’m going to need you to get away from your friends; do you think you can do that? Answer yes or no.”

“No.”

“I’m sorry to hear that. I was hoping you would be a little more creative. Do you think you could get away from them if your mother’s life depended on it. Answer yes or no.”

Somehow, there had to be away. I remembered that we were going to the airport. It would be crowded, confusingly laid out…

“Yes,” I said through my teeth.
“That’s better. I’m sure it won’t be easy, but if I get the slightest hint that you have any company, well, that would be very bad for your mother,” the friendly voice promised, “You must know enough about us by now to realize how quickly I would know if you tried to bring anyone along with you. And how little time I would need to deal with your mother if that was the case. Do you understand? Answer yes or no.”

“Yes.” My voice broke.

“Very good, Beau. Now this is what you have to do. I want you to go to your mother’s house. Next to the phone there will be a number. Call it, and I’ll tell you where to go from there.” I already knew where I would go, and where this would end. But I would follow his instructions exactly. “Can you do that? Answer yes or no.”

“Yes.”

“Before noon, please, Beau. I haven’t got all day,” he said politely.

“Where’s Phil?” I asked tersely.

“Ah, be careful now, Beau. Wait until I ask you to speak, please.”

I waited.

“It’s important you don’t make your friends suspicious when you go back to them. Tell them that your mother called, and that you talked her out of coming home for the time being. Now repeat after me, ‘Thank you, Mom.’ Say it now.”

“Thank you, Mom.” I felt my stomach churning. I struggled to hold back the nausea.

“Say, ‘I love you, Mom, I’ll see you soon.’ Say it now.”

“I love you, Mom, I’ll see you soon,” I choked out.

“Goodbye, Beau. I look forward to seeing you again.” He hung up.

I held the phone to my ear. My joints were frozen with horror—I couldn’t unbend my fingers to drop it.

I knew I had to think, but my head was filled with the sound of my mother’s panic. Seconds ticked by while I fought for control.

Slowly, slowly, my thoughts started to break past that brick wall of pain. To plan. Because I had no choices now but one: to go to the mirrored room and die. I had no guarantees that doing what he wanted would keep my mother alive. I could only hope that James would be satisfied with winning the game, that being Edward would be enough. Despair gripped me; there was no way to bargain, nothing I could offer or withhold that would influence him. But I still had no choice. I had to try.

I pushed the terror back as well as I could. My decision was made. It did no good to waste time agonizing over it. I had to think clearly, because Alice and Jasper were waiting for me, and deceiving them was absolutely essential, and absolutely impossible.

I was suddenly grateful that Jasper was gone. If he had been here to feel my anguish in the last five minutes, how could I have kept them in the dark? I fought back the fear, the horror, tried to stifle it. I couldn’t afford to feel now. I didn’t know when he would be back.
I tried to concentrate on my escape, then immediately realized that I couldn’t plan anything. I had to be undecided. No doubt Alice would see the change soon, if she hadn’t already. I couldn’t let her see how it happened. If it happened. How could I get away? Especially when I couldn’t even think about it.

I wanted to go see what Alice made of all this—if she’d seen any changes yet—but I knew I had to deal with one more thing alone before Jasper got back.

I had to accept that I would never see Charlie again. That I would never get to ask for his forgiveness and never know if he would ever forgive me. I had to accept that this would be the last time I saw my mother, she would be scared and heartbroken, but I had to hope she would survive this. I would never see my friends back in Forks again, all the wonderful people who had been so kind to the sour new kid who didn’t like the rain; Jess, Angela, Lauren, Erica, Mike…

And I would never see Edward again. Not even one last look at his face to take with me to the mirror room. I was going to hurt him, and I couldn’t say goodbye.

I burned in the pain of all this for a moment; all the goodbyes I couldn’t have, the last hugs, the final smiles, I let it break me. Then I put myself back together, piece by piece, to go face Alice.

The only expression I could manage was a blank, dead look, but I felt like that was understandable. I was about to walk into the living room when my eye fell on the little bedside table. Gripped by a sudden idea, I knelt down and opened the top drawer. Underneath the complimentary copy of the Bible, there was a stash of stationary and a pen. I took a sheet of paper and an envelope out of the drawer.

“Edward,” I wrote. My hand was shaking, the letters were hardly legible.

I love you. I am so sorry. He has my mom, and I have to try. I know it may not work. I am so very, very sorry.

Don’t be angry with Alice and Jasper. If I get away from them it will be a miracle. Tell them thank you for me. Alice especially, please.

And please, please don’t come after him. That’s what he wants, I think. I can’t bear it if anyone has to be hurt because of me, especially you. Please this is the only thing I can ask you now. For me.

I love you. Forgive me.

Beau.

I folded the letter carefully, and sealed it in the envelope, eventually he would find it. I only hoped he would understand, and listen to me just this once.

And then I carefully sealed away my heart.
It had taken much less time than I’d thought—all the terror, the despair, the shattering of my heart. The minutes were ticking by more slowly than usual. I couldn’t put off seeing Alice any longer. I was afraid to be in the same room with her, afraid that she would guess what I was thinking… and afraid to hide from her for the same reason. I took a deep breath, put the letter in my pocket, and walked out to the living room to face her.

“Alice,” I began but the sight of her cut my words short.

She was bent over the desk, gripping the edge with two hands. Her face—

At first the panic broke through my mask, and I jumped around the couch to get to her. While I was still in motion, I realized what she must be seeing. It brought me up short a few feet away from her.

“Alice,” I said again.

She didn’t react when I called her name. Her head rocked back slowly from side to side. Her expression brought the panic back again—maybe this wasn’t about me, maybe she was watching my mother.

I took another step forward, reaching out to touch her arm.

“Alice!” Jasper’s voice whipped from the door, and then he was right behind Alice, his hands curling over hers, loosening them from their grip on the table. Across the room, the door swung shut with a low click.

“What is it?” he demanded. “What did you see?”

She turned her empty face away from me, looking blindly into Jasper’s eyes.

“She’s right here.” I replied.

“I’m right here.” I replied.

Her head twisted, her eyes locked on mine, their expression still strangely blank. I realized that she hadn’t been speaking to me—she’d been answering Jasper’s question.

“What was it?” I said—and there was no question in my flat, uncaring voice.

Jasper stared at me. I kept my expression vacant and waited. His eyes were confused as they flickered between Alice’s face and mine, feeling the chaos. I knew what Alice had seen.

I felt a tranquil atmosphere settle around me. I didn’t fight it. I used it to keep my emotions disciplined, under control.

Alice recovered, too. Her face snapped back to its normal expression.

“Nothing, really,” she said, her voice amazingly calm and convincing. “Just the same room as before.”

She finally looked at me, her expression smooth and withdrawn. “Did you want breakfast?”

“I’ll eat at the airport.” I was calm, too. Almost like I was borrowing Jasper’s extra sense, I could feel
Alice’s well-concealed desperation to get me out of the room, so that she could be alone with him. So she could tell him that they were doing something wrong, that they were going to fail.

Alice was still focused on me.

“Is your mother all right?”

I had to catch myself from reacting honestly. I had to lie and keep my emotions in check.

“My mom was worried,” I said in a monotone voice. “She wanted to come home. It’s okay, though. I convinced her to stay in Florida for now.”

“That’s good.”

“Yes,” I agreed robotically.

I turned and walked slowly to the bedroom, feeling their eyes following me the whole way. I shut the door behind me, and then I did what I could. I showered and got dressed methodically. I dug through the duffle bag until I found my sock full of money—I emptied it into my pocket.

I was anxious to get to the airport. When I walked back out to the living room, they were ready.

I sat alone this time in the back of the car. Jasper kept shooting glances at me in the mirror when he thought I wouldn’t notice. He kept me calm, which I appreciated.

Alice leaned against the passenger door, her face pointed at Jasper, but, behind her dark sunglasses, I knew she was watching me in her peripheral vision. How much had she seen? Was she expecting me to try something? Or was she focused on the tracker’s moves?

“Alice?” I asked.

She was wary. “Yes?”

“I wrote a note for my mom,” I said slowly. “Would you give it to her? Leave it at the house, I mean?”

“Of course, Beau.” Her voice was careful—the way you spoke to someone on the verge of becoming hysterical. They could both see me coming apart. I had to control myself better.

We got to the airport quickly. Luck was with me, or maybe it was just good odds. Edward’s plane was landing in terminal four, the largest terminal, where most flights landed—so it wasn’t surprising that this was. But it was the terminal I needed; the biggest, the most confusing. And there was a door on level three that might be the only chance.

Jasper parked in the center of the garage’s fourth floor. I led the way, for once more knowledgeable about my surroundings than they were. We took the elevator down to level three, where the passengers unloaded. Alice and Jasper spent a long time looking at the departing flights board. I could hear them discussing the pros and cons of New York, Atlanta, Chicago. Places I’d never seen. And would never see.

I waited for my opportunity, impatient, unable to stop my toe from tapping. We sat in the long rows of chairs by the metal detectors, Jasper and Alice pretending to people-watch but really watching me. Every time I shifted in my seat they would quickly glance out of the corner of their eyes. I tried to think about my options without making a concrete decision. Should I run? Or would they simply follow? Would they dare to stop me physically in this public place? Or would they simply follow?
I considered what Alice had told me about her visions. She could only see the course someone was on as long as they were on it. She hadn’t seen me in the mirror room with James until I’d made the decision to meet him there but despite their wariness, I could tell Alice didn’t know when I would leave. I hadn’t decided. I had to make a last minute decision she wouldn’t see.

I pulled the unmarked envelope out of my pocket and set it on top of Alice’s black leather bag. She looked at me.

“My letter,” I said. She nodded, tucking it under the top flap. Edward would find it soon enough.

The minutes passed and Edward’s arrival grew closer. I felt my heart ache with longing for his presence. That made it very hard. I found myself trying to think of excuses to stay, to see him first and then make my escape. But I knew that was impossible if I was going to have any chance to get away.

Several times Alice offered to go get breakfast with me. Later, I told her, not yet.

I stared at the arrival board, watching as flight after flight arrived on time. The flight from Seattle crept closer to the top of the board.

And then, when I had only thirty minutes to make my escape, the numbers changed. His plane was ten minutes early. I had no more time.

“I think I’ll eat now,” I said quickly.

Alice stood. “I’ll come with you.”

I couldn’t have her go with me, she would see as soon as I made a decision and she would stop me. She needed to stay here.

“Do you mind if Jasper comes instead?” I asked. “I’m feeling a little…” I didn’t finish the sentence. My eyes were wild enough to convey what I didn’t say.

Jasper stood up. Alice’s eyes were confused, but—I saw to my relief—not suspicious. She must be attributing the change in her vision to some maneuver of the tracker’s rather than a betrayal by me.

Jasper walked silently beside me, his hand on the small of my back, as if he were guiding me. I pretended a lack of interest in the first few airport cafes, my head scanning for what I really wanted. And there it was, around the corner, out of Alice’s sharp sight: The level-three men’s room.

“Do you mind?” I asked Jasper as we passed. “I’ll just be a moment.” I held my breath hoping he would wait outside.

“I’ll be right here,” he said.

As soon as the door shut behind me, I was running. I remembered the time I had gotten lost from this bathroom, because it had two exits.

Outside the far door it was only a short sprint to the elevators, and if Jasper stayed where he said he would, I’d never be in his line of sight. I didn’t look behind me as I ran. This was my only chance, and even if he saw me, I had to keep going. People stared, but I ignored them. Around the corner the elevators were waiting, and I dashed forward, throwing my hand between the closing doors of a full elevator headed down. I squeezed beside the irritated passengers, and checked to make sure the button for level one had been pushed. It was already lit, and the doors closed.
As soon as the door opened I was off again, to the sound of annoyed murmurs behind me. I slowed myself as I passed the security guards by the luggage carousels, only to break into a run again as the exit doors came into view. I had no way of knowing if Jasper was looking for me yet. I would only have seconds if he was following my scent. I jumped out the automatic doors, nearly smacking into the glass when they opened too slowly.

Along the crowded curb there wasn’t a cab in sight.

I had no time. Alice and Jasper were either about to realize I was gone, or they already had. They would find me in a heartbeat.

A shuttle to the Hyatt was just closing its doors a few feet behind me.

“Wait!” I called, running, waving at the driver.

“This is the shuttle to the Hyatt,” the driver said in confusion as he opened the doors.

“Yes,” I huffed, “that’s where I’m going.” I hurried up the steps.

He looked askance at my luggage-less state, but then shrugged, not caring enough to ask.

Most of the seats were empty. I sat as far from the other travelers as possible, and watched out the window as first the sidewalk, and then the airport, drifted away. I couldn’t help imagining Edward, where he would stand at the edge of the road when he found the end of my trail. I couldn’t dwell on those thoughts, I couldn’t be sad yet, I told myself. I still had a long way to go.

My luck held. In front of the Hyatt, a tired-looking couple was getting their last suitcase out of the trunk of a cab. I jumped out of the shuttle and ran to the cab, sliding into the seat behind the driver. The tired couple and the shuttle driver stared at me.

I told the surprised cabbie my mother’s address. “I need to get there as soon as possible.”

“That’s in Scottsdale,” he complained.

I threw four twenties over the seat.

“Will that be enough?”

“Sure, kid, no problem.”

I sat back against the seat, folding my arms across my chest. The familiar city began to rush around me, but I didn’t look out the windows. I exerted myself to maintain control. I was determined not to lose myself at this point, now that my plan was successfully completed. I wouldn’t give in to the terror or the anxiety. I had chosen my course. I just had to follow it.

So, instead of panicking, I closed my eyes and spent the drive with Edward.

I imagined that I had stayed at the airport to meet Edward. I visualized how I would stand on my toes, the sooner to see his face. How quickly, how gracefully he would move through the crowds of people separating us. And then he would run—a little too fast for a human—to close those last few feet between us and he would wrap his marble arms around me and I would be safe.

I wondered we would have gone. North somewhere, so he could be outside in the day. Or maybe somewhere very remote, so we could lay in the sun together again. I imagined him by the shore, his skin sparkling like the sea. It wouldn’t matter how long we had to hide. To be trapped in a hotel
room with him would be okay with me. I would desperately miss my friends and my parents, but being with him would make it bearable.

I could see his face so clearly now… almost hear his voice. And, despite all the horror and hopelessness, I was fleetingly happy. I let my fantasy force out the reality of the situation, like a bright light in the dark

“Hey, what was he number?”

The cabbie’s question pulled me from my fantasy. I hadn’t realized we had gotten close. My anxiety began mounting again.

“Fifty-eight-twenty-one.” My voice sounded strangled. The cabbie looked at me with a confused expression.

“Here we are, then.” He was anxious for me to get out of his car, probably hoping I wouldn’t ask for my change.

“Thank you,” I whispered. There was no need to be afraid, I reminded myself. The house was empty. I had to hurry; my mom was waiting for me, frightened, depending on me.

I ran to the door, reaching up automatically to grab the key under the eave. I unlocked the door. It was dark inside, empty, normal. I ran to the phone, turning on the kitchen light on my way. There, on the whiteboard, was a ten-digit number written in a small, neat hand. My fingers stumbled over the keypad, making mistakes. I had to hang up and start again. I took a deep breath and tried again. I was successful this time. I held the phone to my ear with a shaking hand. It rang only once.

“Hello, Beau,” that easy voice answered. “That was very quick. I’m impressed.”

“Is my mom okay?”

“She’s perfectly fine. Don’t worry, Beau, I have no quarrel with her. Unless you didn’t come alone, of course.” Light, amused.

“I’m alone.” I’d never been more alone in my entire life.

“Very good. Now, do you know the ballet studio just around the corner from your home?”

“Yes. I know how to get there.”

“Well, then, I’ll see you very soon.”

I hung up.

I ran from the room, through the door, out into the baking heat.

There was no time to look back at my mom’s house, and I didn’t want to see it as it was now—empty, a symbol of fear instead of sanctuary. The last person to walk through those familiar rooms was my enemy.

From the corner of my eye, I could almost see my mother standing in the shade of the big eucalyptus tree where I’d played as I child. Or kneeling by the little plot of dirt around the mailbox, the cemetery of all the flowers she’d tried to grow. The memories were better than any reality I would see today. But I raced away from them, toward the corner, leaving everything behind me.

I felt so slow, like I was running though water instead of running on concrete. I tripped several times,
once falling, catching myself with my hands, scraping them on the sidewalk, and then lurching up to plunge forward again. But at last I made it to the corner. Just another street now; I ran, sweat pouring down my face, gasping. The sun was hot on my skin, too bright as it bounced off the white concrete and blinded me. I felt dangerously exposed. More fiercely than I would have dreamed I was capable of, I wished for the green, protective forests of Forks... of home.

When I rounded the last corner, onto Cactus, I could see the studio, looking just as I remembered it. The parking lot in front was empty, the vertical blinds in all the windows drawn. I couldn’t run anymore—I couldn’t breathe; exertion and fear had gotten the best of me—no, more than that; I was fighting a panic attack. I hadn’t had one in years, and this one threatened to be the worst I ever had, but I couldn’t let it stop me now. I thought of my mother to keep my feet moving, one in front of the other.

As I got closer, I could see the sign inside the door. It was handwritten on hot pink paper; it said the studio was closed for spring break. I touched the handle, tugged on it cautiously. It was unlocked. I fought to catch my breath, and opened the door.

The lobby was dark and empty, cool, the air conditioner thrumming. The plastic molded chairs were stacked along the walls, and the carpet smelled like shampoo. The west dance floor was dark, I could see through the open viewing window. The east dance floor, the bigger room, was lit. But the blinds were closed on the window.

Terror seized me so strongly that I was literally trapped by it. I couldn’t make my feet move forward. And then my mother’s voice called.

“Beau? Beau?” That same tone of hysterical panic. I sprinted to the door, to the sound of her voice.

“Beau, you scared me! Don’t you ever do that to me again!” Her voice continued as I ran into the long, high-ceilinged room.

I stared around me, trying to find where her voice was coming from. I heard her laugh, and I whirled to the sound.

There she was, on the TV screen, tousling my hair in relief. It was Thanksgiving, and I was twelve. We’d gone to see my grandmother in California, the last year before she died. We went to the beach one day, and I’d leaned too far over the edge of the pier. She’d seen my feet flailing, trying to reclaim my balance. “Beau? Beau?” she’d called to me in fear.

And then the TV screen was blue.

I turned slowly. He was standing very still by the back exit, so still I hadn’t noticed him at first. In his hand was a remote control. We stared at each other for a long moment, and then he smiled.

He walked toward me, quite close, and then passed me to put the remote down next to the VCR. I turned carefully to watch him.

“Sorry about that, Beau, but isn’t it better that your mother didn’t really have to be involved in all this?” His voice was courteous, kind.

And suddenly it hit me. My mother was safe. She was still in Florida. She’d never gotten my message. She’d never been terrified by the dark red eyes in the abnormally pale face before me. She was safe.

“Yes,” I answered, my voice saturated with relief.
“You don’t sound angry that I tricked you.”

“I’m not.” My sudden high made me brave. What did it matter now? It would soon be over. Charlie and Mom would never be harmed, would never have to fear. I felt almost giddy. Some analytical part of my mind warned me that I was dangerously close to having some sort of anxiety or stress induced breakdown.

“How odd. You really mean it.” His dark eyes assessed me with interest. The irises were nearly black, just a hint of ruby around the edges. Thirsty. “I will give your strange coven this much, you humans can be quite interesting. I guess I can see the draw of observing you. It’s amazing—some of you seem to have no sense of self-preservation at all.”

He was standing a few feet away from me, arms folded, looking at me curiously. There was no menace in his face or stance. He was so very average-looking, nothing remarkable about his face or body at all. Just the white skin, the circled eyes I’d grown too used to. He wore a pale blue, long-sleeved shirt and faded blue jeans.

“I suppose you’re going to tell me that your boyfriend will avenge you?” He asked, hopefully it seemed to me.

“No, I don’t think so. At least, I asked him not to.”

“And what was his reply to that?”

“I don’t know.” It was strangely easy to converse with this genteel hunter. “I left him a letter.”

“How romantic, a last letter. And do you think he will honor it?” His voice was just a little harder now, a hint of sarcasm marring his polite tone.

“I hope so.”

“Hmmmm. Well, our hopes differ then. You see, this was all just a little too easy, too quick. To be quite honest, I’m disappointed. I expected a much greater challenge. And, after all, I only needed a little luck.”

I waited in silence.

“When Victor couldn’t get to your father, I had him find out more about you. There was no sense in running all over the planet chasing you down when I could comfortably wait for you in a place of my choosing. So, after I talked to Victor, I decided to come to Phoenix to pay your mother a visit. I’d heard you say you were going home. At first, I never dreamed you meant it. But then I wondered. Humans can be very predictable; they like to be somewhere familiar, somewhere safe. And wouldn’t it be the perfect ploy, to go to the last place you should be when you’re hiding—the place that you said you’d be.

“But of course I wasn’t sure, it was just a hunch. I usually get a feeling about the prey that I’m hunting, a sixth sense, if you will. I listened to your message when I got to your mother’s house, but of course I couldn’t be sure where you’d called from. It was very useful to have your number, but you could have been in Antarctica for all I knew, and the game wouldn’t work unless you were close by.

“Then your boyfriend got on a plane to Phoenix. Victor was monitoring them for me, naturally; in a game with this many players, I couldn’t be working alone. And so they told me what I’d hoped, that you were here after all. I was prepared; I’d already been through your charming home movies. And then it was simply a matter of the bluff.
“Very easy, you know, not really up to my standards. So, you see, I’m hoping you’re wrong about your boyfriend. Edward, isn’t it?”

I didn’t answer. The bravado was wearing off. I sensed that he was coming to the end of his monologue. It wasn’t meant for me anyway. There was no glory in beating me, a weak human.

“Would you mind, very much, if I left a little letter of my own for your Edward?”

He took a step back and touched a palm-sized digital video camera balanced carefully on top of the stereo. A small red light indicated that it was already running. He adjusted it a few times, widened the frame. I stared at him in horror.

“I’m sorry, but I just don’t think he’ll be able to resist hunting me after he watches this. And I wouldn’t want him to miss anything. It was all for him, of course. You’re simply a human, who unfortunately was in the wrong place, at the wrong time, and indisputably running with the wrong crowd, I might add.”

He stepped toward me, smiling. “Before we begin…”

I felt a curl of nausea in the pit of my stomach as he spoke. This was something I had not anticipated.

“I would just like to rub it in, a little bit. The answer was there all along, and I was so afraid Edward would see that and ruin my fun. It happened once, oh, ages ago. The one and only time my prey escaped me.

“You see, the vampire who was so stupidly fond of this little victim made the choice that your Edward was too weak to make. When the old one knew I was after his little friend, he stole her from the asylum where he worked—I never will understand the obsession some vampires seem to form with you humans—and as soon as he freed her he made her safe. She didn’t even seem to notice the pain, poor little creature. She’d been stuck in that black hole of a cell for so long. A hundred years earlier and she would have been burned at the stake for her visions. In the nineteen-twenties it was the asylum and the shock treatments. When she opened her eyes, strong with her fresh youth, it was like she’d never seen the sun before. The old vampire made her a strong new vampire, and there was no reason for me to touch her then.” He sighed. “I destroyed the old one in vengeance.”

“Alice,” I breathed, astonished.

“Yes, your little friend. I was surprised to see her in the clearing. So I guess her coven ought to be able to derive some comfort from this experience. I get you, but they get her. The one victim who escaped me, quite an honor, actually.

“And she did smell so delicious. I still regret that I never got to taste… She smelled even better than you do. Sorry—I don’t mean to be offensive. You have a very nice smell. Floral, somehow…”

He took another step toward me, till he was just inches away. He ran a hand through my hair, then gently pulled my head to the side. He ran his nose along the length of my exposed neck and jaw, inhaling softly. I wanted so badly to run, but I was frozen. I couldn’t even flinch away.

“No,” He murmured to himself, inches from my ear. “I don’t understand.” He sighed, and took a step back from me. “Well, I suppose we should get on with it. And then I can call your friends and tell them where to find you, and my little message.”

I was definitely sick now. There was pain coming, I could see it in his eyes. It wouldn’t be enough for him to win, to feed and go. There would be no quick end like I’d been counting on. My knees began to shake, and I was afraid I was going to fall.
He stepped back, and began to circle, casually, as if he were trying to get a better view of a statue in a museum. His face was still open and friendly as he decided where to start.

Then he slumped forward, into a crouch I recognized, and his pleasant smile slowly widened, grew, till it wasn’t a smile at all but a contortion of teeth, exposed and glistening.

I couldn’t help myself—I tried to run. As useless as I knew it would be, as weak as my knees already were, I wasn’t going to just go down without a fight. Not after everything I had been through. I bolted for the emergency door.

He was in front of me in a flash. I didn’t see if he used his hand or his foot, it was too fast. A crushing blow struck my chest—I felt myself flying backward, first I felt the gold bar buckle against my back, and then heard the crunch as my head bashed into the mirrors. The glass cracked, some of the pieces shattering and splintering on the floor beside me.

I was too stunned to feel the pain. I couldn’t breathe yet.

He walked toward me slowly.

“That’s a very nice effect,” he said, examining the mess of glass, his voice friendly again. “I thought this room would be very visually dynamic for my little film. That’s why I picked this place to meet you. It’s perfect, isn’t it?”

I ignored him, scrambling on my hands and knees, crawling toward the other door.

He was over me at once, his foot stepping down hard on my leg. I heard the sickening snap before I felt it. But then I did feel it, and I couldn’t hold back my scream of agony. I twisted up to reach for my leg, and he was standing over me, smiling.

“Would you like to rethink your last request?” he asked pleasantly. His toe nudged my broken leg and I heard a harrowing scream. With a shock, I realized it was mine.

“Wouldn’t you rather have Edward try to find me?” he prompted.

“No!” I croaked. “No, Edward, don’t—“ and then something smashed into my face, throwing me back into the broken mirrors.

I felt a fresh pain in my thigh and a sharp rip across my scalp. I lifted my hands to the back of my head and felt the warm wetness begin to spread through my hair with alarming speed, dripping onto my shoulder. My eyes refocused and I looked down at my leg to see a large shard of mirror glass had cut through my jeans and lodged itself into my thigh. With trembling hands I pulled the glass out and the blood began pouring from the open wound. I could feel it soaking the leg of my jeans, barely see it pooling on the wood below. The smell of it twisted my stomach.

Through the nausea and dizziness I saw something that gave me a sudden, final shred of hope. His eyes, merely intent before, now burned with an uncontrollable need. The blood—spreading crimson across my white shirt, my jeans, and pooling rapidly on the floor—was driving him mad with thirst.

No matter his original intentions, he couldn’t draw this out much longer.

Let it be quick now, was all I could hope as the flow of blood from my body sucked my consciousness away with it. My eyes were closing.

I heard, as if from underwater, the final growl of the hunter. I could see, through the long tunnels my eyes had become, his dark shape coming toward me. With my last effort, my hand instinctively raised to protect my face. My eyes closed, and I drifted.
Decision

For a moment, I felt myself sink into the dark waters.

I didn’t feel anything anymore. The pain was gone, my fear was gone. I was sinking deeper and deeper. It was euphoric, it was so easy.

But then, something grabbed me sharply, violently, by the hand and pulled me out of the water. My hand burned from the pain. The closer I got to the surface, the more pain I felt throughout my body.

As I began to leave those dark waters I could hear a sound—a snarl. It wasn’t the hunter; this was a deeper, wilder roar that rang with fury.

The pain in my hand was growing steadily worse, but I couldn’t will myself to open my eyes. I couldn’t handle the pain—my hand, my leg, my head—it was too much. I would let go, I would let myself die.

And then I heard him.

It was the sound I had been needing, craving, for days now. His voice.

“Oh no, Beau, no!” His sweet voice cried in horror.

Behind his voice was another sound—an awful sound of growling and hissing following by a shocking breaking sound, like stone being smashed, then a horrible, guttural scream which cut off suddenly…

I tried to concentrate on his voice instead.

“Beau, please! Beau, listen to me, please, please, Beau, please!” He begged.

Yes, I wanted to say. Anything. But I couldn’t find my lips.

“Carlisle!” My angel called, agony in his voice. “Beau, Beau, no, oh please, no, no!” And he was sobbing tearless, broken sobs.

He shouldn’t cry for me, it was okay. I would die now, and I would miss him but he must not cry. He did everything he could.

There was a point of pressure against my head. It hurt. Then, as that pain broke through the darkness to me, other pains came, stronger pains. I cried out, gasping.

“Beau!” the angel cried.

“He’s lost a lot of blood,” a calm voice informed me. “Mostly from his leg—watch out, it’s broken.”

A howl of rage strangled on the angel’s lips.

I felt a sharp stab in my side. There was too much pain, I thought death was supposed to be painless?

“Some ribs, too, I think,” the methodical voice continued.

But the sharp pains were fading. There was a new pain, a scalding pain in my hand that was overshadowing everything else.
Someone was burning me.

“Edward.” I tried to tell him, but my voice was so heavy and slow. I couldn’t understand myself.

“Beau, you’re going to be fine. Can you hear me, Beau? I love you.”

“Edward,” I tried again. My voice was a little clearer.

“Yes, I’m here.”

“It hurts,” I whimpered.

“I know, Beau, I know… Oh god”—and then, away from me, anguished—“can’t you do anything?”

“My bag, please… Hold your breath, Alice, it will help,” Carlisle promised.

“Alice?” I groaned.

“She’s here, she knew where to find you.”

“I’m… sorry, Alice.”

“Shh… It’s okay, Beau, it’s okay.” Alice’s voice comforted me softly.

“My hand hurts,” I choked the words out.

“I know, Beau. Carlisle will give you something, it will stop.” Edward’s voice replied.

“No, no,” I felt like I had been far away from everything and suddenly I was flying back toward my body. “My hand is burning!” I screamed, I wasn’t far away anymore. I was here and I was in agonizing pain. My eyes fluttered open, but I couldn’t see his face. Something dark and warm was clouding my eyes. My body began convulsing against my will.

Edward’s voice was frightened. “Beau?”

“It’s my hand! It’s burning!” I screamed as the pain began to climb up my arm.

“Carlisle! His hand!”

“He bit him.” Carlisle’s voice was no longer calm, it was appalled.

I heard Edward catch his breath in horror.

“Edward, you have to do it.” It was Alice’s voice again, close by my head. Cool fingers brushed away the wetness in my eyes.

“No!” he bellowed.

“Alice,” I moaned.

“There may be a chance,” Carlisle said.

“What?” Edward begged.

“See if you can suck the venom back out. The wound is fairly clean.” As Carlisle spoke, I could feel more pressure on my head, something poking and pulling at my scalp. The pain of it was lost in the pain of the fire.
“Will that work?” Edward’s voice was strained.

“I don’t know,” Carlisle said. “But we have to hurry.”

“Carlisle, I…” Edward hesitated. “I don’t know if I can do that.” There was agony in his voice again.

“It’s your decision, Edward, either way. I can’t help you. I have to get this bleeding stopped if you’re going to be taking blood from his hand.”

I writhed in the grip of the fiery torture, the movement making the pain in my leg flare sickeningly.

“Edward!” I screamed. I realized my eyes were closed again. I opened them desperate to find his face. And I found him. Finally, I could see his face, staring at me, twisted into a mask of indecision and pain.

“Alice, get me something to brace his leg!” Carlisle was bent over me, working on my leg. “Edward, you must do it now, or it will be too late.”

“Alice,” Edward choked out, “will it work?”

“Edward, I… I can only see once a decision has been made. You know that.” Her voice was soft, sad. “Right now, the path he’s on leads to him changing.”

Edward choked out another tearless sob.

“You have to make the decision, Edward.” Alice said.

Edward’s face was drawn. I watched his eyes as the doubt was suddenly replaced with a blazing determination. His jaw tightened. I felt his cool, strong fingers on my burning hand, locking it in place. Then his head bent over it, and his cold lips pressed against my skin.

At first the pain was worse. I screamed and thrashed against the cool hands that held me back. I heard Alice’s voice, trying to calm me. Something heavy held my leg to the floor, and Carlisle had me locked in the vise of his stone arms.

Then, slowly, my writhing calmed as my hand grew more and more numb. The fire was dulling, focusing into an ever-smaller point.

I felt my consciousness slipping as the pain subsided. I was afraid to fall back into the darkness, but I didn’t think I could fight it anymore.

“Edward,” I tried to say, but I couldn’t hear my voice. They could hear me.

“He’s right here, Beau.”

“Stay, Edward, stay with me…”

“I will.” His voice was strained, but somehow triumphant

I sighed contentedly. The fire was gone, the other pains dulled. I felt myself slipping away. I was done fighting to stay awake—to stay alive.

“Is it all out?” Carlisle asked from somewhere far away.

“His blood tastes clean,” Edward said quietly. “I can taste the morphine.”
“Beau?” Carlisle called to me.

I tried to answer. “Mmmmm?”

“Is the fire gone?”


“I love you,” he answered.

“I know,” I breathed, so tired.

I heard my favorite sound in the world: Edward’s quiet laugh, weak with relief. And I knew I was ready to go.

“Beau?” Carlisle called again, this time there was worry in his voice.

“Carlisle!” Alice’s voice was panicked. “I can’t see him anymore!”

“Beau? Beau, wake up!” Edward’s voice was panicking, close to me now.

“Alice, what did you see?” Carlisle’s voice was miles away now.

“His future… It’s dark.” Alice’s faraway voice said sadly.

“No!” I could barely hear Edward howl in agony, “No, not now. Not now, Beau, please!” I thought I felt him close to me, but I couldn’t be sure. I could barely feel anything. “Alice, why? Why can’t you see?”

“A decision,” she replied softly, “a decision has to be made.”

I felt myself slip away. I wondered what Alice meant. Edward made the decision to save me, was that what she meant?

No, I knew what she meant. The decision was mine. The decision to live, or to give up and die.

I weighed out my options, at this point it wasn’t so much that I had nothing to live for—I had everything to live for. I had Edward, I had the Cullens, I had friends at school, and I had my mom and dad. I wanted to see them all again. I wanted to kiss Edward again, and not be careful this time. I wanted to laugh with Emmett or stay up all night talking to Alice. I wanted to go shopping with Jess and Angela and hear Jess go on and on about Mike and giggle with Angela about it. I wanted to ask for Charlie’s forgiveness, to see him coming home from a fishing trip with that triumphant look on his face. I wanted to hug my mom, my brave mother who despite everything was actually one of the strongest people I knew.

I remembered one time I had come out to the living room late one night to find my mom crying softly at the kitchen table. When I got closer I realized she was crying over pictures of her and Charlie on their wedding day. It would have been their anniversary that day if they had stayed together.

“Mom?” I had called tentatively.

“Oh, Beau!” She shuffled the pictures into a pile, and sniffled softly. “I’m sorry, sweetie, did I wake you up?”

“No, I was thirsty.”
“I’ll get you some water.” She had gotten up and grabbed a glass from the cabinet.

“Mom, are you okay?” I had asked her.

“I’m fine, sweetie.” She had smiled, tears still in her eyes.

“Then why are you crying?”

She looked at me for a moment, then came over and hugged me. “Well, Beau, sometimes you just have to cry.” She shrugged, “gets out all the sad feelings.”

“Do you miss Dad?” I had asked softly.

“I do,” she answered, honestly, “I miss Charlie very much.”

“Why didn’t you stay together then?”

“Well, I think, despite how much we loved each other. We weren’t right for each other. We weren’t meant to be together forever. We were given one, brief moment. We made the best of it, we made the most of it,” She had squeezed me tighter then, “We had you… and that was the very best of it.” She had smiled at me. “But our moment was over, and we needed to grow up apart from each other.”

“Oh,” I said, “Couldn’t you guys try to make it work?”

“One day, Beau,” she looked at me, very seriously in the eyes, “You’ll find someone who you know you’re meant to spend your forever with. It won’t be just a brief moment. It will be forever. When you find that you fight for it, no matter what. Charlie and I weren’t supposed to fight for a forever.” She sighed, “At least, I don’t think so.”

“You don’t think so?” I had asked.

“Giving up is easy, Beau. Trying is harder.”

And here I was, back in the present, with a choice; a decision to make. I had no future—my course wasn’t set. I thought about what my mom had said. Did I get a brief moment with Edward? Or was he the one I spent my forever with? Did I really have a choice? I did. It was time to set my course, to make a decision.

Dying is easy—peaceful. Living is harder.
My eyes opened to a bright, white light. I was in an unfamiliar room, a white room. The wall beside me was covered in long vertical blinds; over my head, the glaring white lights blinded me. I was propped up on a hard, uneven bed—a bed with rails. The pillows were flat and lumpy. There was an annoying beeping sound somewhere close by. I hoped that meant I was still alive. I hadn’t chosen to try and live just to end up in some uncomfortable white-washed death.

My hands were all twisted up with clear tubes, and something was taped across my face, under my nose. I lifted my hand to rip it off.

“No, you don’t.” And cool fingers caught my hand.

“Edward?” I turned my head slightly, and his exquisite face was just inches from mine, his chin resting on the edge of my pillow. A look of profound relief on his handsome face. I smiled at him.

“Hi.”

“Hi,” He smiled sadly.

“What happened?” I couldn’t remember clearly, and my mind wasn’t cooperating with me at the moment.

“I was almost too late. I could have been too late,” he whispered, his voice tormented.

“I’m sorry, Edward. I thought he had my mom.”

“He tricked us all.”

“I need to call Charlie and my mom,” I realized through the haze.

“Alice called them. Your mother is here—well, here in the hospital. She’s getting something to eat right now.”

“She’s here?” I tried to sit up, but the spinning in my head accelerated, and his hand pushed me gently down onto the pillows.

“She’ll be back soon,” he promised. “And you need to stay still.”

“But what did you tell her?” I panicked. I had no interest in being soothed. My mom was here and I was recovering from a vampire attack. “Why did you tell her I’m here?”

“You fell down two flights of stairs and through a window.” He paused. “You have to admit, it could happen.”

I sighed, and it hurt. I stared down at my body under the sheet, the huge lump that was my leg.

“How bad am I?” I asked.

“You have a broken leg, four broken ribs, some cracks in your skull, bruises covering every inch of your skin, and you’ve lost a lot of blood. They gave you a few transfusions. I didn’t like it—it made you smell all wrong for a while.”

“That must have been a nice change for you.”
“No, I like how you smell.”

“How did you do it?” I asked quietly. He knew what I meant at once.

“I’m not sure.” He looked away from my wondering eyes, lifting my gauze-wrapped hand from the bed and holding it gently in his, careful not to disrupt the wire connecting me to one of the monitors. I waited patiently for the rest.

He sighed without returning my gaze. “It was impossible to stop,” he whispered. “Impossible. But I did.” He looked up finally, with half a smile. “I must love you.”

“Don’t I taste as good as I smell?” I smiled in response. That hurt my face. “Even better—better than I’d imagined.”

“Damn right, I do.” He laughed, loudly. It was so nice to hear him laugh again.

“Even then,” he said after a moment, “I thought I had still lost you. Despite everything.”

“Can’t get rid of me that easy,” I tried to shrug, but it hurt too much.

“Alice couldn’t see you.” His voice was a whisper now, “I thought you were gone forever.”

“I hadn’t made the decision yet.” I said simply. He looked at me confused, “Giving up is easy, trying is harder.” I repeated my mother’s words from all those years ago. “I had too much to try for.”

“I’m glad.” His face was still sad, but there was happiness there.

Some very unpleasant memories were beginning to come back to me. I shuddered, and then winced. He was instantly anxious. “Beau, what’s wrong?”

“What happened to James?”

“After I pulled him off you, Emmett and Jasper took care of him.” There was a fierce note of regret in his voice. This confused me. “I didn’t see Emmett and Jasper there.”

“They had to leave the room… there was a lot of blood. Emmett was devastated. He wanted to stay and help. I thought he might cry.” Edward’s voice was slightly amused.

“But you stayed.”

“Yes, I stayed.”

“And Alice, and Carlisle…,” I said in wonder

“They love you, too, you know.”

A flash of painful images from the last time I’d seen Alice reminded me of something. “James, he knew Alice! Did she see the tape?” I asked anxiously.

“Yes.” A new sound darkened his voice, a tone of sheer hatred.

“She was always in the dark, that’s why she didn’t remember.”
“I know. She understands now.” His voice was even, but his face was black with fury.

I tried to reach his face with my free hand, but something stopped me. I glanced down to see the IV pulling at my hand.

“Ugh.” I winced.

“What is it?” he asked anxiously—distracted, but not enough. The bleakness did not entirely leave his eyes.

“Needles,” I explained, looking away from the one in my hand. I concentrated on a warped ceiling tile and tried to breathe deeply despite the ache in my ribs.

“Afraid of a needle,” he muttered to himself under his breath. “Oh, a sadistic vampire, intent on torturing him to death, sure, no problem, he runs off to meet him. An IV, on the other hand…”

I rolled my eyes. I was pleased to discover that this reaction, at least, was pain-free. I decided to change the subject.

“Why are you here?” I asked.

He stared at me, first in confusion and then hurt touching his eyes. His brows pulled together as he frowned. “Do you want me to leave?”

“No!” I protested, “No, of course not, you beautiful idiot. No, I meant, why does my mother think you’re here? I need to have my story straight before she gets back.”

“Oh,” he said, and his forehead smoothed back into marble. “I came to Phoenix to talk to you, to convince you to come back to Forks.” His wide eyes were so earnest and sincere, I almost believed him myself. “You agreed to see me, and you drove out to the hotel where I was staying with Carlisle and Alice—of course I was here with parental supervision,” he inserted virtuously, “but you tripped on the stairs on the way to my room and… well, you know the rest. You don’t need to remember any details, though; you have a good excuse to be a little muddled about the finer points.” He sighed, “Did you just call me an idiot?”

“Give me a break; I’m broken in like a hundred places and on pain medication.” I snickered, “Besides, I called you a beautiful idiot.”

He smirked in response.

“There are a few flaws with your story, though.” I continued, “Like no broken windows.”

“Not really,” he said. “Alice had a little bit too much fun fabricating evidence. It’s all been taken care of very convincingly—you could probably sue the hotel if you wanted to. You have nothing to worry about,” he promised, stroking my cheek with the lightest of touches. “You’re only job now is to heal.”

“I think I can manage that,” I sighed.

He leaned in slowly and pressed his lips ever so gently to mine, I sighed happily, then winced from the pain. He pulled back abruptly, his expression anxious.

“It seems I’m going to have to be more careful with you than usual.” He frowned.
“I was not finished kissing you,” I complained. “Don’t make me come over there. Get back here.”

“Yes, sir.” He grinned, and bent to press his lips lightly to mine.

But then he pulled away suddenly.

“I think I hear your mother,” he said, grinning again.

“Oh god, don’t leave me now.” I felt the panic of having to face my mother, I would have a hard enough time not being hysterical after being so worried about her, but seeing me like this couldn’t be easy for her either.

He read the terror in my eyes for a short second. “I won’t,” he promised solemnly, and then he smiled. “I’ll take a nap.”

He moved from the hard plastic chair by my side to the turquoise faux leather recliner at the foot of my bed, leaning it all the way back, and closing his eyes. He was perfectly still.

“Don’t forget to breathe,” I whispered sarcastically. He took a deep breath, his eyes still closed.

I could hear my mother now. She was talking to someone, maybe a nurse, and she sounded tired and upset. I wanted to jump out of the bed and run to her, to calm her, promise her that everything was fine. But I wasn’t in any sort of shape for that, so I waited impatiently.

The door opened a crack, and she peeked through.

“Mom!” I whispered, my voice full of love and relief.

She flew to my side “Oh, Beau, I’m so happy you’re awake, hon.”

She briefly glanced at Edward’s still form on the recliner, “He never leaves, does he?” She whispered to me.

“Mom, I’m so glad to see you!”

She hugged me gently, and I felt warm tears falling on my cheeks.

“Beau, I was so upset.”

“I’m sorry, Mom. But everything’s fine now, it’s okay,” I comforted her.

“I’m just glad to finally see your eyes open.” She sat on the edge of my bed.

I suddenly realized I didn’t have any idea when it was. “How long have I been out?”

“It’s Friday, hon, you’ve been out for a while.”

“Friday?” I was shocked. I tried to remember what day it had been when… but I didn’t want to think about that.

“They had to keep you sedated for a while, honey—you’ve got a lot of injuries.”

“I know. I feel them.” I said, bleakly.

“You’re lucky Dr. Cullen was there. He’s such a nice man… very young, though. And he looks more like a model than a doctor…”
“You met Carlisle?”

“And Edward’s sister Alice. She’s a lovely girl.”

“She is,” I agreed wholeheartedly.

She glanced over her shoulder at Edward, lying with his eyes closed in the chair. “You didn’t tell me you had such good friends in Forks.”

I tried to shift my position in the bed, it hurt terribly, and I couldn’t help but moan in pain.

“What hurts?” she demanded anxiously, turning back to me. Edward’s eyes flashed to my face.

“It’s fine,” I assured them. “I just have to remember to not move.” He lapsed back into his phony slumber.

I took advantage of my mother’s momentary distraction to keep the subject from returning to my less-than-candid behavior. “Where’s Phil?” I asked quickly.

“Florida—Oh, Beau! You’ll never guess! Just when we were about to leave, the best news!”

“Phil got signed?” I guessed.

“Yes! How did you guess! The Suns, can you believe it?”

“That’s great, Mom,” I smiled.

“And you’ll like Jacksonville so much,” she gushed while I stared at her vacantly. “I was a little bit worried when Phil started talking about Akron, what with the snow and everything, because you know how I hate the cold, but now Jacksonville! It’s always sunny, and the humidity really isn’t *that* bad. We found the cutest house, yellow, with white trim, and a porch just like in an old movie, and this huge oak tree, it’s just a few minutes from the ocean, and you’ll have your own bathroom—”

“Wait, Mom!” I interrupted. Edward still had his eyes closed, but he looked too tense to pass as asleep. “What are you talking about? I’m not going to Florida. I love in Forks.”

“But you don’t have to anymore, silly,” she laughed. “Phill will be able to be around so much more now… we’ve talked about it a lot, and what I’m going to do is trade off on the away games, half the time with you, half the time with him.”

“Mom.” I hesitated, wondering how to best be diplomatic about this. “I *want* to live in Forks. I realized it when I was back here in Phoenix. I missed it. I’m already settled in at school, and I have a couple of friends”—she glanced toward Edward again when I reminded her of friends, so I tried another direction—“and Charlie needs me. He’s just all alone up there, and he can’t cook *at all.*”

“You want to stay in Forks?” she asked, bewildered. The idea was inconceivable to her. And then her eyes flickered back toward Edward. “Why?”

“I told you—school, Charlie—ouch!” I’d shrugged. Not a good idea.

Her hands fluttered helplessly over me, trying to find a safe place to lay. She made do with my forehead; it was unbandaged.

“Beau, honey, you hate Forks,” she reminded me.

“It’s not so bad.”
She frowned, “You don’t have to keep trying to like it.”

“Giving up is easy, trying is harder.” I said again.

“But trying makes all the difference.” She finished, smiling. I had forgotten the last part.

She was beginning to understand now, she glanced between Edward and Me. “Is it this boy?” she whispered.

I opened my mouth to lie, but I didn’t want to lie to her. I wanted to tell her the truth.

“He’s part of it,” I admitted. “So, have you had a chance to talk to Edward?”

“Yes.” She hesitated, looking at his perfectly still form. “And I want to talk to you about that.”

“What about?”

“I think that boy is in love with you,” she accused, keeping her voice low.

“I think so, too,” I confided.

“And how do you feel about him?” She only poorly concealed the raging curiosity in her voice.

I sighed, and smiled. “I’m pretty crazy about him, I guess.”

“Well, he seems very nice, and, my goodness, he’s incredibly good-looking, but you’re so young Beau…” her voice was unsure. I could hear the worry in her voice, the thoughts of herself, so young, falling in love, and the pain it had caused her. She only had my best interests at heart. My strong, wonderful mother. Who had to break her own heart to say goodbye to Charlie but still managed to go on, to choose life. To try.

“Don’t worry, Mom. It’s just a crush.” I soothed her.

“Oh, I’m sure,” she smiled at me, knowing better.

Then she sighed and glanced guiltily over her shoulder at the big round clock at the wall.

“Do you need to go?”

She bit her lip. “Phil’s supposed to call in a little while… He’s been so worried about you…”

“No problem, Mom. I won’t be alone.”

“I’ll be back soon. I’ve been sleeping here.” She said.

“Oh, Mom, you don’t have to do that! You can sleep at home—I’ll never notice.” The swirl of painkillers in my brain was making it hard to concentrate even now, though, apparently, I’d been sleeping for days.

“I was too nervous,” she admitted sheepishly. “There’s been some crime in the neighborhood, and I don’t like being there alone.”

“Crime?” I asked in alarm.

“Someone broke into that dance studio around the corner from the house and burned it to the ground—there’s nothing left at all! And they left a stolen car right out front. Do you remember when I used
to teach dance there, honey?”

“I remember.” I shivered, and winced.

“I can stay, baby, if you need me.”

“No, Mom, I’ll be fine. Edward will be with me.”

She looked like that might be why she wanted to stay. “I’ll be back tonight.” It sounded as much like a warning as it sounded like a promise, and she glanced at Edward again as she said it.

“I love you, Mom.”

“I love you, too, Beau. Please be careful when you walk, honey, I don’t want to lose you.”

Edward’s eyes stayed closed, but a wide grin flash across his face.

A nurse came bustling in then to check all my tubes and wires. My mother kissed my forehead, patted my gauze-wrapped hand, and left.

The nurse was my vitals and the monitors. “How are you feeling, dear?”

“I’m fine,” I assured her.

“I’ll tell your RN that you’re awake. She’ll be in to see you in a minute.”

As soon as she closed the door, Edward was at my side.

“You stole a car?” I raised my eyebrows.

He smiled, unrepentant. “It was a good car, very fast.”

“Edward!” I scolded. He just smiled. I sighed, “how was your nap?”

“Interesting.” His eyes narrowed.

“What?”

He looked down while he answered. “I’m surprised. I thought Florida… and your mother… well, I thought that’s what you would want. To go someplace where I can’t hurt you anymore.”

“Are you tired of having to save me all the time?” I asked.

He looked surprised, “No, Beau, of course not. I would do anything to keep you safe. I would save you a hundred times over.”

“Then why would I go to Florida?”

“Because then…” His face was dark, his voice pained, “then I couldn’t hurt you anymore. My very presence is a danger to you, Beau, every second I’m around you. I’m not worthy of your love, I’ll get you killed and—”

“Shhh,” I soothed him. “There’s a difference between the danger you put me in and the danger around me. Don’t you see that?”

“No. It’s all my fault.”
“You really are a beautiful idiot.” I sighed, “Do you want me to go away?”

“No!” He sounded almost panicked, “No, I don’t want to be without you Beau, of course not. But,”
he dropped his eyes, “I’m the one putting you in danger… I’m the reason you’re here.”

“Yes, you are the reason.” I frowned. “The reason I’m here—alive.”

“ Barely.” His voice was just a whisper. “Covered in gauze and plaster and hardly able to move.”

“But I’m still here.” I insisted.

“I thought I lost you, Beau.” His voice was so low, I could barely hear him. “Seeing you there on the
floor… crumpled and broken.” His voice was choked. “Thinking I was too late, hearing you scream
in pain—all those unbearable memories that I’ll carry with me for the rest of eternity. And the worst
feeling… fearing that I couldn’t stop. I thought after all that, I would be the one to kill you myself.”

“But you didn’t.”

“I could have. So easily.”

“But, again, you didn’t.” I sighed. “I’m here, Edward. I chose you. Maybe that makes me an idiot,
but that’s what I wanted. You are what I want.”

“Even if I’m so terrible for you? Even if I put you in—“

“If you say you put me in danger one more time I’m doing to hit you in the head with my plaster
cast.”

He smiled, a little. I smiled back.

“I don’t seem to be strong enough to stay away from you.” His eyes were full of emotion.

“For once, I’m glad you’re not strong enough for something.” I teased.

Something buzzed softly in Edward’s pocket, the phone was at his ear in a flash.

“Hello?” His face was momentarily confused, then he sighed. “Yes, he’s fine—Yes… Oh fine,
here.” He held the phone to my ear. “For you,” He sighed.

“Hello?” I asked tentatively.

“Hey, big guy!” Emmett’s boisterous voice came from the phone.

“Emmett! Hi!” I chuckled, “How are you?”

“How am I? How are you?” He laughed, “You’re the one that fell through a window.” He teased.

“Well, I’ve had better days.” I sighed.

“Beau, I’m sorry I couldn’t stay.” His voice sounded sad, “It was just…”

“I know, Emmett, thank you for trying.”

“Jasper says hey, too! He’s glad you’re awake!”

“Tell him I’m sorry for ditching him at the airport.” I said.
“He forgives you,” Emmett’s voice was smiling. “Hey, wait, here’s someone else who wants to talk to you.”

I heard him quietly arguing with someone on the other end, “Roy! Come on, babe!” I heard him say, then it sounded like someone grabbed the phone from his hand and huffed loudly.

“Hello, Beau.” Royal’s annoyed voice came over the phone. “I’m glad you’re not dead.” His tone contradicted his words, though.

“Thanks…” I said, “Hey, Royal?”

He didn’t say anything.

“Thank you for watching over Charlie. I really appreciate it.”

Royal was silent for a moment, “You’re welcome, Beau.” He said finally.

There was shuffling on the other end, and Emmett’s voice was back. “See? Everyone’s happy now!”

“Thanks, Emmett.” I chuckled.

“Hey, I’ll let you get back to Edward. Get better, big guy!”

“Bye, Emmett.”

Edward took the phone back and put it back in his pocket.

“See? They all love you.” He said, simply.

“I’m glad,” I smiled.

Just then a nurse walked into the room. Edward sat still as stone as she looked me over.

“Time for more pain meds, sweetheart?” she asked kindly, tapping the IV feed.

“No, no,” I mumbled. “I’m fine for now.”

“No need to be brave, dear. It’s better if you rest.”

“Maybe in a bit?” I offered.

“Okay,” she sighed. “Hit the call button when you’re ready.” She turned and left the room without another word.

I felt a thought in the back of my head. Something that had been bothering me. “Edward, why did you stop me from changing?”

“What?” his eyes were wary.

“Why didn’t you let the venom spread? By now I would be just like you.”

Edward’s eyes turned flat black, and I remembered that this was something he’d never intended me to know. Alice must have been preoccupied by the things she’d learned about herself… or she’d been very careful with her thoughts around him—clearly, he’d had no idea that she’d filled me in on the mechanics of vampire conversions. He was surprised, and infuriated. His nostrils flared, his mouth looked as if it was chiseled from stone.
He wasn’t going to answer, that much was clear.

“Mind your temper.” I warned him. He took a deep breath for my benefit. I sighed. “I’m just asking, because since you seem so afraid of hurting me or getting me killed, wouldn’t it have been easier to let me change? Let me become like you? Able to defend myself. Maybe even I would have the chance to save you for a change.”

He folded his arms on the side of my bed and rested his chin on his arms. His expression was smooth, the anger reined in. Evidently he’d decided he wasn’t angry with me. I hoped I’d get a chance to warn Alice before he caught up with her.

“You have saved me,” he said quietly.

My hand found his arm, “Edward…”

“You don’t know what you’re asking.” His voice was soft; he stared intently at the edge of the pillowcase. “I’ve had nearly a century to think about this, and I’m still not sure.”

“Do you wish that Carlisle hadn’t saved you?”

“No, I don’t wish that.” He paused before continuing. “But my life was over. I wasn’t giving anything up.”

“I see,” was all I could say.

“I can’t do it, Beau. I won’t do that to you.”

“I’m not asking you to.” I said softly.

He looked up at me surprised, “What?”

“I’m not asking you to change me, I’m just asking why you didn’t let me change?”

His eyes looked sad, he didn’t answer.

“Alice already saw it, didn’t she?” I guessed. “That’s why the things she says upset you. She knows I’m going to be like you… someday.”

“She’s wrong. She also saw you dead, but that didn’t happen, either.”

“But this is the course I’m on, isn’t it?” I pressed, “The decision has been made. It’s just a matter of following that course.”

He stared at me, his eyes full of sadness and remorse.

“I’m not asking you to change me tomorrow, or even in three days.” I soothed him, “I just need to know where everything stands. I made this decision, and if my vampire boyfriend’s vampire sister can see where that decision leads me then I’d just like to be prepared.”

“Am I worth it?” I could tell from his tone he didn’t believe he was.

“I don’t think I would have put myself through all this if I didn’t think you were.”

“You have a lot of pain medication in your system right now; you’re not in a clear state of mind.” He scowled.
“Mind your temper, and don’t argue. It’s not good for me.” I sniffed lightly.

He smirked. “Yes, sir.”

“Edward?”

“Yes, Beau?”

“Do you truly love me?”

“Of course,” his voice was full of emotion, “more than anything.”

“My mom once told me that sometimes you only share a moment with someone, but sometimes you share forever with them. I think we have a shot at forever.”

“You do?” His eyes were staring deep into mine. “Do you really think I’m worth forever?”

“I really do,” I took as deep a breath as I could manage, “do you think I’m worth forever?”

“You’re worth more than anything in this world.”

“Then do you promise? Not to give up? Promise not to leave?”

He deliberated for a moment. “I promise, Beau.” He leaned in and kissed me on my forehead.

I smiled contentedly.

“How are you feeling?” he asked, eyeing the button for the nurse.

“A little sore, to be honest.”

“Do you want to go back to sleep?” he asked gently.

“No, but maybe I should.”

He reached for the button.

“Yes?” the speaker on the wall squawked.

“I think we’re ready for more pain medication,” He said.

“I’ll send in the nurse.” The voice sounded very bored.

“Ugh,” I sighed. “Why does it have to hurt so much.”

“I’m sorry, Beau.” His face was pained.

“It’s fine, I just don’t want to close my eyes.”

Then he smiled his crooked smile, and took my face between his hands. “I told you I’m not going anywhere. Don’t be afraid. I promise you, as long as it makes you happy, I’ll be here.”

I smiled back, ignoring the ache in my cheeks. “I’m pretty sure that’ll be forever.”

“Oh, you’ll get over it—it’s just a crush.”

“Oh, shut up.”
“That’s the beautiful thing about being human,” he told me. “Things change.”

My eyes narrowed. “Don’t hold your breath.”

He was laughing when the nurse came in, brandishing a syringe.

“Excuse me,” she said brusquely to Edward.

He got up and crossed to the end of the small room, leaning against the wall. He folded his arms and waited.

“Here you go, dear.” The nurse smiled as she injected the medicine into my tube. “You’ll feel better now.”

“Thanks,” I mumbled. It didn’t take long. I could feel the drowsiness trickling through my bloodstream almost immediately.

“That ought to do it,” she muttered as my eyelids drooped.

She must have left the room, because something cold and smooth touched my face.

“Stay.” The word was slurred.

“I will,” he promised. His voice was soft and beautiful, like a lullaby. “Like I said, as long as it makes you happy… as long as it’s what’s best for you.”

I tried to shake my head, but it was too heavy. “’S not the same thing,” I mumbled.

He laughed. “Don’t worry about that now, Beau. You can argue with me when you wake up.”

I think I smiled. “’Kay.”

I could feel his lips at my ear.

“I love you,” he whispered.

“Me, too.”

“I know,” he laughed quietly.

I turned my head slightly… searching. He knew what I was after. His lips touched mine gently.

“Thanks,” I sighed.

“Anytime.”

I was content. I had been through hell and survived. Maybe I paid the price with some broken bones, but I still had everything I wanted. I felt Edward’s hand on mind, and squeezed it as best as I could. I sighed, happily.

And then the night closed over me.
Epilogue: An Occasion

Edward helped me into his car, being very careful of my bulky walking cast. He ignored the put out expression on my face.

When he had me settled, he got in the driver’s seat and headed back out the long, narrow drive.

“So are you ever going to tell me what’s going on?” I asked. I wasn’t overly fond of surprises and, as much as I enjoyed being with Edward, I would rather be in my bed right now.

“I’m shocked that you haven’t figured it out yet.” He threw a mischievous smile in my direction, and my breath caught in my throat.

“I did mention that you looked very nice, didn’t I?” I verified.

“Yes.” He grinned again. I’d never seen him dress in black before, and, with the contrast against his pale skin, his beauty was absolutely surreal. That much I couldn’t deny, even if the fact that he was wearing a tuxedo made me very nervous. Even if the slim cut of it did make him look absolutely amazing.

Not quite as nervous as the deep blue tuxedo I was in. Or the exceedingly expensive shoe. Only one shoe, as my other foot was still securely incased in plaster. But this beautiful, leather shoe wasn’t going to help me as I tried to hobble around. I could barely walk in sneakers.

“I’m not coming over anymore if Alice is going to treat me like her own personal Ken doll when I do,” I griped. I’d spent the better part of the day in Alice’s staggeringly vast bathroom, a helpless victim as she played hairdresser and stylist. Whenever I fidgeted or complained, she reminded me that she didn’t have any memories of being human, and asked me not to ruin her vicarious fun. She had put some loose setting product in my hair and gently styled it back, my hair was getting rather long for me and she considered cutting it for a moment before decided that the medium length curls looked ‘rather adorable,’ in her words. Then she had me put on the most expensive looking tuxedo I had ever seen in my life. It was perfectly tailored to my body and extremely comfortable. I couldn’t help but think I looked good—maybe more appropriate for a men’s fashion magazine than Forks—but still damn good.

I was distracted then by the sound of a phone ringing. Edward pulled his cell phone from a pocket inside his jacket, looking briefly at the caller ID before answering.

“Hello, Charlie,” he said warily.

“Charlie?” I frowned.

Charlie had been… difficult since my return to Forks, and justifiably so. He had compartmentalized my bad experience into two defined reactions. Toward Carlisle he was almost worshipfully grateful. On the other hand, he was stubbornly convinced that Edward was at fault—because, if not for him, I wouldn’t have left home in the first place. And Edward was far from disagreeing with him. These days I had rules that hadn’t existed before: curfews… visiting hours.

Something Charlie was saying made Edward’s eyes widen in disbelief, and then a grin spread across his face.

“You’re kidding!” He laughed.
“What is it?” I asked.

He didn’t answer. “Why don’t you let me talk to him?” Edward suggested with evident pleasure. He waited for a few seconds.

“Hello, Tyler, this is Edward Cullen.” His voice was very friendly, on the surface. I knew it well enough to catch the soft edge of menace. What was Tyler doing at my house? The awful truth began to dawn on me. I looked again at the fancy tuxedo Alice had forced me into.

“I’m sorry if there’s been some kind of miscommunication, but Beau is unavailable tonight.” Edward’s tone changed, and the threat in his voice was suddenly much more evident as he continued. “To be perfectly honest, he’ll be unavailable every night, as far as anyone besides myself is concerned. No offense. And I’m sorry about your evening.” He didn’t sound sorry at all. And he hung up the phone, a huge smirk on his face.

My face and neck flushed crimson with embarrassment.

He looked at me in surprise. “Was that last part a bit too much? I didn’t mean to offend you.”

I ignored that.

“You’re taking me to the prom!” My voice sounded panicky.

It was completely obvious now. If I’d been paying any attention at all, I’m sure I would have noticed the date on the posters that decorated the school buildings. But I’d never dreamed he was thinking of subjecting me to this. Didn’t he know me at all?

He wasn’t expecting my reaction, that was clear. He pressed his lips together. “I’m sorry, Beau, please don’t be angry.”

My eyes flashed to the window; we were halfway to the school already.

“Why are you doing this to me?” I demanded.

He gestured to our tuxedos. “Honestly, Beau, what did you think we were doing?”

“You never tend to do things casually, for all I knew we were getting milkshakes and you thought we should dress up.” I glared.

“Touché.” He smirked.

“Oh god, this is awful.” I sighed.

“Why are you so upset?” He demanded in frustration.

“Because I didn’t want to go to prom!”

“Beau.” He turned the full force of his scorching golden eyes on me.

“What?” I muttered.

“Humor me,” he insisted.

His eyes were melting away my fury. It was hard to argue with him when he cheated like that.

“Fine,” I glared. “I’ll go. But you’ll see. I’m way overdue for some bad luck. I’ll probably break my
other leg! This fancy shoe doesn’t have any traction! Look at it!” I held out my good leg as evidence.

“Hmmm.” He looked me up and down, approvingly. “Remind me to thank Alice for dressing you up so nicely tonight. I am quite fond of that color on you.”

“Alice is going to be there?” That comforted me slightly.

“With Jasper, and Emmett… and Royal,” he admitted.

The feeling of comfort disappeared. There had been little to no progress with Royal, despite our phone conversation in the hospital. However, I was on excellent terms with Emmett. He enjoyed having me around—he thought my bizarre human reactions were hilarious, and he loved when I told Edward off for his temper. Emmett had even bought me a set of weights as a ‘Get Well’ present and was carefully showing me how to use them without hurting myself. His hope being that the next time I was in danger I could put up a better fight.

Royal, on the other hand, acted as if I didn’t exist. While I shook my head to dispel the direction my thoughts had taken, I thought of something else.

“Is Charlie in on this?” I asked, suddenly suspicious.

“Of course.” He grinned, and then chuckled. “Apparently Tyler wasn’t, though.”

I rolled my eyes. How Tyler could be so delusional, I couldn’t imagine. At school, Edward and I were inseparable—except for those days rare sunny days.

We were at the school now; Royal’s red convertible was conspicuous in the parking lot. The clouds were thin today, a few streaks of sunlight escaping through far away in the west.

He got out and walked around the car to open my door. He held out his hand.

I sat stubbornly in my seat, arms folded, my face resolute.

He sighed. “When someone wants to kill you, you’re brave as a lion—and then when someone mentions dancing…” he shook his head.

I gulped. Dancing.

“Beau, I won’t let anything hurt you—not even yourself. I won’t let go of you once, I promise.”

I thought about that and suddenly felt much better. He could see that in my face.

“There, now,” he said gently, “it won’t be so bad.” He leaned down and wrapped one arm around my waist. I took his other hand and let him lift me from the car.

He kept his arm tightly around me, supporting me as I limped toward the school.

In Phoenix, they held proms in hotel ballrooms. This dance was in the gym. When we got inside, I couldn’t help but giggle. There were actual balloon arches and twisted garlands of pastel crepe paper festooning the walls.

“This looks like a horror movie waiting to happen,” I snickered.

“Well,” he muttered as we slowly approached the ticket table—he was carrying most of my weight, but I still had to shuffle and wobble my feet forward—“There are more than enough vampires present.”
I looked at the dance floor; a wide gap had formed in the center of the floor, where a beautiful couple whirled gracefully. The other dancers pressed to the sides of the room to give them space—no one wanted to stand in contrast with such radiance. Jasper was intimidating and flawless in a classic tuxedo as he spun Alice around the floor in her striking black satin dress with geometric cutouts that bared large triangles of her snowy white skin.

Emmett stood near the dance floor grinning widely, looking very handsome in his own classic tuxedo. He waved at us when he saw us. Royal stood near him looking… well, like Royal. If I thought I looked like I belonged in a men’s fashion magazine, Royal looked like he belonged on the cover. His deep burgundy tuxedo was perfectly tailored—accentuating his small waist against his broad shoulders. His long blond hair was loose and fell to his shoulders. I pitied every guy in the room who might compare themselves to him, and felt just as bad for every girl in the room who was gazing at him longingly.

“Do you think if I threw myself into the sound system it would end the prom?” I whispered.

He laughed, “Anything to get out of dancing.”

“Anything.”

He bought our tickets, then turned me toward the dance floor. I cringed against his arm and dragged my feet.

“I’ve got all night,” he smiled.

“Okay, can I be honest a second?” I finally sighed, “I’m a terrible dancer, sure—I’m clumsy as hell—but… I’ve never danced with a boy.” I could feel the panic rising. “And this is Forks, after all. Maybe I can be affectionate with you at school when no one is looking… but dancing at prom? In front of everyone?”

Edward looked at me confused, “Is that what you’ve been worried about?”

“A bit, yes.” I admitted.

He considered this for a moment, “We don’t have to dance if you don’t want to.”

I sighed and looked over his shoulder. I immediately locked eyes with Royal who was standing there watching us with an unreadable expression. He sighed, then reached out and took Emmett’s hand and led him to the dance floor.

Edward spun around, no doubt hearing all the thoughts in everyone’s minds. I could even hear a few hushed whispers as Royal and Emmett reached the center of the dance floor where Jasper and Alice were. Royal put his arms around Emmett’s neck, and Emmett happily put his hands on Royal’s waist. They effortlessly melted into the dance with Jasper and Alice.

Royal caught my eye one more time, his expression clearly saying Well? You’ve got no excuse now.

Edward was smirking as he looked back to me, “That’s Royal’s way of saying he’s glad you’re here.”

“Oh, fine.” I huffed. I let Edward lead me out to where his family was twirling elegantly—if in a style totally unsuitable to the present time and music. I watched in terror.

“Edward.” My throat was so dry I could barely manage a whisper. “I honestly can’t dance.” I could still feel the panic bubbling up inside my chest. Even if most of the school was watching Royal and
Emmet, they were still watching us.

“Don’t worry, love,” he whispered back. “I can.” He put my arms around his neck and lifted me to slide his feet under mine.

And then we were whirling, too.

“I bet I look like a fool,” I laughed after a few minutes of effortless waltzing.

“Quite the opposite,” he murmured, pulling me closer for a second, so that my feet were briefly a foot from the ground.

Alice caught my eye on a turn and smiled in encouragement—I smiled back. I was surprised to realize that I was actually enjoying myself.

“Okay, this isn’t half bad,” I admitted.

But Edward was staring toward the doors, and his face was angry.

“What is it?” I wondered aloud. I followed his gaze, disoriented by the spinning, but finally I could see what was bothering him. Jacob Black, not in a tux, but in a long-sleeved white shirt and black tie, his hair smoothed back into his usual ponytail, was crossing the floor toward us.

After the first shock of recognition, I couldn’t help but feel bad for Jacob. He was clearly uncomfortable—excruciatingly so. His face was apologetic as his eyes met mine.

Edward snarled very quietly.

“Behave!” I hissed.

Edward’s voice was scathing. “He wants to chat with you.”

Jacob reached us then, the embarrassment and apology even more evident on his face.

“Hey, Beau, I was hoping you would be here.” Jacob sounded like he’d been hoping for the exact opposite. But his smile was just as warm as ever.

“Hi, Jake.” I smiled back. “What’s up?”

“Can I cut in?” he asked tentatively, glancing at Edward for the first time. I was surprised to notice that Jacob didn’t have to look up. He must have grown half a foot since the last time I’d seen him.

Edward’s face was composed, his expression blank. His only answer was to set me carefully on my feet, and take a step back.

“Thanks,” Jacob said amiably.

Edward just nodded, looking at me intently before he turned to walk away.

Jacob put his hands on my waist, and I reached up to put my hands on his shoulders.

“Wow, Jake, how tall are you now?”

He was smug. “Six-two.”

We weren’t really dancing—my leg made that impossible. Instead we swayed awkwardly from side
to side without moving out feet. It was just as well; the recent growth spurt had left him looking
gangly and uncoordinated, he was probably no better a dancer than I was.

“So, how did you end up here tonight?” I asked without true curiosity. Considering Edward’s
reaction, I could guess.

“Can you believe my dad paid me twenty bucks to crash your prom?” he admitted, slightly ashamed.

“Yes, I can,” I muttered. “Well, I hope you’re enjoying yourself, at least. Seen anything you like?” I
teed, nodding toward a group of girls and boys lined up against the wall.

“Yeah,” he sighed. “But he’s taken.”

He glanced down to meet my curious gaze for just a second—then we both looked away,
embarrassed.

“You look really handsome, by the way,” he added shyly. “Your eyes are really beautiful.”

“Um, thanks.” I blushed. “You’re not looking too bad yourself. You’ve got that rock-star, don’t-
give-a-lick vibe going for you.”

We both laughed as we swayed.

“So, why did Billy pay you to come here?” I asked softly, though I knew the answer.

Jacob didn’t seem grateful for the subject change; he looked away, uncomfortable again. “He said it
was a ‘safe’ place to talk to you. I swear the old man in losing his mind.”

I joined in his laughter weakly.

“Anyway, he said that if I told you something he would get me that master cylinder I need,” he
confessed with a sheepish grin.

“Tell me, then. I want you to get your car finished so maybe you can come visit me once in a while.”
I grinned back. At least Jacob didn’t believe any of this. It made the situation a bit easier. Against the
wall, Edward was watching my face, his own face unreadable—to anyone but me; I could see a
twinge of frustration in his marble expression.

Jacob looked away again, ashamed. “Don’t get mad, okay?”

“I could never be mad at you, Jacob,” I assured him. “I won’t even be mad at Billy. Just say what
you have to.”

“Well—this is so stupid, I’m sorry, Beau—he wants you to break up with your boyfriend. He asked
me to tell you ‘please.’” He shook his head in disgust.

“He’s still superstitious, eh?”

“Yeah. He was… kind of over the top when you got hurt down in Phoenix. He didn’t believe…”
Jacob trailed off self-consciously.

“I fell.”

“I know that,” Jacob said quickly.

“He thinks Edward had something to do with me getting hurt.” It wasn’t a question and I could hear
the frustration in my tone.

Jacob wouldn’t meet my eyes. We weren’t even bothering to sway to the music, though his hands were still on my waist, and mine around his neck.

“Look, Jacob, I know Billy won’t believe this, but just so you know”—he looked at me now, responding to the new earnestness in my voice—“Edward really did save my life. If it weren’t for Edward and his father, I’d be dead.”

“I know,” he claimed, but he sounded like my sincere words had affected him some. Maybe he’d be able to convince Billy of this much, at least.

“Hey, I’m sorry you had to come do this, Jake,” I apologized. “At any rate, you get your parts, right?”

“Yeah,” he muttered. He was still looking awkward… upset.

“There’s more?”

“Forget it,” he mumbled, “I’ll get a job and save the money myself.”

“Nope! Just spit it out! You’re getting that damn cylinder thing.”

“It’s so bad.”

“I don’t care. Tell me,” I insisted.

“Okay… but, geez, this sounds bad.” He shook his head. “He said to tell you, no, to warn you, that—and this is his plural, not mine”—he lifted one hand from my waist and made little quotation marks in the air—“’We’ll be watching.’” He watched warily for my reaction.

It sounded like something from a mafia movie. I laughed out loud.

“Okay, duly noted,” I snickered, “now tell Billy to pay up.”

“I will,” He managed a half smile.

“Sorry you had to do this, Jake,” I smiled.

“I don’t mind that much.” He grinned, “I got to see you.” His eyes were appraising as the raked quickly over my tuxedo and face. “So, should I tell Billy you said to butt the hell out?” he asked hopefully.

“No,” I sighed. “Tell him I said thanks. I know he means well.”

The song ended, but we remained standing the way we were.

“And thank you, Jake,” I said, “I know you wouldn’t have agreed to come down unless you cared about me.”

His hands felt hesitant at my waist, and he glanced at my bum leg. “Do you want to dance again? Or can I help you get somewhere?”

Edward answered before I could. “That’s all right, Jacob. I’ll take it from here.”

Jacob flinched, and stared wide-eyed at Edward, who stood just beside us.
“Hey, I didn’t see you there,” he mumbled. “I guess I’ll see you around, Beau.” He stepped back, waving halfheartedly.

I smiled and pulled him back into a quick hug, “I’ll see you later, Jake.”

He stepped back and glanced between my face and Edward’s. “Sorry,” he said again before he turned for the door.

Edward’s arms wound around me as the next song started. It was a little up-tempo for slow dancing, but that didn’t seem to concern him. I leaned my head against his chest, content.

“Feeling better?” I teased.

“Not really,” he said tersely.


“I’m not mad at Billy,” He corrected in a clipped voice. “But his son is irritating me.”

I pulled back to look at him. His face was very serious.

“Jacob? Why?”

“First of all, he made me break my promise.”

I stared at him confused.

He half-smiled. “I promised I wouldn’t let go of you tonight,” he explained.

“Oh. Well, I forgive you.”

“Thanks. But there’s something else.” Edward frowned.

I waited patiently.

“He called you handsome,” he finally continued, his frown deepening. I stared at him again and he quickly added, “That’s practically an insult, the way you look right now, you’re much more than stunning.”

I laughed. “You might be a little biased.”

“I don’t think that’s it. Besides, I have excellent eyesight.”

We were twirling again, my feet on his as he held me close. He still seemed tense.

“You’re jealous.” I stated with dawning realization.

A guilty look crossed his face, “I told you before, I’m not used to feeling that way. You should have heard what he was thinking about you.”

“Oh?” My curiosity was peaked.

Edward sighed, “he thought you looked absolutely wonderful, and that you’re the sweetest, kindest, most perfect person he knows.” Edward smiled a little then, “He thinks I’m incredibly lucky to have you.”
I couldn’t help but smirk, “what do you think?”

He spun me around, holding me tightly, lowering his lips to my ear. “I think I’m the luckiest man in the whole world.”

I felt a shiver of excitement run through my body.

“He was completely accurate with one compliment he gave you.” Edward kissed my neck gently. “Your eyes are beautiful.”

I felt myself blush as I pulled back to look at him smiling down at me.

“So are you going to ever explain the reason for all this?” I wondered casually, trying to keep my mind off how absolutely amazing he looked and how badly I wished we weren’t surrounded by a gym full of people.

His expression became confused, and I glanced meaningfully at the crepe paper.

He considered for a moment, and then changed direction, spinning me through the crowd to the back door of the gym. I caught a glimpse of Jessica and Mike dancing, staring at me curiously. Jessica waved, and I smiled back. Angela was there, too, looking blissfully happy in the arms of little Ben Cheney; she didn’t look up from his eyes, a head lower than hers. Lee and Samantha, Erica with a girl named Justine, Lauren and Conner, and Logan, glaring at us; I could name every face that spiraled past me. And then we were outdoors, in the cool, dim light of a fading sunset.

As soon as we were alone, he swung me up into his arms, and carried me across the dark grounds till he reached the bench beneath the shadow of the madrone trees. He sat there, keeping me cradled against his strong chest. The moon was already up, visible through the gauzy clouds, and his face flowed pale in the white light. His mouth was hard, his eyes troubled.

“The point?” I prompted softly.

He ignored me, staring up at the moon.

“Twilight, again,” he murmured. “Another ending. No matter how perfect the day is, it always has to end.”

“Everything ends, eventually.” I said wistfully.

He sighed.

“I brought you to the prom,” he said slowly, finally answering my question, “because I don’t want you to miss anything. I don’t want my presence to take away anything from you, if I can help it. I want you to be human. I want your life to continue as it would have if I’d died from the influenza like I should have.”

I shuddered at his words, and then shook my head angrily. “In what strange parallel dimension would I ever have gone to prom of my own free will? Even if I didn’t have a broken leg, I would have been sitting in my bed with some ice cream and a book if you weren’t here.”

He smiled briefly, but it didn’t touch his eyes. “It wasn’t so bad, you said so yourself.”

“No, but it helped that I was with you.”

We were quiet for a moment; he stared at the moon and I stared at him.
“Will you tell me something?” he asked, glancing down at me with a slight smile.

“Don’t I always?”

“Just promise you’ll tell me,” he insisted, grinning.

I knew I might regret this, “Fine.”

“You seemed honestly surprised when you figured out that I was taking you here;” he began.

“I was,” I interjected.

“Exactly,” he agreed. “But you must have had some other theory… I’m curious—what did you think I was dressing you up for?”

“I told you in the car,” I rolled my eyes, “I have no idea with you.” I ran my hand through his bronze hair, “You tend to go for extremes though. Maybe we were going to a movie, or a fancy dinner date.”

“You didn’t think…” He hesitated. “You didn’t think I was going to… to change you.” He practically spat out the words.

I stared at him, confused. “Is that normally a black-tie occasion?” I teased, touching the lapel of his tuxedo jacket.

He scowled, and I kissed his cheek.

“If I had been planning…” he trailed off. “If that was what I was going to do, what would you have said?”

I thought about it for a moment, “I don’t know. I don’t think I could leave Charlie or my mom, or my friends. After everything that happened with James I realized how important they all are to me.” I paused, “But I would be lying to myself if I didn’t admit that a big part of me wants to say yes.”

He sighed deeply. “Are you really that willing?”

There was pain in his eyes. I bit my lip.

“So ready for this to be the end,” he murmured, almost to himself, “for this to be the twilight of your life, though your life has barely started. You’re ready to give up everything.”

“It wouldn’t be the end, it would be a beginning,” I disagreed softly.

“I’m not worth it,” he said sadly.

“Do you remember when you told me that I didn’t see myself very clearly?” I asked, raising my eyebrows. “You obviously have the same blindness.”

“I know what I am.”

I sighed.

But his mercurial mood shifted on me. He pursed his lips, and his eyes were probing. He examined my face for a long moment.

“Would you be ready now, then?” he asked.
“Um,” I gulped. “Yes?”

He smiled, and inclined his head slowly until his cold lips brushed against my skin just under the corner of my jaw.

“Right now?” he whispered, his breath blowing cool on my neck. I shivered involuntarily.

“Yes,” I breathed the words out. I couldn’t even tell if I was bluffing anymore. I knew that one day this is what would happen. I’d already made that decision. In this moment, it seemed to be happening so quickly, but did that matter? My course was set, who knew how much time I had before I reached the conclusion Alice had seen in her vision. Perhaps this was it, perhaps now was the time and I was okay with that. I felt the shivers of electricity run through my body as his lips brushed against my neck. I felt my heartbeat rise in my chest.

He chuckled darkly, and leaned away. His face looked amused.

“You can’t really believe that I would give in so easily,” he said with gently mocking tone.

I could only manage a shrug and a slightly euphoric smile.

His eyebrows rose. “Do you want to become a monster so badly?”


His expression changed, softened.

“Beau.” His fingers lightly traced the shape of my lips. “I will stay with you—isn’t that enough?”

I smiled under his fingertips. “Enough for now.”

He frowned at my tenacity. No one was going to surrender tonight. He exhaled, and the sound was practically a growl.

I touched his face. “Look,” I said. “I love you more than anything in this world. That’s enough.”

“Yes, it is enough,” he answered, smiling. “Enough for forever.”

And he leaned down to press his cold lips once more to my throat.

Please drop by the archive and comment to let the author know if you enjoyed their work!